

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

600049105P

35.

310.

B000049105P

35.

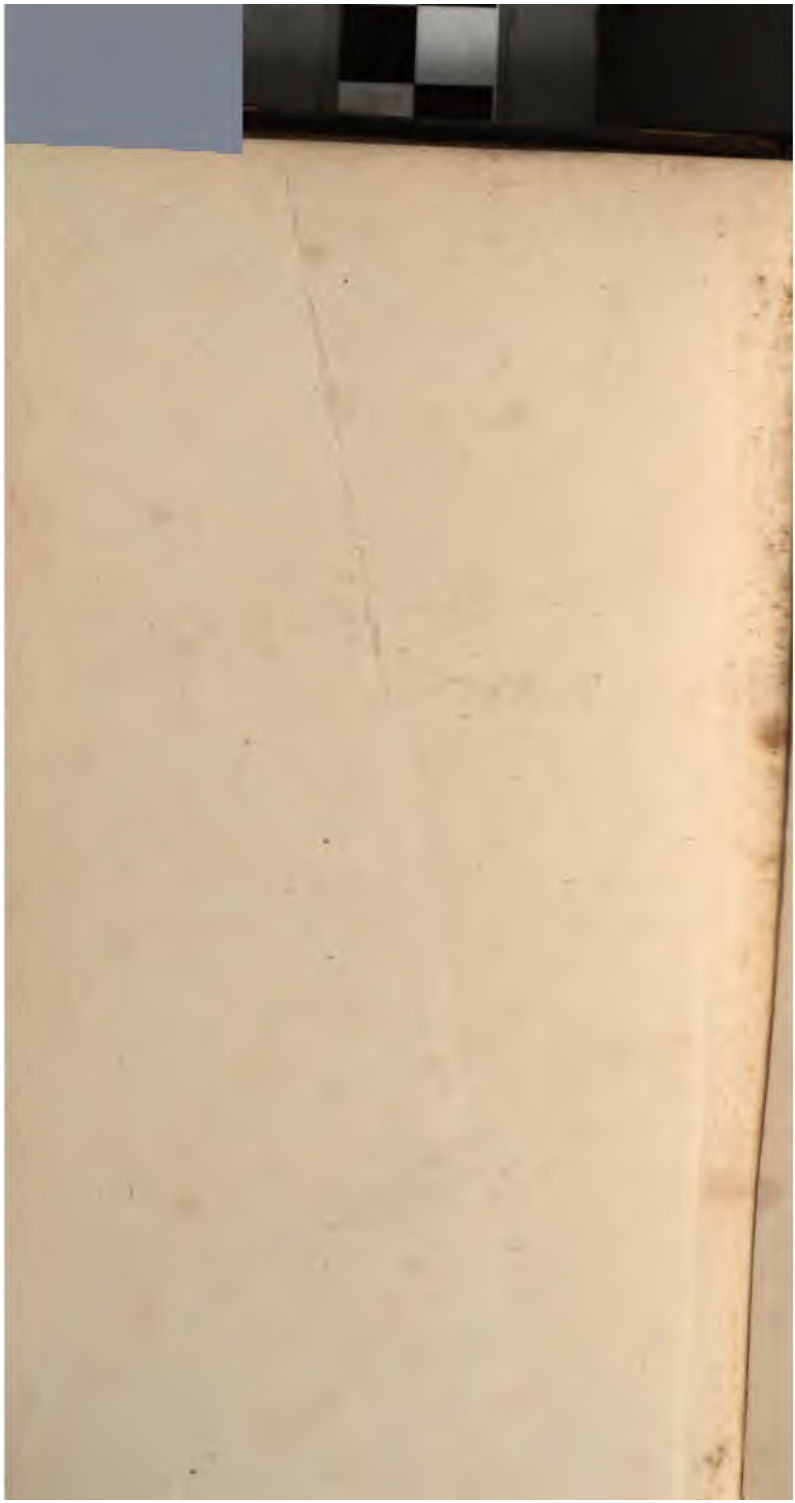
310.

600049105P

35.

310.





AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

VOL. I.





AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

"Wand'ring from clime to clime observant stray'd,
Their manners noted, and their states survey'd."

HOMER.

37

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR

LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, GREEN, & LONGMAN,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1825.

310.







TO

HIS MOST POTENT AND IMPERIAL MAJESTY

NICHOLAS,

THE FATHER OF HIS PEOPLE, THE AUGUST EMPEROR OF ALL THE RUSSIAS.

SIRE,

GREAT virtue, sound judgment, courage, decision, benevolence, and unspotted morals, are qualities rarely found united in a single individual; and the feelings of admiration those noble qualifications have inspired, irresistibly urge me to dedicate to your Majesty the humble efforts of

a wanderer through your wonderful and almost unlimited empire.

I feel convinced, at the same time, that the principles of religion and good government I have endeavoured to inculcate, will always command your Majesty's approbation, as strongly as the atheistical doctrines and pernicious political systems I have deprecated, must have excited your abhorrence and disgust.

May these sentiments continue to animate you! May you never cease to remember, that the renown of magnanimous and virtuous actions flies far, far beyond the limits of a single sphere, and rises, in grateful incense, to the Throne of Grace, to the altar of the Most High and Almighty King of Kings, the Omnipotent Ruler of the Universe! That He may continue to guide, protect, and shower down upon you,

and your lovely and virtuous family, his choicest blessings, shall ever be the fervent prayer of,

SIRE,

Your Majesty's most respectful
and devoted Subject,

THE AUTHOR.

June, 1835.





AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

CHAPTER I.

I was born in Ireland, an island naturally fertile, rich, and populous, but, in consequence of the narrow policy of Great Britain, her powerful neighbour, she is become poor and miserable. The calamities which seemed to accumulate upon her filled my heart with sorrow, and, to dissipate these painful reflections, I resolved to make a tour through the country, thinking that, by sojourning but a short time in one place, I should avoid those objects which at home continually excited my sympathy, and wounded my feelings. In this, however, I was mistaken, for I every where discovered the same misery and wretchedness that existed in my own immediate neighbourhood, and returned home quite disconsolate. Then it was

that I conceived the idea of travelling into foreign countries, to notice their governments, laws, religion, manners, &c., and, at my return, to publish the result of my observations and experience. My property principally consisted of a landed estate, which yielded me a handsome competence: to sell it immediately, and raise an adequate sum of money, would be difficult, in the present embarrassed state of the country, besides the objection there existed to spending the principal, and thus reducing myself to a state of penury when age and infirmities came upon me. However, the most perplexing thought was, that perhaps my whole fortune would be insufficient to pay the expenses of such a voyage as I had in contemplation. To visit only one country, would avail but little: I felt convinced of the necessity of travelling over many portions of the globe, and of residing some time in each; for, otherwise, how could I acquire the experience necessary to enable me to compare, and make choice of what was most wise and eligible? In this perplexed and irresolute frame of mind, I resolved to seek the advice of a distant relative of my mother, who, when I was left an orphan, had voluntarily taken upon himself the duties of a guardian during the period of my minority. The scrupulous fidelity with which he discharged the onerous task of superintending the conduct of a youth of seventeen, and the affectionate regard he manifested, wherever my interests were concerned, can never be effaced from my remem-

brance. But there were other inducements, besides the maturity of his experience, and his good disposition toward me, that prompted me to ask his counsel and assistance; the early part of his life had been passed in the naval service of his country, and more than one deep scar on his manly sunburnt countenance bore evidence of his participation in many of the heroic achievements which made the gallant ensign of England float proudly over her vanquished foes. He had been a lieutenant on board the Victory when the lamented Nelson received the fatal ball which terminated his career of glory, and he was one of those on whom devolved the melancholy but honourable task of supporting the dying hero from the blood stained deck to the cabin where he expired.

On these topics my guardian was accustomed to dilate with undiminished pleasure and untiring enthusiasm; and the secret of his extraordinary attachment to me may, perhaps, be satisfactorily accounted for, on the ground of the unaffected eagerness with which I listened to the gallant seaman's narrative of the exploits and travels of his early days. Unlike the illustrious Anson, of whom it was remarked, in reference to the extreme simplicity of his character, that, though he had been round the world, yet he had never been in it; my guardian possessed an enlarged knowledge of mankind, by having, at one period or another, travelled into every quarter of the globe. These circumstances, added to his being a bachelor,

possessed of a very competent fortune, rendered him a most desirable associate in the task I had imposed upon myself, and therefore I lost no time in addressing a letter to him, fully explanatory of the nature of my plans, and concluding with the request of his co-operation and advice. Having despatched it to Belfast, in the neighbourhood of which he resided, my mind felt relieved from an anxious load, and I endeavoured to divert the tedious interval that must unavoidably occur ere his answer could arrive, by roaming among the wild rocky glens and romantic falls of the Slunamusk mountains, near which, and not far from the town of Clonmel, my patrimonial estate was situated.

I have already briefly adverted to the scenes of misery and destitution which every where met my view, in journeying through this fertile and highly productive island: these, however, though probably unequalled in any other civilised community of Europe, are to be classed under the head of mere physical suffering: what I am about to narrate is of another and far more painful description.

In order to kill time, while waiting for my guardian's reply, I strolled with my angling rod, one fine morning, along the banks of the little river, which empties itself into the Blackwater near Gooling Bridge, and celebrated for its abundant supply of salmon and trout. After fishing down the stream, until opposite the village, and near the spot where the road separates and runs in the

direction of Waterford, I resigned my tackle, and proceeded leisurely in the direction of home: numbers of coaches, post-chaises, carts, and carriages of every description, as well as travellers on horseback and on foot, continually passed by me: some of the latter particularly attracted my attention, on account of their extreme poverty and wretchedness; and I could not help comparing them with others, who, in the pride of wealth, lolling upon soft cushions, in gaudy equipages, were borne rapidly along, thoughtless of those who, under the weight of misery and disease, with difficulty dragged one leg after the other. One poor man, particularly, arrested my attention, and I stopped opposite to him. He was seated on a green bank by the roadside, his head leaning upon his hand, and he was apparently too absorbed in thought to notice anything that passed before his eyes. Though his countenance was haggard and melancholy, yet the expression of his features, which were strong and regular, bespoke him a person above the common class, although his garments were those of a beggar. Feeling an anxious wish to enquire into this man's situation, and the cause of such extreme wretchedness, I advanced towards him, and, by way of introduction, slipped a piece of silver money into his hand. On receiving it, the poor fellow lifted his eyes to heaven, and exclaimed, with great warmth of feeling,—

"May the great and almighty God shed his richest blessings on your head, kind gentleman,

for this timely assistance, which will enable me to buy bread, and live, perhaps, to reach the place of my destination."

"You mean, then," said I, addressing the wretched being before me, "to quit your native country? Are your misfortunes too weighty to be borne on the soil of Ireland, or have you ceased to love the land that gave you birth?"

"Alas! good gentleman," replied he, with a sigh, whilst the tear stood trembling in his eye, "God, who knows the inmost recesses of my soul, can bear witness to the fervent devotion I bear to old Erin, nor can the happy days of my youth, spent in the south of this evergreen island, be erased from the memory of Tom Bryan; and whilst he continues to exist—— But oh! sir, I am an unworthy, a wicked, and an unfortunate being; yet not a hardened sinner, for I have repented of my rashness, and great have been my penitence and my sufferings."

Deeply affected at this pathetic address, I requested the poor wretch to accompany me home, where I promised he should receive every attention and kindness his exhausted condition required. After assisting him to rise, we set out together; but he tottered in his gait, and I found him too feeble to walk. Fortunately, at that moment a cart was passing by with a small load of oats, and for a shilling I got him seated on the bags, and conveyed as far as the gate which led to the house.

When my unfortunate guest appeared at the

breakfast table next morning, I was much gratified to perceive the favourable change wrought in his appearance by a supply of nourishing food and a night of undisturbed repose. He again overpowered me with expressions of gratitude for my seasonable assistance, and concluded his very pathetic and eloquent address in the following words,—

"Ah! if you would only extend your charity so far as to listen to my story, and permit me to unburthen to you my sorrows, you will relieve the pangs which have long tortured an unhappy wretch."

Wishing to utter something to console the poor fellow, I said,—

"Tom, calm yourself: I will listen to your story, not from motives of mere curiosity, but because I feel a sincere wish to be serviceable to you. Whatever be the crime of which you have been guilty, your peace with God is already made, if you have sincerely repented; so proceed with confidence. I sit here, not to judge, but to console you.'

These words appeared to tranquillise him: he raised his eyes to heaven, and exclaimed,—

"Angel of Grace, thou hast heard my prayers!"

The clouds of sadness, which spread a deep shade over his fine countenance, now seemed to disperse, and an expression of piety beamed from his features, as he added,—

"Almighty God, thy will be done! Sir, I shall detain you no longer with the acknowledgments

and expressions of my gratitude: let Him who penetrates into the deepest recesses of the human heart judge of my sincerity, while I relate to you my sad story, as concisely as possible.

"I was born of respectable parents in the county of Cork. My father held the lease of a farm, that had descended from father to son for three generations, and there were yet some forty years to run out, before it expired. The lord of the manor, whose property adjoined our farm, was a haughty, proud, overbearing man, and extremely avaricious withal: he became our most implacable enemy, because my father had a good deal of influence at the elections, and often contrived to carry the day in spite of the most strenuous exertions of his more powerful neighbour. This so greatly incensed him, that he solemnly swore destruction to our family, root and branch; and he left no scheme untried, that malice could devise, to ruin my father. His plans were deeply and cunningly laid, and he at length succeeded. He began by intriguing with the owner of the lease, which he at length purchased of him, at a very high price, and having discovered a flaw in the document, he cancelled it, and procured a bill of ejectment, to drive us off the land. The suit at law lasted three years, during which time my father, whose lawyer continued to give him hopes of success, expended almost the whole of his fortune. Bad crops, and a disease among his cattle, added to legal expenses, reduced him to the last

extremity, and obliged him at length to sell off the wreck of his property to pay his debts. Still unsatisfied, our cruel and malicious foe continued his persecutions with unceasing severity; had my poor father ejected from the premises; and saw him and his daughter stripped of every thing they possessed on earth, and obliged to seek an asylum, like beggars, at the cottage of a poor relation, who had formerly lived on their bounty. Just before we left the farm my mother died of grief, and our tears for her loss were not yet dry, when the inhuman monster came to upbraid my father with his former opposition, and insulted him in the grossest manner; declaring that the ruin of our family, and the misery to which he saw us reduced, had afforded him more real gratification than the receipt of twenty thousand pounds.

"I was from home when this occurred; but his fiendish and unfeeling conduct filled my breast with a rancorous hatred, that only awaited an opportunity to vent its rage, and stimulated me to take an ample revenge on the author of all our wrongs. If any thing could have increased the savage resentment that burned within my breast, it was the appearance of my poor aged father, bending under the weight of his sorrows, and the sight of a beloved sister, who had been nurtured in the lap of affluence, now forced to work for her daily bread! Keen were the pangs that tortured my bosom, while my blood boiled with the desire of revenge; and being obliged to check this passion,

lest it should be remarked, the struggle was terrible between the wish to gratify it, and the idea that I was about to plunge into the commission of a dreadful crime. Once I was just upon the point of rushing forth to satiate my vengeance, when my sister, who discovered by my features the rage that burnt in my breast, caught me by the hand, exclaiming, with a piteous voice,—

"'Oh, my dear brother! have mercy upon our poor aged father? If thou shouldst attempt any thing against the lord of the manor, it would kill him, and ruin us for ever.' This appeal recalled me to my senses; but I was so stifled with rage, it was some seconds before I could breathe freely, or articulate a few words to assure her I was not going to do any thing rashly.

"My father was for some days so ill, after his landlord's brutal treatment, that we despaired of his life; but my sister's care and attention restored him. For my part, I was every day abroad, labouring to obtain sufficient to buy us bread. I got some good jobs in the neighbourhood, from people who knew me, and began to accumulate a few pounds in advance for a rainy day. My sister, also, by selling her needlework and drawings, procured something, and proposed to lay by her earnings, until she should get enough to set up a small shop, in one of the neighbouring towns. Little as we had been accustomed to labour, we felt now no wish to relax our exertions, and every one seemed contented with the dispensations of

Heaven except myself. My father, in his youth, had acquired the art of basket-making, from having lived next door to a man who exercised that calling; and he now found that what before served only to amuse him, was become extremely useful in his distress. We purchased him a quantity of osier twigs, and he worked them up to great advantage. All this, however, seemed irksome to me. I became silent, sullen, and disagreeable, even to my friends."

Here he paused, and then exclaimed, "Oh, man! where is thy superiority over the wild beasts of the forest, when thou sufferest thyself to be hurried away by thy passions! My desire of revenging the cruel persecutions we had undergone was so ardent, that it overcame every other feeling, and tormented me by day and by night. My sister at length, by her kind and endearing conduct, drew the secret from me, and made me promise, since I refused to give up the satisfaction of retorting the injury in some way or other, not to use pistols or a sword in my attempt to chastise him.

"After this second explanation with my sister, I secretly determined to give the wretch a good sound cudgeling the first time I met him, and then run away and hide myself in one of the adjoining counties, until the affair blew over. After forming this resolution, I determined to cut myself a stout oaken sapling, and rose very early to accomplish it, at a neighbour's forest, not

far from a farm-house where I sometimes procured work, and where I meant to go for the same purpose the following morning. However, I was a long time wandering about choosing a club, and when I got to the farmer's, it was already their breakfast time. As I entered the house, he exclaimed, in his way,—

"'Curse upon you, Tom, why did you not come earlier? Here I have hired two men, and if I had thought you would have come, I would have hired but one: never mind, lad, you sha'n't go back with an empty stomach, at all events. Come sit down, and eat your breakfast?'

"I said, it was of no consequence, as I was sure he would hire me another time, and, thanking him, sat down and ate a hearty meal. After breakfast, I took my knife out of my pocket, and trimmed my cudgel, smoothing all the knots, and then wishing the kind people of the house good bye, I set out to return straight home, across the fields. But as the devil would have it, a thought came into my head that it was better to take the high road, although it was full half a mile round, and, with a lightness of heart and a sprightliness that I had not felt for some months, I proceeded in that direction.

"The day was beautiful and mild, and I went along merrily, whistling a tune. Just as I got to a narrow part of the road, about three miles from the manor, who should I see coming towards me but the lord himself, on horseback, with a servant

riding behind him with a small portmanteau strapped to his saddle; by which I concluded they were about to make a distant journey.

"Now, thought I, is my turn arrived at last; and, burning with the remembrance of our wrongs, I awaited his approach to the spot where I had taken my stand at a narrow part of the road, lest he should escape me. As he drew nearer, the fire of vengeance so burnt within my breast, overpowering every other sensation, that the disadvantage of one man's attacking two never entered my thoughts. Placing myself in the middle of the road, and holding my club in a menacing posture, I intercepted his passage, crying out, 'Villain, I shall now take my revenge!'

"No sooner did he perceive the stand I had made to prevent his passing, than he drew a pistol from his right holster, and fired it at me. The ball passed through the coat and waistcoat, on my left side, and grazed my ribs; but before he could use his other pistol, or his servant ride up to assist him, I had seized his horse by the bridle, and with a well-directed blow of my cudgel, that struck him immediately on the temple, I brought him down lifeless at my feet."

Here poor Tom paused, and seemed greatly agitated for some seconds; then, heaving a deep sigh, he continued his recital.

"By this time the servant had rode up, but seeing me draw forth his master's second pistol, he wheeled his horse round, and rode off from me in a fright.

Not a moment was to be lost: I jumped upon the dead man's horse, a fine full-blooded hunter, and, putting him to his speed, in a few minutes overtook the servant, who, seeing escape impossible, hastily dismounted, and, falling upon his knees, begged me, with uplifted hands, to spare his life.

"'Mount again immediately,' said I, 'and gallop back with me!'

"He obeyed in silence, and we were quickly at the spot where his master lay weltering in his blood. I now commanded him to dismount, and to bring me my club and the other pistol, that lay by the dead body. This done, I asked him if he knew me. He replied in the negative, having only three or four days before arrived from Limerick, where he was bred and born; adding, that I had spoiled his good fortune by killing his new master; and that, besides, he might be accused of having assisted to murder him. The word *murder* made me inwardly shudder; but, recovering myself, I sternly replied,—

"'Come, no more of your stupid nonsense!—this is a public road, and time presses: go rifle the pockets of your master of his watch, and whatever valuables he may have upon him, and then throw the body over the hedge into the field?'

"The fellow stared at me in silence.

"'If you hesitate a moment,' continued I, 'you are a dead man. I only meant to chastise your master; but an unfortunate blow has sent him to eternity. He was cruel, hard-hearted, avaricious,

and unjust, and the Lord of Lords have mercy upon his sinful soul!'

"My threat made the fellow perform his task briskly; and, after he had covered up the blood with earth and dust, I ordered him to mount his horse again.

"'Now,' said I, 'you are to continue with me as long as I choose: you know my horse is the fleeter animal of the two: if, therefore, you dare attempt to escape, I shall quickly overtake you, and instant death will be your portion.'

"He promised implicit obedience; and off we set together, keeping upon the road for about a quarter of a mile, and then, leaping through a gap in the hedge, we galloped off across the country to a by-road that I knew was little frequented, and which penetrated into the centre of the county. Four hours' steady riding I calculated would bring us to a thick intricate forest, where I had resolved to part with my companion, and leave him to find his way home by himself. From the forest I meant to push on to one of the sea-port towns of the North, and there procure myself a passage to America.

"During our journey we met few people, but whenever any one approached, I kept a strict watch on my companion, lest he should betray me. He observed my cautious behaviour, and conducted himself accordingly. Some time before we arrived at the forest, I espied a hut, and, per-

ceiving that our horses were greatly fatigued, I told my companion we must stop to give them rest and food: 'And no doubt,' said I, 'but you feel inclined to eat, yourself.' He smiled and answered in the affirmative.

" 'Then,' said I, 'we shall stop at this cottage: but beware of dropping the slightest hint, either by word or sign, of what has happened, or your life shall pay the forfeit.'

" 'Your honour,' replied he, 'has convinced me by your conduct that you are neither a robber nor a murderer by profession. My master's death was an accident, and I should be sorry to be an informer against any one, much less an unfortunate man.'

" I was well satisfied with his answer, and, riding up to him, gave him my hand, saying, 'Here's the hand of Tom Bryan: I shall do every thing I can for you, consistent with my own safety.'

" 'God bless your honour! although I have been so short a time at the lord's, I have heard the servants speak of you and your father, and not a man of them but loves you, and laments your hard lot. Do with me as you please, only save me from being thought an accomplice in my master's death.'

" 'Enough of this, my honest fellow; I will put you in the way of clearing yourself: but, see, we are close to the hut.'

" Fortunately we found no one within but an old woman and her daughter, who, though they

behaved very kindly, seemed to eye us with a look of mistrust and suspicion. However, she furnished us with plenty of hay and some oats for our horses; and potatoes, butter, milk, and eggs, as much as we could eat, for ourselves; observing, that, if I wanted more corn, there was a cottage hard by, where she would get us a good supply. Her looks did not please me; and I excused myself, saying, I had enough, and meant to start off in a few minutes more, and could not wait for her return.

"Having given her some money, we remounted our horses, and continued on at a brisk pace, until we came to the forest. Well knowing every inch of the ground beneath my horse's feet, I pushed boldly into the thickest part, where it was covered with underwood, and was wild and dismal in the highest degree. On stopping in the worst-looking part of it, I saw terror depicted on the countenance of my companion, as he exclaimed, —

"'Oh, your honour, what a frightful place is here!'

"'I see,' said I, calmly, 'nothing to alarm any one in this sequestered retreat, where the police dare not seek me, as they know it to be frequented by some desperate fellows, whose conduct has long since rendered them outlaws, like myself, and who are not to be taken alive.'

The mention of the outlaws made my poor companion tremble; but I told him we might probably escape them, and if we did not, he had



property enough to satisfy them, and prevent their killing him.

" ' Come let us see,' continued I, ' what you got from your master's pockets.'

We tied our horses to the trees, and he instantly brought me a handkerchief, from which he first produced an elegant gold watch, chain, and seals. This I made him put in his fob. He next offered me a handful of gold and silver coins, and then a pocket-book, containing five hundred and forty pounds in bank bills. After counting them over with the gold and silver, that amounted to about seventy pounds more, I handed the whole to him, and said, —

" ' These are the fruits of avarice, cruelty, and tyranny. Put them in your pocket, my lad. Should we escape the lords of this forest, deliver the money to the heirs-at-law of your master's estate, saying, that you were forced to take it by the man who killed him.

" All the time I was talking, my companion stared at me wildly, and when I had concluded, he exclaimed, —

" ' You are Tom Bryan, and a gentleman every inch of you ! But, oh ! your honour, protect me from these outlaws. These bands, they say, are men without compassion ! I am an utter stranger in this part of the country, and a lost man ! have pity upon me, your honour ! lead me to the high road, and show me how to direct my route for Limerick, where I was born, and know every step

of the ground. Should I be taken up here, without any friend to stand by me, I shall be hanged for a murderer!" and he burst into tears.

"His manner greatly affected me, but more so the word *murderer;* that went to my heart like a dagger. Recovering myself after a few seconds, I replied, —

"'Your being taken immediately might prove fatal to me; yet, to show you that I wish you no harm, I am ready to conduct you to the road that leads to Limerick. I now recollect it is not far, if we cross the forest in a direct line; and, when we get there, we shall separate, perhaps for ever. Remember, my honest fellow, that your master fired at me before I struck him; that the blow was given in a moment of passion, and proved fatal, contrary to my intentions, as I swear before God. All I ask of you is, to relate the circumstances exactly as they occurred, and to speak the truth, and nothing but the truth.'

"Falling on his knees, and raising his hands to heaven, he said, 'May God's thunder overtake me, if I prevaricate!'

"I raised him up, and he regarded me with a compassionate look, —

"'What will become of your honour? I would go with you; but, if I did, I should carry with me property that we have no right to, and we should both be called thieves: now, at least, I shall have an opportunity of convincing the world that your honour did not kill my master from any

other motives but those of revenging the cruelties he practised upon your family."

" ' True,' said I, ' my good fellow: I see it is necessary that we should separate. But come, it grows late, let me lead you through the forest whilst I have light enough to find our way.'

" We proceeded on foot, leading our horses; for in many parts the bushes were so thick, it was impossible to ride. Sometimes we found a path, and at others were obliged to work our way through thickets and over a soil, where the large roots of the trees were entwined upon the surface, like huge serpents, and the sound of the horse's hoofs, when he struck upon them, resounded as if the ground beneath had been excavated. Then, again, we saw the blue expanse of heaven through the trees, whilst at other times a gloomy shade enveloped us, and shut out the light of day. In fearful accents, my companion expressed his surprise at the subterranean echoes and the dark canopy of branches, impenetrable even to the rays of the sun.

" ' Surely,' said he, ' the ground must be hollow beneath; and, perhaps,' he added, scarcely speaking above his breath, ' we have just passed over one of the caves of the bloodthirsty outlaws of whom your honour spoke before? No wonder they escape the pursuit of justice. Who would ever think of searching for them in such a lonely, frightful place as this?'

" He had scarcely ceased speaking, when we heard

a rustling amongst the bushes on our right, and then a loud whistle on our left, that re-echoed through the forest, and in an instant we beheld six men well armed standing before us. My companion grew pale as death, and seemed ready to sink into the earth.

" ' Take courage,' said I to him, in an under voice; ' these are wild, daring fellows, and must be met in their own way, or else little hope remains for our lives.'

" This address had its effect, and he assumed an air of composure. For my own part, I was in a state of mind not easily abashed; which, added to my natural courage, gave me an air of defiance, and hardiness, that made the band eye me with respect. I had previously taken the pistols from my holsters, and stuck them in my belt, having loaded the one that had been discharged, and with my oak cudgel in my hand, an eye that darted fire, and an undaunted countenance, I might very well be mistaken for one of those gentlemen who often lay the public under contribution on the highway.

" This must have been the first impression of the outlaws, on beholding me leading my horse, and walking unconcerned through their manor. I moved on towards them, without altering my gait, or changing a muscle of my features; nor did I put my hand upon my pistols, or discover the least apprehension of their going to attack me. The

leader — who was not so tall or stout as I am (for you must know, sir, I am six feet two inches without my shoes), and was armed like myself, except that he had a large horseman's cutlass instead of a cudgel, — advanced to me, leaving his comrades behind him, and to whom he said something on separating.

" Touching his hat when he got quite near enough to converse, he said, —

" ' Good evening to you, brother, — for we seem to be of the same trade; and where would you be after going this late hour through the forest? Don't you know there's a band here, and that we allow no one, except those belonging to our party, to depredate upon this neighbourhood. So come, my hearty fellow, don't let us quarrel, but say at once what's your business?'

" Walking up to the outlaw, I stretched out my hand to him, and replied, —

" Two of a trade, they say, can never agree; but we will give the lie to the old proverb. Here's my hand and my friendship. I am but a novice at the business; and although my first attempt has been successful, I was obliged to go as fast as horse-flesh could carry me for the last twenty-four hours, until I got to your forest, and have been searching for two hours at least to find some of you brave fellows, who I knew inhabit here.'

" Whilst I was speaking, the robber had already shaken hands with me and my companion; and, at

the close of my speech, he exclaimed, whilst his eyes glistened with pleasure, —

" 'By Jasus! a hearty welcome to you, my young hero: may the devil take him who would injure a man that asks protection, much less a brave brother outlaw. Come,' continued he, 'our cave is close by. We'll take a noggin of whisky together, by Jasus! and then you will tell us what has happened to you, and how we can help you.'

" By this time his comrades had got round us, who all shook us heartily by the hand, in imitation of their chief, and off we set together towards the cave. As we proceeded, he observed to me, 'I shall take you to our bush-house, where we live commonly in fine weather, as we never let any one into our cave who has not sworn upon the cross and the sword to be one of us, — you understand me, — this being the law of our fellowship.'

" 'By Jasus!' said I, 'and you are quite right: some wolf in sheep's clothing might otherwise deceive you: I can't enter your band at present, but you shall see me soon again: I am determined to live with you; and, sure, haven't I many schemes a-head, to keep us in activity? But more of this another time.'

" We were soon at the bush-house, which was a kind of temporary shed, constructed with boards, stakes, and branches of trees; but the leader told me, slily, that they had a hiding-place under ground, consisting of three rooms comfortably

fitted up. Some cold meat, herrings, and potatoes were presented to us to eat, and the whisky passed round freely. I saw that to remain long, would not suit our purpose. These fellows might drink hard, and then there would be no getting away from them. We had tied our horses just outside of the bush-house. I called my companion, whose name I hit upon by accident, and told him softly, in the language which I knew these lads did not understand, to go outside the bush-house as if to get something from his horse, and to bring me two fifty pound bills, out of the lord's money. Whilst he was gone, I said to the leader, loud enough to be heard by all the party, 'My name is Tom Bryan.'

"He jumped from his seat, as did two or three more of his companions, and, exclaiming all at once, 'By Jasus, your honour, but we are glad to see you! long life to the poor man's friend! we have often heard of your good doings, and how hardly you have been treated.'

"They then pledged me in a glass of whisky. My companion now returned, and put the bills into my hand.

"'Friends and honest fellows,' said I, 'hear what I have to tell you? I killed that cruel fellow, who reduced my family to misery, this morning, with a single blow of my stout cudgel: all I found upon him was two hundred pounds, and here's one half of it for you, my noble brothers in misfortune. All I ask, in return, is a guide for myself

and my companion into the Limerick road, as he must go to that town to perform a service for me: and I shall make my way alone into Kerry, where I intend to stay a month with Tim Lawson, on the great bog. At the expiration of that time I shall return here, if you will accept me as a comrade.'

"Saying this, I handed the two fifty pound bills to the leader, who took them, observing, —

"'You shall be welcome as the flowers in May.'

"After drinking my health, 'Your honour, I hope, will excuse us,' said he, 'for not giving you a man to conduct you: 'but here's a boy, who knows every foot of the forest: let him go with you as far as you please.'

"Taking advantage of the good temper of the party, I bid them adieu, and again set off through the forest. When we got clear of them, I spoke to my companion in an under voice, and warned him not to say any thing before the boy. The fact was, that I wanted no guide; but was fearful, if I had told them I knew all the passes, they might have suspected me of being a spy. When we got half a mile from the Bush-house, I asked our guide whether I might not have a chance of meeting with some of his comrades on the Kerry side.

"'Oh, no,' said he; 'they are gone across the forest, in the direction of Cork, to a place where they are to beset a house to night.'

"This was joyful tidings for us. 'Then,' said I, 'only show me the direction I am to take, and I'll find my way without troubling you any further.' The boy appeared pleased, and, after giving us the necessary directions, returned to his comrades.

CHAPTER II.

"WHEN the boy was fairly out of hearing, my companion burst forth into praises of my courage and presence of mind, at the same time declaring he was indebted to me for his life; and that he should never forget the events of that extraordinary day. On reaching the high road, I halted, and said, —

"'Here, my honest fellow, is the road leading direct to Limerick. I now recommend you to preserve a profound silence on the subject of our unfortunate adventure, until you return home; then recollect your promise — speak the truth.'

"He seemed much troubled; but, after the lapse of a few seconds, replied, —

"'I have sworn already not to belie your honour; and the devil receive me if I prove false!' I then shook him by the hand, and we parted.

The evening was dark, damp, and chill. I kept along the skirts of the forest, until it became thinner, and more free of underwood; when I crossed it again, and got into the copses, on the Kerry side. There the country was level and open; but, after about three hours' hard riding, I found myself amongst the bogs, many of which I could not cross with my horse, and was obliged to

ride round them. The poor beast showed signs of fatigue; and the whisky that I drank with the outlaws gave me such a gnawing at the stomach, that I would have given the world for something to eat. Just then, I thought of the poverty of my finances, which amounted only to about the value of seven English shillings. This sum I had received the evening before, from a neighbour, for whom I had done a job of ditching; and, by some unaccountable accident, I had forgotten to give it to my sister, to whom I always entrusted my money. Whilst I was reflecting on this horrible situation, in which I was placed by the effect of my own ungovernable rashness of temper, I saw a faint light glimmer from the narrow window of a hut upon the edge of the bog whose border I had coursed for near three miles; or, at least, my impatience to discover a dwelling had made it appear so. I now rode straight forward, determined, at all risks, to get food for myself and horse. However, as I approached nearer, a sudden thought flitted across my mind, that the dead man could not have lain long by the side of a road, so much travelled, without being discovered, and that already, perhaps, scouts had been sent out in all directions to catch me; for when I reflected what a circuitous route I had taken, I felt assured that, in a direct line, the news of my crime could have arrived there long since; and, therefore, to enter, without first cautiously examining the premises, would be highly imprudent. On approaching within two hundred yards, I dismounted, and, tying the

bridle reins to a bush, proceeded, slowly and cautiously, towards the window of the hut. When I got near, I heard the buzz of several voices within, and could plainly distinguish four different tones. Listening again, I found there were four men, a woman, and a boy. Curiosity led me on round the corner, thinking I could, perhaps, hear more distinctly on the opposite side, where I imagined there must also be a window; but I had not made more than five or six steps, when I heard horses snort, and scrape with their hoofs; and, on getting close to them, I saw the holsters and trappings of the cavalry of our county. As may easily be conceived, this greatly alarmed me, and I immediately crept back under the window, where, with a palpitating heart, and scarcely drawing my breath, I listened attentively to the conversation within: for some time it seemed broken, and as if they were busy eating. At length one of the party exclaimed, —

"'The devil be after catching his sinful soul, for leading us such a dance: I tell you, and I told our captain the same story, that we might as well hunt for a needle in a hay-stack, as Tom Bryan in these two counties.'

"'By Jasus! Pat,' said a second, 'but you're no fool, and what you say is more than half right; he knows every hole and corner, both in Cork and Limerick, and may be sleeping snug in some hayrick, as snug as a flea in a blanket, ten miles behind us, for what we know of the matter.'

"Said a third voice, 'I'll bet a noggin of whisky, he's gone to Limerick.'

"'Well,' said a fourth, who seemed to be the commander of the party, 'we must do our duty, should he have gone to hell: but, according to my mind, lads, he's a better man than the lord of the manor ten times over, who, thank God, will grind his tenants no more in this world: the devil has cracked his iron-cased soul like a walnut, and I hope he'll roast it into the bargain, to get the oil of gold out of it. Besides, who knows that it was Tom that killed him? it is all suspicion, because he and the Limerick man are missing. But hear me, lads, as long as it continues so dark, the devil a step farther shall I move; and, in the mean-time, our horses will have food and rest, for we have rode all day like fox hunters. Come, then, if you have eaten enough, let us throw them some hay; they are cool, and may eat now.'

"I waited to hear no more, lest some one should come round where I was listening, but returned hastily to find my horse. With some difficulty I groped him out again, and then continued my route towards Kerry—the very opposite direction to that which the soldier said I was gone. Notwithstanding my poor beast was extremely fatigued, I made a considerable distance over fields, hedges, and ditches, ere I had the courage to approach another house, although I had seen several. At last, the pity I felt for the noble animal, that seemed to strive against his weakness, added to the

pangs of hunger, which I suffered myself, made me determine, at all risks, to stop at the first hut that presented itself. After riding about a couple of miles farther, I saw something like a dark shade on my left, which I discovered to be a decent cottage with a small hovel adjoining. Without giving myself time to reflect, I knocked loudly at the door. A hoarse voice from within demanded, 'Who are you, and what's your business?'

"I replied, 'A hungry, weary, and benighted traveller asks food and rest for himself and his horse.'

"The host and two sons, all stout and good-looking men, armed with muskets, whilst a woman held a candle behind them, now opened the door. I should have told you that I remained on horseback, the more easily to make my escape in case of necessity. Seeing me alone, and decently mounted, the old man handed his musket to the woman and said, —

"'Don't be alarmed, sir, because we come out armed; the bands are now dangerous, and we are obliged to be prepared for them. Our cottage is full of visiters: we have no place to accommodate you; but, if you can put up with a straw bed in the adjoining cabin, you are heartily welcome: besides, we will send you supper, and order your horse to be well fed into the bargain. A turf-cutter and his wife are the only inhabitants of the hut, who will be glad to serve you.'

"I thanked him, and said I should be happy to

rest my bones any where, being extremely tired. All this time, it struck me that one of the sons, who had taken the candle from the woman, seemed to regard me with a scrutiny that excited my suspicions. However, again thanking him, I told him I was ready to pay whatever the expense of my entertainment might be. The old man smiled, and the son then came forward to light me to the cabin, observing, that he must desire the turf-cutter to feed my horse, and to accommodate me in the best manner he was able. He ran before me, and I dismounted, leading my horse slowly after him. I heard him speak to the turf-cutter, to whom he gave the candle; then they both came to the door to meet me, where he again, I thought, examined my horse and myself with surprise. Seeing that I noticed his manner, he said,—

" 'I admire your horse, sir; he is one of the finest looking hunters I have seen for a long time. Would it be impertinent to ask if you would sell him?'

" 'No offence, sir,' said I sternly; 'but all the gold you possess would not purchase my horse. Poor fellow! he is tired: you don't see him to advantage.'

" 'I beg your pardon,' said he: 'but I'll now go order some supper to be sent to you, and I wish you a pleasant night's rest!'

" When he was gone, it struck me that they might have taken me for a leader of one of the bands. However, I unsaddled my horse with the

aid of the turf-cutter; took my holsters, saddle, and bridle into the cabin, where I saw his wife boiling a good batch of potatoes at a fine turf fire, that the dampness and chillness of the night rendered very acceptable. I made him return to the shed, where my horse was tied, and throw him some hay, saying that, by and by, when he was cool, I should ask for oats for him. When he went out, I asked his wife why they would not receive me into the cottage?

"'Oh! your honour,' said she, 'it is only a few days back that one of the sons was married; and all his wife's relations have come to visit them. Axing your honour's pardon; but you wouldn't find room enough there to peal your potatoes. Besides, your honour, in these times night travellers are always suspected of meaning no good.'

"'But,' said I, 'I hope you don't take me for a robber!'

"'God be with your honour,' said she; 'surely I know better than to take you for any thing but what you are!' A lad now entered, bringing with him some bread and cheese, with half a dozen fine fresh eggs: the latter he gave to the woman, saying,—

"'There, Katty, boil these for the gentleman. He then left us. To these homely provisions she added some good new milk; and I supped heartily. When done, I made the turf-cutter go with me and feed my horse with oats: besides, he promised to give him another batch the moment

he rose in the morning. On returning to the house, I put my holsters under my pillow, and, on a soft straw bed, slept soundly, until the turf-cutter came himself and woke me, saying, 'If your honour wishes to be off early, it's time to rise.'

"I thanked him, and got up as quick as possible. He told me my horse had been fed more than an hour.

"'Go then,' said I, 'and saddle him speedily, whilst I take a crust of bread and bowl of milk, as I have a long ride before me, and I shall not stop to breakfast.'

"I had scarcely finished my milk, when he came and said all was ready. I went out with him, gave him a shilling, of which he could hardly be made to accept; then, jumping on my horse, I rode off. When about twenty or thirty yards from the shed, I discovered that I had forgotten my holsters, and rode back full gallop; but, before I got half way, I saw the turf-cutter with them, running to meet me. When he came up, he handed them to me, saying, —

"'God Almighty defend your honour, Mr. Bryan! I know you well, and your good father before you! Take care of yourself, for your life is at stake; and may the tongue be struck dumb that betrays you!'

"'So, then, my honest fellow, you know me?'

"'By my soul! and I do, for many's the time I ate of your father's bounty. When he was rich I

cut turf for him: but, as I said before, take care of yourself. About an hour and a half ago, whilst you were sound asleep, four cavalry men rode by, who looked very hard this way; and lucky it was that, after watering your horse, I tied him behind the shed, or they would have seen him. It was just as I went back to the spring for the bucket that they rode past, and one of them axed me if I had not seen a straggler on horseback."

"'We are searching,' observed a second, 'for Tom Bryan, the gentleman ditcher, as they call him, who prefers work to idleness.'

"'Oh!' said I, 'if it is he you're seeking, then bad luck to you! for you don't mean any good to him. He is a gentleman every inch of him; and if I knew where he was, the devil might roast me before I'd tell you!'

"'There,' exclaimed a third, 'you hear what that fellow says. I told you before you might as well hunt for a cambric needle in a hay-stack.'

"So away they went, and left me.

"'You are a friendly, good man, and have saved my life,' I replied, much affected. 'Here are three shillings for you, half what I have in the world. If ever I am rich enough, and live to see you again, I will reward you handsomely.'

"The man stepped back from me, and exclaimed, —

"'Why, what does your honour take me for? I hope I have a soul to be saved? It wasn't for money, but for love, that I told your honour

about the cavalry rascals. I have ate of your bounty, as I have told you before, and know that your father and yourself never refused to aid a poor fellow in distress. God protect your honour! But listen to my advice. Keep off the high road, and there's no fear of you. Those rascals are afraid of the bands, and won't seek you in the heart of the country.'

"I returned the money into my pocket, with tears in my eyes, and thanked the poor fellow for his friendship and advice. According to his injunction, I kept well into the fields, under the hedges, which prevented me from being seen by those who travelled the road. During the heat, when my horse began to flag, I stopped near the borders of a wood, where there was some nice short grass. Here I laid down for about an hour or more in the shade, whilst my horse rested and fed.'

"After passing over a country mostly fenced off with stone walls of about three feet high, I got into a part where the hedges commenced again; and, perceiving one higher and thicker than the rest, that appeared to run in the direction of my journey, I made towards it, intending to ride under the shelter of its foliage. But my chagrin and disappointment were inexpressible, when, on reaching the hedge, I found myself once more on the road side,—the place of all others most inimical to my safety. What was to be done? Courage and decision, in cases of emer-

gency, I had always found to succeed. Observing that my present shelter continued high and thick for some miles, and then appeared to be joined by cross hedges, which led into the heart of the country, I determined, as my horse was tired, to dismount and walk, so that it was impossible for a man on horseback, or one on the top of a stage coach to see us from the road. Whilst reflecting on this plan, just before I dismounted, the dust appeared to rise at a great distance. I therefore went on slowly, keeping myself and my horse in the ditch; but took care, whenever the branches and bushes protruded, to lead him farther off, so that they should not rub against the saddle, and, by their rustling, attract attention. In this way I walked quietly along; carriages, carts, and men on horseback, as well as foot travellers, passing by. Whenever the latter approached, I always stopped until they were out of hearing. I had now advanced a considerable distance; when, all of a sudden, I heard the trampling of several horses together. Stopping my horse immediately, I tied him short to a strong black thorn bush, so that he could not move his head to make a noise. Then crawling upon my belly into the middle of the hedge, where it was extremely close and thick, I lay perfectly concealed, whilst at the same time I could see distinctly every object on the road, and overhear the conversation of such as went by.

"I had scarcely been more than a few minutes snugly fixed in my hiding-place, when I

saw eight cavalry soldiers, four abreast, coming down the road. I therefore concluded that those who went up before had gone, by appointment, to meet four others, who had sought me by some other route; and that, despairing of success, they were now all returning home. Little did they imagine that he whom they were seeking was so near to them. They rode very slowly along, and their horses looked jaded out. The sight of this formidable troop, coming directly towards me, almost made me forget my concealment. My heart at first sank, and then again beat high with pleasure, when I recollected where I was, and that my pursuers were about to return and give up the search. Just as they got opposite to where I lay, I heard one of them exclaim, with a thundering imprecation on my head, —

" ' The devil has kicked him an end! We have lost our time and trouble for nothing.'

" ' Thank God!' said another, ' the poor fellow is safe out of our clutches. He was a friend to the poor; and he and his father did more good in a month than the lord of a manor, with all his riches, during his wicked life.'

" ' A pretty fellow,' said another, ' are you to take the part of an outlaw and a murderer!'

" They then began to dispute loudly, and I could hear no more of their conversation; for the words *outlaw* and *murderer* went to my heart, and made me feel so oppressed, that I lay for near a quarter of an hour in my concealment before I

could rally my spirit and mount my horse again. Reflecting, at length, that I was in danger of being discovered by remaining there, I rode off, keeping, however, the parallel of the great road, as long as the hedge was thick enough to conceal me. At all events, I felt relieved in reflecting that my pursuers had returned, and, by continuing for another day, I should get so far into the county of Kerry, as to be able to rest awhile, and conceal myself, until the affair was forgotten; when I might again pursue my journey to the north. After leaving the hedge, a cold sweat and shivering, like the ague, came over me; but, riding off several miles at a good round trot, I got rid of it, and felt much better.

"At length, fatigue and hunger began to wear us both down. My poor horse showed signs of wanting to satisfy his appetite, for he neighed and snorted whenever he saw a hut, though it were a mile out of our road: yet he was a steed of uncommon mettle, and, after the slightest refreshment, went off again at full gallop, as fresh as though he had been stabled for a whole day.

"Towards evening, the sky became charged with heavy clouds, and the rain poured down in torrents. I found shelter under a shed, that had been erected to dry turf in bad weather, until the heaviest shower was over; but it did not cease to rain, and I proceeded on again, as it was late, and I saw there was a very large bog, about a mile ahead, and which I now recollected was

in the neighbourhood of a village, only a few miles from the town of Killarney, on the lakes of the same name. On approaching, I found it was too soft to cross, and that I must ride round it, ere I should come to the huts of the turf-cutters, which were only four or five in number, and at a considerable distance from each other. The rain had now become like mist, and so thickened the atmosphere, that I was obliged to dismount, and lead my horse to grope my way on foot.

"In this manner I crawled along for about three or four hours, cold, wet, and hungry, until my eye caught something that at first appeared, through the surrounding gloom, like a black cloud. I almost knocked my head against this object before I was aware of it; and, stretching out my hand, I touched the wall of a turf-cutter's hut. The unexpected but welcome discovery rejoiced my heart, which, only a moment before, was overwhelmed with despondency; and I felt like one who had been rescued from perishing in a wilderness. After groping about for some minutes, I found the door was fastened, and the inmates snored aloud. At first, I tapped softly, then a little louder; and at length, finding it impossible to awaken them by gentle means, I thundered with my foot until the whole family was roused.

"'Who thus disturbs us in the middle of the night?' demanded a female, in a resolute tone of voice.

"'An unfortunate traveller, benighted near the bog, wet, cold, and hungry,' replied I.

"The same voice answered, 'There is a village only about two or three miles off, where you can get much better accommodations than with us poor miserable turf cutters.'

"'In the name of God! good Christian,' said I, 'have compassion upon a weary traveller. Do not refuse a lodging, at least, to a man worn down with fatigue, cold, and hunger!'

"This last appeal won the woman over. I heard her tell her son to strike a light, whilst she came and opened the door herself. The family consisted of the old woman, her son, and a daughter of about sixteen years of age. Perceiving that they all seemed alarmed, I said, 'Don't be frightened, good people! I am an unfortunate man, who seeks food and shelter in your cabin, but would scorn to injure you. I shall honestly pay for whatever I receive at your hands, and thank you kindly into the bargain.'

"She whispered something to the lad; then, turning to me, said, —

"'The Lord be with your honour! But you must not wonder at our being a little frightened: I am a poor widow, with only this boy and girl; and the bands, your honour knows well, are now very daring; and when any of them come to us, we are in dread of our lives.'

'Good woman!' said I, 'I beg you to give

me some oats for my poor tired horse; for I would sooner starve myself than he should go without food.'

"'God Almighty's blessings on your tender heart!' exclaimed she; then addressing her son, 'Go, Robert, with his honour: show him where he may tie his horse in safety, and give him as much oats and hay as he wants.'

"So away we went together; and, after having supplied my dumb and faithful companion with plenty of food, I took the saddle, bridle, and holsters with me, and returned into the cabin. On entering, I saw a fine turf fire blazing on the hearth, a pot of potatoes almost ready, a couple of salt herrings, and plenty of milk, which in a short time the good woman placed on the table before me. I made a hearty supper; then, laying down on some clean straw, with my holsters for a pillow, I soon fell into a refreshing slumber, that lasted until near seven o'clock the following morning. I heard the woman bustling about for some time, but could not shake off my drowsiness. Her hut consisted of only two apartments and a sort of pantry, or store-room, adjoining. The walls were of mud, and, though poor as poverty could make it, it was kept tolerably clean. An oak table, two rush-bottomed chairs, two stools, or benches, a chest, and a couple of boxes, composed the whole of the furniture. The chimney was capacious, and on one side of it were two or three smoky shelves for the kitchen utensils. I saw no

bedsteads, and the beds were sacks stuffed with straw or rushes. Certainly I never had a better night's rest than on the straw where I slept. The moment the old woman observed that I was stirring, she accosted me with 'A good morrow morning to your honour! I hope your honour had a sweet night's rest?'

"I replied by praising the softness of my bed, and thanking her for the good accommodations.

"She smiled, and said, 'Ah! your honour, we poor people may thank God that the rushes and straw are to be had cheap, or we might sleep on the bare ground. But your honour, I suppose, was very much tired; and, when one is weary and sleepy, a hard bed seems soft. Won't your honour be after trying some new laid eggs this morning? I would not put them on to boil until I saw you rising. Besides,' added she, 'I have made some fresh butter for you to eat with your potatoes; for we are too poor, your honour, to buy bread.'

"I answered that, in spite of the hearty supper I had eaten, the sound sleep in which I was plunged all night had assisted my digestion so well, that I felt prepared to eat again. After washing and returning thanks to God for my narrow escape, and asking his forgiveness of the rash act I had committed, I sat down to breakfast. The countenances of the family won me immediately: they were expressive of the greatest good-nature and simplicity, though at the same time indicative of a good share of mother wit. Indeed, the son and

daughter were both very handsome; and their mother, then about forty-five, showed the remains of a beautiful face. During the breakfast, she told me her husband had been dead for more than three years; that her only support was two cows, some hens, and ducks, which, with the labour of her son and daughter, enabled them to live free of want. 'We have the right of cutting turf from our landlord, who is very kind to my poor boy,' she added: 'he is allowed to sell it at the village; and at harvest time he earns something handsome by mowing: at other times he gets a good job of ditching. My daughter cuts fagots, also, when I can spare her; and thus, by hook and by crook, we contrive to live. Whilst God grants us health, we shall not starve.'

When I reflected on the hard and industrious life of those poor people, I almost regretted that I had not brought away some of the lord of the manor's money, to have bestowed it upon them. However, thought I, the horse, saddle, and bridle remain; and I must dispose of them in some way or other, so as to prevent their leading to a discovery of my retreat. Breakfast being over, I went out to look after my horse: I found that he had also a comfortable bed, was watered, cleaned, and fed with oats, and had then plenty of hay before him. The boy told me he was going to the squire's with a load of turf upon the old mare; 'and my sister,' said he, 'is gone to cut furze about a mile off.' I sauntered back to the house, re-

solving to open my heart to this good old woman, to relate to her my unfortunate accident, and obtain her advice how I was to proceed in future, so as to reach my ultimate destination. When I got back to the hut, I found her seated on one of the benches, knitting a yarn stocking. I took a seat along side of her, in silence, reflecting how I was to begin my story. She watched my features attentively, then, all at once, exclaimed, —

"'What makes your honour look so sad? I'll warrant you have been crossed in love? It always makes young men thoughtful.'

"'Alas!' replied I, 'good woman, I would that it were only love! But, come, you are kind-hearted and generous; therefore I shall tell you that I am an unfortunate sinner, and shall expose my secrets to you without the fear of being betrayed.'

"'God's curses,' said she, 'light upon all traitors and informers! and may they fall heavy upon me if ever I betray him who trusts me! The poor and unfortunate are my brothers.'

"I paused for a few seconds, and then said, 'In the heat of passion, excited to revenge by most cruel and atrocious conduct, I committed an act that I deeply repent, and now shudder to recollect. God forgive me!'

"'God have mercy upon your soul!' said she. 'You cannot be a bad man; bad men rarely feel the pangs of repentance: but go on with your story.'

"I then related to her, concisely, all the circumstances, the manner in which I made my escape, and the desire I had to remain with her until the affair had blown over.

"She remained silent for a while, then said, 'Your secret is safe with me. It was indeed a frightful accident. Alas! there are too many of those iron-hearted men amongst our landlords. What a poor, miserable, forlorn woman, like myself can do for your honour shall be done cheerfully: but to keep you in my cabin is impossible; and, as you have been frank and open with me, I am bound in duty to tell you how I am situated myself. Know, then, that we are close to a cave, the underground hiding-place of one of the bands which infest this county. Their captain is a ferocious, though generous fellow: he often makes me presents; but he has sworn to murder me if ever I harbour any one in my cabin more than a day, lest his den should be discovered, and which they visit once, and sometimes twice, a month, according as their necessities require; for my son, who found it out by accident, and went into it, saw a number of valuable things there—provisions, clothes, &c. Since they knew of our having seen their hiding-place, we have been obliged to become accomplices, against our will; and, though the captain is liberal, I feel that it is a sin to harbour and encourage such villains. But no one dare oppose them: and what can a

poor widow and two children do against a band of robbers? If I were to inform against them, the police could not catch one half of their number; and those who escaped would surely murder both me and my children. Now, as it regards yourself, I don't believe there has been any news of your affair brought to the village, or I should have heard it. I therefore advise you to lose no time in endeavouring to sell your horse; for should tidings come here, so fine an animal would be known immediately by the description of him. The money he fetches will pay the expenses of your journey to the north. You may stay two or three days with us, until you feel quite recovered from your fatigue; but longer I cannot consent to harbour you; and may God, in his great mercy, protect your honour from all harm!'

"This friendly advice and confidential communication appeared to me so reasonable and generous withal, that I could not help expressing to the poor widow, in very warm terms, how grateful I felt for her kindness, and how little I was inclined to remain, when I saw it would probably be the cause of a heavy misfortune to herself and children. 'Your advice, however,' said I, 'appears to me so good, that I shall immediately hasten to the village and sell the horse to the first purchaser that offers.'

"Full of my scheme, I went to the shed, saddled the hunter, that looked as fine and as fresh as if

he had been a month in his master's stable, and led him up to the cabin door. Just as I was going to mount, the widow exclaimed, —

"'Stop, don't go in that dress; neither sell your horse with the bridle and saddle: I'll bring you a halter for him; and I have some old clothes of my husband's which will just fit you. I beg your honour to wear them; for those which you have on you now are too good, and it may be that they have been described, and will discover you.'

"'Very prudently spoken, good woman,' replied I, proceeding to loosen the girths: 'I perceive that thou art my guardian angel; and now I recollect a horse is always sold with a halter.'

"She left me and went into the cabin, where, after rummaging about awhile, she returned with rope halter and the garments.

"'Here,' said she, 'go in and change your clothes, whilst I hold the bridle.'

"In a couple of minutes I was dressed in my tattered suit; and, after tying the halter on the horse, and taking a turn of the rope over his nose, she handed me a piece of old hair cloth to sit on, and said, —

"'Now, if any one enquires how you came by this horse, say he strayed upon the borders of the great bog, about five or ten miles off, that every one knows, and coming near the hut of Tim Lawson, he fed about there for a couple of months; that Tim, seeing no one come to claim him,

took him up, but being too spirited for work, he sent you to sell him. You have heard of Tim, no doubt?' she added. 'He is the captain of the band that has struck terror into the hearts of all the country round. Depend upon it, no one will dare to question you farther, not even the officers of justice; nor will any one attempt to enquire of Tim whether he sent you or not. If any of the neighbouring squires are there, they will buy the horse the sooner, and pay a better price for him, knowing him to be Tim Lawson's. So now your honour may go in safety, and I pray God no accident may happen to you.' I thanked her again, observing, as I rode off, that I then went with a stouter heart; though I confess I could not altogether conquer the qualms of conscience experienced at the idea of selling stolen property. The only excuse I could make to myself was, the being forced by circumstances to take the horse, and equally so, at that moment, to sell him. Notwithstanding I could not calm an uneasiness of mind that tormented me, and for the last two days I had felt now and then a shivering, accompanied with a feverish heat, and a pain at the nape of my neck. However, I thought it arose from fatigue and anxiety, and that after resting a day or two it would leave me.

"When I got near the village I jumped from the horse's back, and led him forwards at a very slow gait. I had not passed more than half way down

the principal street, before I was met by two gentlemen mounted, and in hunting-dresses, with servants riding behind them. As they passed me, one of them, attracted by the noble appearance of my hunter, exclaimed to his companion —

"'What a fine animal!'

"'Yes,' answered the other, stopping suddenly, 'a thorough-bred southern hunter; as fine a horse as ever I set my eyes on; no doubt for sale — let us enquire.'

"Then turning his horse towards me, he said,—

"'Hark ye, my honest fellow, is that animal to be sold?'

"'A hunter, by heavens!' cried his companion again, 'and belonging to some gentleman's stud; how the devil did you come by him?' addressing himself to me.

"'All I know, your honour,' said I, assuming as coarse a manner as possible, 'is, that Tim Lawson, who lives about seven miles off, on the great bog, picked him up astray, and finding no one to claim him, after a couple of months, being a horse not fit for common work, he sent me with him here to sell him. Besides, your honours, I'll warrant there's never a hedge, ditch, or wall in the county that he won't go over like nothing at all, at all!'

"'Oh, ho!' said the man who questioned me, 'one of Tim's catching, eh? then I'll warrant him also; for Tim never stole a bad horse in his

life. But come, to the point, my lad: what does he want for him ?'

"'Why, your honours,' said I, 'only be after examining his points, and I'll be bound your honours will agree that he's a horse worth one hundred guineas of any gentleman's money who loves hunting.'

"'By my soul, my lad,' said the gentleman, 'but you brought some of Tim's blarney in your pocket. But, come, before we bargain, let us saddle and try him. Tom there, my groom, will leap him over any thing that man and horse dare attempt.'

"Tom quickly alighted, and taking off the saddle and bridle, he put them on the hunter. We then returned to the skirts of the village, where there were hedges and stone walls in abundance; and, stopping opposite to the highest, I asked the gentleman whether he wished his own man to leap, or should I do it myself?

"'So,' said he, smiling, 'I see Tim has taught you all the secrets of his trade; come let us see how you perform for the first leap, and the next shall be for Tom.'

"I was seated in an instant, and went over the wall at full tilt, in a flying leap; then, to astonish them, I turned the horse back, walking him gently up to it, and of a sudden made him skip to the top like a cat, and, touching it with his hind feet, he came back to the spot from whence I started.

"'Bravo, bravo!' exclaimed the first, whilst

the second rode up and clapped me on the shoulder, saying, 'Well done, my honest fellow! By Jasus! you and your horse are all of a piece. No wonder the people are so much afraid of Tim, when he has such horses and riders in his band, whom the devil and all the policemen together would not be able to catch. But, come, let Tom take a leap, and then we shall strike a bargain.'

"The servant now mounted the horse, and went over a hedge in the same style; after which he exclaimed, —

"'By Jasus, your honour, but our Raven Black's a fool to him; why he's like a cork upon water, like a buck upon his pasterns.'

"'This is all well,' observed his master; 'he is a smart active hunter, no doubt; but, although you do belong to Tim Lawson's gang, for once in your life be honest, and tell the truth, has the horse any blemishes?'

"'Look in his mouth, your honour,' said I, 'you will see by the marks in his teeth, he is rising seven years old; sound, too, in wind and limb, without fault or blemish; and if there's a horse in the county that can hold way with him, or has better bottom, then say I'm a fool, and that Tim Lawson knows nothing of horseflesh.'

"His friend now approached, patted his neck, looked in his mouth, smoothed down his legs, and felt about his fetlock joints. After which, he said, —

"'By my soul, but he is a noble beast, and cer-

tainly has no blemish that I can discover. However, Tim's horses come cheap to him, and therefore he ought to sell them at a reasonable rate; besides, he must consider the risk those run who buy from him, of having the animal reclaimed by his lawful owner. I think, therefore, if you give him thirty pounds, he ought to deem his horse well sold.'

"'No, no, gentlemen,' said I, 'this is much too little: besides, Tim has ordered me to bring him home a working horse and forty pounds at least, or else the sum I first demanded in cash. I am in a hurry to return to the great bog, to-night. If you don't buy him, I know the squire will; so all I can say is, that if you will give me thirty guineas and the horse your servant rides to boot, the hunter's yours, and if not, why then your honour must excuse me, I shall try my luck at the mansion house.'

"I saw his friend nod and wink at him to close the bargain; when he replied, —

"'Why you are a tight fellow to deal with, but I see there's nothing to be got out of you, and as I wish to be good friends with your captain, come, here's your money.'

"So saying, he took out his purse, and counted down thirty guineas, and then desired his servant to put the saddle and bridle on his new purchase, and give the rope halter back to me to lead home old Dobbin.

CHAPTER III.

"I NOW felt as if I had got rid of what lay heavy on my conscience, and might also have led to a discovery. Nothing remained but the saddle, bridle, and pistols, and those could be either buried, hid, or destroyed in some way or other. I continued up the village until I discovered a decent sort of a shop, tolerably well furnished with ready-made clothes, and other articles of a similar description. Here I purchased two good suits of labourer's garments, some linen handkerchiefs, stockings, shoes, several articles of woman's apparel, and, in fact, a number of things, which I thought might prove useful to the poor widow and her family. When I pulled out two or three guineas to pay for my purchases, the master of the shop looked at me suspiciously, and said, —

"'Where did you come by this gold, my lad? It looks very strange to see a man in tatters, as you are, with a handful of guineas in his pocket.'

"A lad who had been present when I sold the horse came into the shop at that instant, having followed me up the street, from what motive I know not; but just as he entered, I said boldly, 'I was sent here by Tim Lawson, from the great bog, to dispose of a horse, which I have done, and

the money I received I was ordered to spend in purchasing certain things. I don't see what right you have to question people who buy of you where they got their money.'

"The shopman said immediately, 'Oh! if you are sent by Tim Lawson, you are welcome to all in my shop without money. Though Tim is a terrible fellow, yet he's honourable in his dealings, and I should be sorry to make an enemy of him.'

"'Come,' said I, roughly, 'none of your blarney now, but give me my change. Don't you see my horse is uneasy; he may slip his halter, and then I shall have the devil's own chase to catch him.'

"This made him more brisk, and as he handed me my change, he said, 'Thank you, my good fellow, but don't take amiss what I said to you.' I turned on my heel and left him, without making a reply.

"My new horse was rising nine years old at least, but he was stout, strong, and active, and would do twice as much work in a day as the widow's mare. On the road I could not help flattering myself with the pleasure I should derive from bestowing him and the clothes, &c. that I purchased upon the poor widow and her children; and the reflection of having employed the money so well, tended to soften greatly the sorrow I experienced. Reflecting on these matters, and how I was to manage in future, I got quite near to the cabin before

I perceived it. Looking up of a sudden, I beheld the old woman and her daughter Susan standing at the threshold of the door to receive me. When I came near, the widow exclaimed, —

"'Thank God, I see your honour has got rid of the hunter: but where did you pick up this stout-looking horse?'

"Without making a reply, I threw her the bundle, rode off to the shed, where I made old Dobbin fast, gave him some hay, and then returned to the hut. Robert, the son, entered almost at the same moment, having just arrived, on the mare, from the squire's, where he had been to sell a load of turf. They all greeted me kindly. After which, I untied my bundle, which had remained on the floor unopened, and distributed the things amongst them, reserving for myself only what was barely necessary to keep me clean. I then produced some bread, the sight of which rejoiced them exceedingly. They crossed themselves before they tasted it, and the old woman particularly offered up a prayer to heaven, and, turning to me, said, —

"'May God reward your honour for providing for the widow and fatherless, and may you be more lucky in future!' The son and daughter both expressed their gratitude in the simple but eloquent language of nature; and when I told Robert the horse was also bought for the family, to carry turf and faggots to the village, his joy was excessive.

"'Now, your honour,' said he, 'I must tell you what happened to me to-day when I took my load of turf to the squire's. Just as I was done unloading, two smart-looking gentlemen, in hunting-dresses, came galloping up to the castle door. They dismounted and went in, after which the servants led their horses through the stable-yard, where I was standing; and, oh! your honour, how I trembled all over when I saw your horse amongst them. I thought I should have sunk through the ground. How, thought I, can they so soon have got his honour's horse, when I left him tied fast in the shed only an hour or two ago. I was for starting off home at once, but at that instant the squire, with his two visiters, came through the gate into the yard, and I was obliged to stop to let them pass by. As they went along, one of them said, —

"'Squire, I'll show you such a hunter as you have not seen for many a long day, and one that I will defy your stud to match.'

"'This roused my curiosity, and I thought I'd stay awhile longer to hear what they should say of him. By the time they got well into the yard, the men had led the horses back. The squire stopped them, called his groom, bade him mount your horse, and make him show his gaits. After the man had ridden backwards and forwards in a walk, a trot, a canter, and a gallop, —

"'By heavens!' said the squire, 'but he handles his feet like a cat. Denis,' said he to his

groom, 'take him a leap over that wall at the upper end of the yard into the orchard.'

"'He went over it, your honour, like a hare.'

"'By the powers of Moll Kelly,' said the squire, 'if he is only rising seven, as you say, he's worth a hundred pounds of any man's money, and, if you like, I'll count you off the *coppers* into your hand in a minute.'

"'No, no, squire,' said the gentleman, 'the best hundred and fifty in your purse would not buy him. Yet, notwithstanding, I fear I may get into bad bread by this purchase.'

"'How so?' enquired his friend.

"'Because,' said he, 'I have bought him from one of Tim Lawson's band; lads who never yet came by any thing honestly.'

"'But,' replied the squire, 'Tim's a privileged man, and if you feel any qualms about the business, here's the hundred pounds ready. Come, decide.'

"'No,' said the other, 'I'll not part with him. In for a penny, in for a pound, as the proverb says. I hope to win many a brush, at all events, before we part.'

"'Seeing them turn to leave the yard, I mounted the old mare, and came off home as fast as I could, to tell your honour, for I thought one of Tim's men had stolen him from our shed.'

"'Robert,' said I, 'you are a good lad, but I fear the horse I brought, as he was taken in part payment from the gentleman who bought mine,

may be dangerous to show in the village, or at the squire's.'

"'Oh, your honour,' answered Robert, 'don't be alarmed about that. I shall say Tim Lawson sold him to me, and let me see who will dare to touch him. I know now of three or four horses and cows in the neighbourhood which have come from Tim's stock, and I never heard of any one's daring to claim them.'

"Towards the evening of that day the pain in the nape of my neck increased. I was obliged to lie down; and a burning fever came upon me. I passed a sleepless night, and in the morning was worse, my head being giddy, and my eyes pained me so, they seemed starting from their sockets. Seeing that I did not rise, the widow came to me, felt my head, asked me some questions, which I answered incoherently, and the last thing I remember was her saying, —

"'God's will be done; but he has got the bog fever, and I will not put him out of my house, though Tim should threaten to murder me.'

"I then told her to take care of the money that was in my pockets. 'It is all yours,' said I, faintly. I could utter no more, but immediately fell into a sort of trance, scarcely recollecting any thing, and not knowing where I was for seventeen days. I only remembered having offered up my penitence to God, and I thought I saw a priest who officiated by me. On the seventeenth day I felt

a heavenly sensation, as if on a bed of down, and as though some one was putting the most delicious viands into my mouth. I had recovered my senses. I saw the shadow of some one pass before me. Again it administered to me something not so sweet, but strong. In a few minutes more I saw the widow distinctly. I made an effort to speak, but the words died away upon my lips: I could not articulate. She perceived it, and told me I must not talk; that she knew what I wished to say, and to keep myself still until I gained strength. An hour, or perhaps more, passed away in this manner, during which time she gave me to drink and to eat, what I now discovered was the pith of bread steeped in wine. This had a wonderful effect in increasing my strength. I could no longer contain myself, but exclaimed, —

"'Thou art my saviour, good, excellent woman, my guardian angel! Oh! permit me to express my gratitude to you.'

"'Hold, your honour,' said she; 'the priest ordered me not to let you talk when you came to your senses, lest it should cause a fit of weakness again, and kill you. So I hope you will not say much to-day; to-morrow, when God grants you more strength, we can speak of all that has happened. The next day the priest came to my bedside; enquired how I felt; and having found, by my pulse and my appearance, that I was rapidly gaining strength, he told me I might now, if I

pleased, converse with the old woman. I thanked him, and said, —

"'Holy father, either my senses have deceived me, or you have confessed me, given me the extreme unction, and prayed by my side?'

"'I have,' said he. 'You confessed your having killed the lord of the manor, asked forgiveness of God, and received absolution.'

"'Then it was,' said I, 'that I saw the lord of the manor driving my father and sister in a cruel manner off the farm, and again I beheld him pointing a pistol at me; then dead, and weltering in his blood. After which, holy father, I have no remembrance, except for a moment: I thought a fierce, terrible-looking fellow, accompanied by five or six other ruffians, regarded me with a murderous look, which chilled my blood, and that the widow held forth her arms to prevent them from killing me.'

"'This is all true,' said the good old woman. We sent for Father O'Morgan: he confessed you, administered the extreme unction, and then attended upon you like a physician. For sixteen days you lay in a state of insensibility, under the influence of a raging fever. Only a few days after your illness, the band arrived. Tim Lawson and his gang were furious that I should harbour any one, much less a stranger, who was probably from Dublin, and sent to betray him. They were determined to murder you. I rushed between them and the bed, holding them back, and

exclaiming, 'What! will you be such bad Christians as to kill a Catholic, a sick and dying man, to whom Father O'Morgan has just administered the extreme unction!' This speech stopped them: Tim looked upon you, and said,—

"'Well, widow, this time I forgive you, there's my hand. Take care of the poor devil, though he don't look long for this world. But hark ye, good mother, should he recover, he must either join us, or be off the moment he has strength to walk. Remember this, and tell him so. You know well that your squires hereabout dare not offend me, and it will ill become a poor wanderer like him: however, this saddle and bridle and holsters are just the things for me: I'll take them, for I think he will not live to use them, and I know you have no business with such trappings. By the cross,' he continued, 'if you ever harbour a man again without my leave, but it shall go hard with you!' I made no reply to his threats, being too happy that he let me off so easily, and made no search for your money, that I got our good father here to count for me, and to take out only what we wanted to buy physic, wine, and bread.'

"'Yes,' said Father O'Morgan, 'I can answer for the safety of whatever you left with her; for I was obliged to promise to count all the money, and to tell you how it was used, before she would consent to touch it, and being poor myself, I could not at that moment raise enough to buy the wine and medicines necessary for you.'

"This recital drew tears from me. I thanked Father O'Morgan twenty times over, and told him that he had saved a sinner.

"'So much the better, my son,' said he: 'you have repented: besides, your crime was an involuntary one. Live to be more prudent and less revengeful, and lead a virtuous life. This accident, I hope, will convince you of the folly of rashness and passion: you have seen that a single blow given in anger has brought upon your devoted head the dread of the law, misery, sickness, and sorrow.'

"Six days elapsed before I felt my strength sufficiently recruited to enable me to commence my journey; however, the widow, who had intelligence of Tim's movements, told me I might remain four days longer: in the mean time, she made several attempts to return me the money taken from my pockets; but I always found some excuse to put her off until the last moment. When the day arrived, she told me, with tears in her eyes, how much she was grieved at not being able to harbour me any longer, on account of Tim Lawson, who had his spies every where. The son and daughter wept aloud when they took leave of me, and the old woman sobbed bitterly, and was for some time before she could speak: at length, recovering herself, she said,—

"'It grieves my heart to part with your honour, whilst you are so weak: but what can a poor unprotected widow do? the richest people in the county are afraid of him, and how can I

attempt to disobey his orders? May God spare your life for better times and better luck; and rest assured, that my prayers and those of my children shall be constantly offered up to Heaven for your happiness and prosperity!'

"After saying this, she handed me the money, wrapped up in a piece of rag; but I refused to receive it, for her kindness and gratitude affected me exceedingly.

"'No,' said I, 'my worthy friend, God seems to have directed my steps to your humble cabin, to be serviceable to you; and nothing shall ever induce me to take back a farthing of the money.' Much altercation now took place between us, and constant entreaties on her side; but I firmly resisted them all, and she was at length forced to yield. Then, wishing her health and happiness, I tore myself from the embraces of this excellent family, and departed. Only three shillings now remained in my pocket; and I was so weak, I could hardly drag one leg after the other. By slow degrees, begging alms as I went along, worn down and exhausted, I fell sick at another poor cabin. The family nursed and fed me, until I was able to walk again; but as I had not spent any of my money, I made them, with great difficulty, accept of a shilling, although I had lived there fifteen days.

"Ah, your honour!" said Tom, with a deep sigh, "I hope you won't be offended with me, as

you are an exception; but truly I may say with the song:—

> 'Tis the poor man alone,
> When he hears the poor moan,
> Who a morsel, a morsel will give.'"

"You are more than half right, Tom," I replied; "but come, let us have the rest of your story?"

"My journey," he continued; "was very fatiguing. Although they pressed me to stay longer, the idea of my being a charge upon them made me start again before I had sufficiently recruited my strength, and my money being all expended for the last two days, I have been ready to drop down in the road. The first charity I received was from your honour, at the moment I was sinking with weakness and despondency."

I was interrupted in the remarks which so singular a narrative naturally suggested, by the entrance of my servant, who put a letter into my hand bearing the Belfast post-mark, and inscribed with the well-known manly characters of my old friend's handwriting. Impatiently I broke the seal, and ran my eager eyes over the contents, which were couched in the most affectionate terms, and expressive of his entire acquiescence in my proposed scheme. In fact, it was rather evident, from the general tenor of the letter, that my guardian was himself somewhat tired of the dull monotonous life incident to a residence in an Irish provincial town; and that he was by no

means displeased at the opportunity of revisiting the scenes of his early travels. It had hitherto been a matter of perfect indifference to what quarter of the world I first directed my vagrant course; but some circumstances mentioned in the concluding paragraph of his letter determined me to sail at once for the United States of America. As I was very unwilling to leave unfinished the work of charity I had begun, and turn the unfortunate man, who had now become a pensioner on my bounty, on the world again, without first taking some steps to secure his comfort and safety, I at once resolved to make him the companion of the voyage, and thus place him beyond the reach of danger.

My preparations were soon completed. The care of my estate, during my absence, was, by a power of attorney, committed to my cousin, who, in case I died unmarried, became heir at law to what property I possessed; and, without further delay, we started off to join my guardian at Belfast.

After the first salutations were over, I briefly related to him the history of my companion, and the critical situation in which he stood, with my desire to secure him a passage to America. My guardian warmly approved of these intentions, and, shaking poor Bryan cordially by the hand, he said, "Come, cheer up, my honest fellow! God is great and merciful: he has, no doubt, accepted of your prayers and your penitence. It is not for man to decide between you and your Maker; we

have not the power to save or to condemn a soul, and we are in duty bound to succour the distressed. So, come, be of good cheer."

Then turning to me, said he, "You see, my son, when man permits his passions to get the better of his reason, he disfigures the fairest attributes of civilised humanity, and puts on those of the untutored savage."

The vessel in which we engaged our passage was of about six hundred tons burthen, commanded by a middle-aged man, a Swede, under the colours of his country. Though large, and carrying an immense cargo, she was not copper-bottomed, and seemed likely to prove a dull sailer. My guardian told me, at the first glance, he suspected that the captain, although well advanced in life, and an old seafaring man, was not an expert seaman. "But," added he, "what is to be done? We cannot remain long in Ireland without being subjected to a scrutiny which would be, perhaps, fatal to the fortunes of poor Tom. There is no other vessel to sail this season. I have therefore determined to depart, rather than await here several months for another opportunity."

On our return homewards, we met the captain, who informed us he had positively fixed his departure for the third day from that time, and requested we would prepare ourselves accordingly. No sooner had we heard this news, than we repaired to the tavern, where we found our friend Tom busily engaged packing up his trunk; for

my guardian having given him money, he had bought for himself clothes, and other necessaries for the voyage. He told us he had heard the ship was to start in a couple of days, and he was anxious to go on board; "for," said he, "I feel perfectly strong, and almost capable of making the journey on foot, if it were possible." Tom seemed, indeed, quite another man. His cheeks began to assume the freshness of health, and when he was dressed, we could not help admiring his fine features, and his tall athletic figure, that seemed to combine the symmetry of Apollo with the strength of Hercules.

We now all repaired on board, each taking possession of the place assigned to him by the captain, and no one seemed more pleased than our friend Tom, though there was a melancholy expression in his countenance, that seemed to say, "I am going to part with all that is dear to me upon earth."

At the time indicated the captain was punctual, and put to sea; and nothing could exceed the pleasure I felt to find myself at length on my way to visit foreign countries. My young imagination teemed with delightful visions and anticipations of what I should see new and interesting in America, and the satisfaction I should experience at being removed from contemplating hourly the misery and wretchedness which prevailed throughout my native land.

"Ah, beautiful but unfortunate spot!" I ex-

claimed, as the high cliffs of Ireland faded into distance, "am I never to see thee prosperous and happy? Alas! thou devoted land, the bones of thy ancient lords, now mouldered into dust, are no longer moistened with tears of gratitude and sympathy, but with bitter streams of sorrow and of blood. Thou dear evergreen island! once the seat of contentment, where the sweet minstrel of gladness sung the song of welcome to the weary traveller, and, whether rich or poor, the hospitable door was opened to receive him, swelling his bosom with joy, and assuring him of peace, comfort, and repose!"

Tom, who was standing by me, overheard this speech, and said, "True, sir, ours is, indeed, an unfortunate country; cruelty, intolerance, and oppression have blighted the native richness and prosperity of Ireland; but her people are brave and firm, and will struggle for their liberties until the last."

We stood for some time, looking over the side of the vessel, and lamenting the fate of our country, that was now like a distant cloud diminishing away before our eyes. Tom heaved a deep sigh, a sigh that came from the soul, and I saw the tears roll down his cheeks.

"Tom, my friend," said I, "you appear to have yet some secret sorrow preying upon your spirits, which you have not revealed to me? Come, this is not right: consider me as a real and unalterable friend. My guardian noticed,

that, although your bodily health was somewhat repaired, there still is a disease in your mind, and charged me to speak to you, and assure you that the only way to conquer it is to disclose whatever oppresses your spirits to your friends. This confidence will lighten your heart." During my address, Tom's countenance exhibited the agitation and tumult within his breast, that heaved with repeated sighs, and obstructed his utterance: at length another flood of tears rolled from his eyes; he was relieved: and, after regarding me with fixed attention for a few seconds, he exclaimed,—

"Oh, good and excellent young gentleman, pardon me! I have concealed from you the most excruciating part of my story; for in truth, I was so weak, when I told you my sad tale, I dared not touch upon an incident that I felt I should be unable to relate to you. Thanks to your friendship and God's mercy, I am now better, and recovered enough to contend against the pangs of bitter recollection, which, before I received the pious and friendly advice of your guardian, had nearly overwhelmed me with despair."

After this preface, he paused for a couple of minutes, seemed to strive to collect his force, and then, with more calmness than I expected, commenced his recital.

"Adjoining our farm there lived a country gentleman of good fortune, who had a son and a

daughter. The former was exactly my age, and the sister was five or six years younger. Mr. Burnet, the father, was a man somewhat advanced in years, having married late in life; but he was hale and strong, and fond of field sports. His son, who was so much attached to me, that he could not bear to pass a day out of my society, pressed me constantly to be with him as much as possible; and the father, who took a great liking to me, did not fail to reiterate his son's invitations. This intimacy continued for several years, and, of course, gave me frequent opportunities of seeing and conversing with Miss Burnet, with whose beauty and accomplishments I was soon captivated. Aware, however, that her father looked up to a connection for her much higher than the son of a country squire, I endeavoured to conceal, even from myself, the attachment I had conceived for her, thinking that the slightest intimation might make her father angry, and cause him to interdict my visits for ever. The idea of being deprived of the happiness of seeing her occasionally, already made me miserable: however, it was not long before I discovered that Helen Burnet was passionately attached to me; and, indeed, at length it was so obvious, that I wondered her father and mother had not noticed it. Whether the father did or not, is doubtful, but both the mother and brother were so well disposed towards me, they evidently wished us to be united. This reciprocity of

passion could not long remain suppressed: it broke forth; and I declared my love for her in the most fervent manner, and was made happy by receiving, from my mistress's lips, a warm acknowledgment of the tender sentiments she entertained for me. In this manner upwards of a year passed away in mutual happiness, and I had her sacred promise never to marry another."

At the close of this sentence, my friend Tom seemed again deeply troubled; and whilst we had been absorbed in conversation the sea had became extremely rough, in consequence of a strong headwind, and we found ourselves so uneasy in our place that we were obliged to quit it. He appeared glad of a reprieve, even though it should be for a short time, to recover himself; and, promising to renew his history the next time we could conveniently meet, we separated to seek our berths and lie down, for the high sea had caused a violent motion that made us all sick. For my part, the first attack of this insupportable disorder, which lasted three days, almost without intermission, so completely unmanned me, that it greatly damped my ardour for sea-voyages, that is to say, as long as the foul wind continued; but the third day, even before the rough sea had entirely subsided, my guardian caused me to eat a biscuit with a small piece of salt meat, and drink a glass of brandy and water; then making me dress myself, and go upon deck, in an hour or two I felt quite well, and had no

relapse during the passage. When I got upon the deck, poor Tom approached me with a smile, and I could see, already, that the gloomy cloud, which formerly hung upon his features, had begun to disperse. Some days, however, elapsed before I could renew my request to continue his narration, as there were many passengers, and it was necessary I should find an opportunity when none of them were within hearing. At length, one morning, finding ourselves alone on the quarter-deck, all the other passengers having retired to their berths, I lost no time in reminding him of his promise, and he continued his narrative as follows :—

"The persecutions of the lord of the manor had been now about eighteen months in duration, when all of a sudden I thought I perceived a great coldness in squire Burnet's reception of me, and, indeed, in that of the whole family, except my beloved Helen, who, whenever I went there, I found pale and dejected; and to my anxious questions concerning her health, she only answered with her tears.

"At length the brother one day, just as I was about to enter the house, met me at the door, and, taking me aside, said he had something to communicate. He prefaced his communication by saying, that nothing could be more painful to his friendship than the duty his father had imposed upon him, but it was imperious.

"'You know,' said he, 'that I am a dutiful

son, and you will, I hope, make all due allowances for the peculiar situation in which I am placed, between a friend and a father.'

"'Enough of this,' said I: 'proceed. I feel that the *fiend** , who has already ruined the father, will not stop until he has also overwhelmed the son by his infernal machinations.'

"'You are right,' said he: 'the lord of the manor has traduced your character in the most infamous manner. He has told several glaring falsehoods respecting your father and yourself; but seemed more particularly anxious to turn my father against *you*, whom he has represented in the vilest colours.'

"I felt as if my heart were bursting with rage, and exclaimed,—

"'I'll go immediately and tear him to pieces —I'll scatter his mangled carcass to the dogs! The villain! the worse than murderer!'

"'Hold, my friend!' said he; 'calm your passion, and do not involve me in the effects of your fury. What I now reveal to you, I have been charged by my own father never to mention. But friendship overcame every other consideration— I could not be the bearer of his cruel message, without explaining to you the cause that produced it.'

"'What is the message?' said I, hastily.

"'Tom,' said he, 'prepare yourself to support

* The squire.

it manfully, for I know it will cut you to the soul.'

"'I understand you,' said I, with firmness: 'proceed. I am now callous to every feeling but revenge, and revenge I will have ere I die.'

"'God forgive you,' said he, 'for that rash expression: but hear the sequel.'

"The poor good-hearted fellow paused awhile in agitation, and then continued, while the tears started into his eyes, —

"'Ah! my friend Tom, if you knew what my dear sister suffers, you would be more calm.'

"'No more of this, but proceed, I beseech you.'

"'Well, then; my father this morning, just before he left home, called me into his room, and said, —'My friend and neighbour has given such an account of your friend Tom Bryan and his family, that I can never more consent to see him within my doors.' He then went on to relate many circumstances concerning *you* particularly, which I knew to be false, and I told him so; but he became exceedingly angry, calling me a foolish young fellow, led away by the goodness of my heart, and my friendly disposition; that his information was correct; and that he would hear no more of my ridiculous attempts to defend a man who was an infamous character. 'Say you are commissioned by your father to inform him, that he can never again be received within these doors. Nothing that he can say or do shall

make me alter this determination; especially as, by so doing, I should draw down upon myself the enmity of the most powerful man in the county, who has proposed his nephew, heir to all his large estates, to me as a son-in-law. This, however, is not for Mr. Bryan's ears. I tell it to you, my son, to convince you that I have just and potent reasons for my conduct.'

"As he concluded, I felt my head turn round, a cold sweat poured from my temples, and I should have fallen to the ground if he had not caught me in his arms. I was, however, senseless for some minutes. When I came to myself, I found my beloved Helen and her mother and brother all fondly and anxiously hanging over me, and occupied in applying restoratives.

"'Thank God!' said Mrs. Burnet, 'he lives.'

"Helen was silent, but the pearly drops coursed each other in streams down her cheeks, and her countenance exhibited a picture of grief and despair that wrung my heart."

Here poor Tom again paused; a tear came to his relief. He wiped it away, and resumed his story with composure.

"Oh! my benefactors," said he, "that I live to relate this scene to you! that I should not have died at the instant I beheld my beloved Helen again! How I could have borne what followed, and still live, God only knows: but I perceive now it was his divine will, and I must

praise and glorify Him, while I endeavour to bear with fortitude whatever else may befall me.

"It was some seconds after my recovery before any of us could utter a syllable. All were deeply affected, and sobbed aloud, except myself; who, having now got over the first paroxysm of grief, began to collect my fortitude, to enable me to support what I saw was inevitable,—an eternal separation from her I loved more than life itself.

"At length I broke silence. 'The cruel message from your husband,' said I to Mrs. Burnet, 'has been delivered to me. I see the lord of the manor has influenced him so far, and turned him so violently against me, it would be in vain to attempt to retrieve my character in his opinion. It is agonising, but I must submit to my fate, with all the fortitude I am master of, until time and opportunity shall afford me the means of revenging the wrongs of my father, and proving my own innocence.'

"I made a motion to depart; but Helen threw herself upon my neck, and hung about me, exclaiming, 'Oh! Tom! my beloved Tom! I have long since given you my heart, and promised you my hand! No earthly power shall make me change my resolution!'

"She cried and sobbed violently, and at length swooned away. All our care was now turned towards her. However, she soon recovered, and her mother then interfered, em-

braced me, and begged me, for God's sake, since her husband had been so deceived, not to do any thing precipitately.

"'You see,' said she, 'how Helen and all of us love you; but we know the violence of my husband's temper, when he once takes a dislike which he imagines is founded in justice. Let the matter rest as it is, until we can find means to convince him of his error. In the mean time, you and Helen must resign the pleasure of seeing each other, nor would I advise you to correspond; for if a letter were to fall into my husband's hands, it would ruin our hopes of a reconciliation for ever. You see, my dear children, how we are situated, and the sooner you separate the better; for old Dennis, the gardener, is ordered to watch Tom's conduct, and if you stay long here it will be reported to my husband, and make him more angry.'

"After hearing this, I rose, to experience another heart-rending scene; and at length, almost sinking under the weight of grief and despair, which took possession of my heart, I shook my friend by the hand, for the last time, and, bursting through the hall door, rushed out into the road.

"From that moment I became sullen and callous to every thing about me, until one day a man, who lived on a small farm belonging to Mr. Burnet, came to buy a horse from my father. After the bargain was settled, he was invited

into the house, to take some refreshment. They were seated in my father's writing-room, and I was in the apartment adjoining, where I overheard all their conversation. 'The horse I have sold you,' said my father, 'is young and well trained: my son used to ride him, and he has taken the brush with him twice or thrice.'

"'Oh!' replied the farmer, 'I am glad to hear it; for the squire likes me, and will like me better when he sees me close at his heels; and now, since Miss Helen's marriage, they say the old gentleman and his son-in-law mean to have a hunt regularly once a week.'

"'Miss Helen married!' exclaimed my father, with astonishment.

"'To be sure,' replied the farmer; 'she was married, by the Bishop of Cork, last Sunday, at Castle Martyr church. I witnessed the ceremony with my own eyes.'

"I heard no more: a black cloud seemed to swim before my sight. I threw myself back in the chair, and remained for several minutes insensible to every thing about me. A sullen determination of taking vengeance on our cruel enemy now rankled in my bosom, and the more so as having received no intimation whatever from Helen that she had been forced to break her promise. I considered her as a false one, who exchanged love for gold; and became like the ferocious tiger, that only awaited a favourable moment to rush upon my prey. One morning,

about four months after Helen's marriage, as I was sitting thoughtfully near a window that looked out upon the road, I saw a little girl coming towards the house with a letter in her hand. When she discovered me at the window, she hid it in her bosom. This roused my curiosity, and, taking my hat, I walked forth to meet her. On seeing me come out, she accosted me, and enquired if the young squire Bryan was at home.

"'I am he,' said I; 'what do you want with me?'

"'Here,' said she, 'is a letter; but I received very strict orders not to deliver it to any one else but young Mr. Bryan.' I took it from her, and, giving her a small piece of money, returned to my place at the window. On opening it, I discovered the well known-writing of my beloved Helen; but the words were traced with a trembling hand, many of them barely legible.

"It began thus —

"'My beloved Tom, — By the time you receive this proof of the truth of my attachment, I shall be numbered with the dead.' I could read no farther. My sight became dim; a noise like thunder rumbled in my ears, and for several minutes I was unconscious of all around me. My sister, who now entered the room, seeing the letter in my hand, took it from me, and read it, whilst the tears flowed down her cheeks. 'Alas! poor girl!' she exclaimed, 'how have you been sacrificed!'

"'To whom?' said I, starting up, and clench-

ing my fist almost in a state of madness: 'show me the villain, and I'll have his heart's blood? who shall dare to injure her?'

"'Calm yourself, my dear brother?' said she, 'for the die is cast! Your poor unfortunate Helen has paid the debt of nature, and is blessed with the angels above!'

"'How!' I exclaimed, throwing myself in an agony upon the ground. 'Yes,' said she, 'it is but too true. This letter was written only a few hours before her death. Last evening, the farmer's daughter was here, and told us all about it.'

"My sensations, for some time, were indescribably agonising; until a flood of tears came to my relief. I then made my sister finish reading the letter. It continued thus:—'Know that I have never ceased to love thee, nor have I been unfaithful to my promise. My father's cruelty has killed me. He, who was once so kind, so good a parent, urged by ambitious motives, became an unfeeling tyrant. Oh! that I have been compelled to write those horrible words against the author of my being! Forgive me, great God! and pardon him for having forced me, against my will, to repair to the altar and go through the ceremony of a marriage, when my vows were already plighted to another, and registered by the most sacred promises in heaven. Though reduced to a state of the utmost feebleness and misery, the uncle of the young lord and my father would listen to no further excuses for

delay; and I was borne to the church, in a situation that excited the pity and execration of all the spectators. The young lord himself was much affected; but he dared not oppose his imperious uncle. Yes! my beloved Tom, he has a noble soul and a feeling heart. After the ceremony was over, I fainted away, and was conveyed back to my father's in a state of insensibility. When I recovered, I sent for the young lord, and then ordered every one else to leave the room. When they were gone, he threw himself on his knees at my feet, and said, —

"'Oh! adorable Helen! you are now my wife: we have been joined at the holy altar in the bonds of matrimony; but still, if you have any inward compunction, any feeling of disgust towards me, let our union be that of friendship. My conscience, my honour, my respect — shall I add, love?— for you forbids me to exercise the rights of a husband, and lord it over the person of one who denies me her heart. I shall defer the consummation of my bliss, until you have seen, by my tenderness and affection, that I am worthy of your love. Deign only to treat me with reciprocal candour.'

"'I felt overpowered by the generosity of the young lord, and promised him my confidence and friendship; more I could not give.

"'I felt, my beloved Tom, that I was not long for this world of troubles; and only wished to gain time, until it pleased the Almighty God to

call me from them. * * * * * * I have had a fainting fit, but have recovered sufficiently to finish this letter. My fidelity to thee, my plighted vows, remain pure and holy on the register above. This is the only chance I have had of writing to thee; it was obtained by stratagem, for which I pray God to forgive me. Accept the fond and latest adieus of thy faithful and dying

HELEN.'"

CHAPTER IV.

At the close of this recital his eyes were again overflowing with tears. Some heavy sighs escaped him, and it was a quarter of an hour, at least, before he could recover himself sufficiently to finish his melancholy narration, that made me weep with him. When our tears had ceased, and he found himself able to go on, he related, that her funeral passed before their windows, and caused another dreadful paroxysm of grief; accompanied by the most violent emotions of rage.

"What succeeded," said he, "you have already heard; and now, I hope, having given you my confidence, and exposed to you the secret of my guilt, that has so long corroded my heart, I shall become more calm and contented."

My guardian consoled him by saying, "Your conduct, Tom, ever since the commission of the fatal deed, has been most exemplary; such as to conciliate the favour of God and man. You must now, then, exert your fortitude to banish those melancholy thoughts; and, putting full confidence in the mercy and goodness of Divine Providence, labour to make the rest of your life not only pure and holy, but useful to your fellow-creatures.

In this way you will certainly attain the reward of virtue in the world to come; since we are told, that 'God has more joy over one sinner that repenteth, than a thousand who have never erred.'" My poor friend Tom seemed greatly consoled by this excellent advice. He now appeared to take an interest in every thing around; and joined me in endeavouring to acquire the art of seamanship; in which we were greatly assisted by the first mate, who was not only very clever in his profession, but extremely kind, good-natured, and communicative. During the last spell of fine weather and fair winds, he had frequently mentioned the necessity of setting up the shrouds and back-stays; but the captain, who was an ignorant man, and tenacious of his authority, conceived this advice a sort of presumption, and purposely opposed him; saying, "There's time enough; we shall have no bad weather; the vessel sails best with her standing rigging not too stiff."

"As you please, sir," replied the mate; "I beg, however, you will recollect that I have done my duty by informing you of its slackness."

"Don't be afraid, sir," answered the captain, coldly; "it is I who am responsible for those matters."

The chief officer felt hurt at his haughty manner, and never mentioned the subject again; though he felt well convinced he was right.

We had made all our distance to the northward during the continuance of the good weather, and

began to steer to southward and eastward; when, all of a sudden, the sky became overcast with black heavy clouds, the wind blew fresh, and the sea rose high, obliging us to take in sail immediately. This was about six o'clock in the morning, in the chief mate's watch, who handed the mainsail, hastened to take double reefs in the topsails, and soon put the vessel in a situation to resist the gale, that now blew with great violence. It continued all the day, during which time the mate, several times, expressed his anxiety for the fate of the mainmast, on account of the shrouds. He did every thing that prudence could suggest, at that time; and, when he went below, recommended to the captain, whose watch it was, to secure them by cross preventer stays. To this the captain made no answer. About midnight we were all awakened by a tremendous crash, that caused the old ship to tremble to her lower futtocks. I was one of the first upon deck, and, to my great astonishment, found there was scarcely any wind. The vessel had rolled away her mainmast; that, breaking off about twelve feet above the deck, went over the starboard side with such violence as to tear out the larboard chain-bolts; for the rigging was new and strong, but the backstays, which were old, snapped short off. This terrible disaster, of which the captain had been warned, alarmed him so that he lost all his presence of mind, and stood

like one petrified, gaping at the awful scene, without knowing what to do, or how to collect himself sufficiently to command his crew. The chief officer, who sprung upon deck the moment he heard the noise, ordered all hands to be piped, and, with a firm and sonorous voice, commanded the men to cut all away and clear the wreck of the mast as quickly as possible. At that instant a man reported that it beat violently against the rudder, which it might split if allowed to remain long in the same position, and endanger the loss of the ship. The captain, who by this time began to recover a little from his fright, cried out,—

"Don't cut away yet, men! let us try and save the sails; they will be a heavy loss."

However the officers and men pretended not to hear him; and in a few minutes, to our great joy, the mast, with all its appurtenances, was seen floating away. Nothing but this decided conduct on the part of the officers saved the rudder, which, on examination, was found to be already much injured. The captain now muttered something about disobedience of orders in not endeavouring to save the sails and yards. But the chief officer answered by saying he had done his duty, and was so well satisfied that the safety of the ship depended upon cutting away the larboard shrouds and rigging, to get rid of the mast, that he was not afraid of answering to any charges or accusations which the captain might think proper

to prefer against him, even in a court-martial, and they should then, perhaps, be able to say by whose neglect the mainmast went by the board.

To these observations the captain, who knew from his heart he was himself in fault, made no reply. After the wreck was cleared, the chief officer again showed his activity and experience in the expeditious manner in which he prepared and set up a jury-mast, made from a spare spar we had on board, and that, fortunately, was exactly of the dimensions required. Although, for the first part, the sea continued high, and the ship rolled and pitched heavily, the sailors conquered every difficulty. In thirty-six hours after the accident, the jury-mast was an end, and on the following morning the yards rigged across, and the sails set to a fine fair wind that had just commenced. My guardian was much displeased with the captain's conduct, and more so with his presumption, seeing how inferior he was in knowledge and experience to the young officer whose advice he disdained; thus endangering, by his obstinacy and pride, the safety of the ship and the lives of all those who were in her. "But, my son," added he, "some men imagine, the moment they know how to take the distance of the sun and stars, and calculate the longitude, that they are accomplished seamen; never reflecting on the experience necessary in what is called *working a ship*, and to judge correctly of the weather—when to set, and when to take in sail, exactly at the proper time;

how to manage in difficult situations, when taken suddenly aback on a lee shore, beating to windward, broaching to, getting into the trough of the sea, scudding, lying to, &c. &c.; and where a mere theoretical navigator, if once puzzled, knows not how to extricate himself. I, therefore, advise you, in your voyages, whilst you are young, to make yourself acquainted, as soon as possible, with practical seamanship: how to hand, reef, and steer; to learn the names of all the ropes, their positions, and, in fact, all the intricate routine of a seaman's duty. When you know this well, then your acquisition of astronomy, mathematics, and arithmetic will soon enable you to acquire the theory of navigation, and apply it to your practical knowledge."

This lesson had its effect upon me. I went to work with *a will*, as the sailors say; and so keen was I in the pursuit, and so well instructed by the first officer, who was very fond of me, that, by the time we arrived on the coast of America, I was a tolerably good seaman. I went aloft, could hand, reef, and steer; knew where to find the halyards, bowlines, clewgarnets, buntlings, and clewlines in the darkest night; and at length ventured to lay out upon the yard-arm and haul home the weather earring; then I could make spun yarn, and sinnet; point, raise a mouse, and splice; sheepshank the runner of a tackle, or a stranded backstay; weave points and gaskets, make nettings, and, in short, had taken a turn at all sorts of ship's work, even to the slushing down of the

masts and scrubbing the decks. By performing all these things myself, I knew that, if ever I should command a vessel, I could judge whether my crew performed their duty well or ill.

Although our passage, upon the whole, was far from being a bad one, as we had a large proportion of favourable winds, the loss of our mainmast, even to our dull ship, made a very sensible difference in her sailing, and caused a retard of at least eight days. The forty-second day from quitting Cape Clear, the southernmost promontory of Ireland, we made the coast of America about the high lands of the Neversinks, not far from the port of New York, the place of our destination; but the wind proving light and baffling, kept us two days more ere we could get safe moored alongside of the quay, or wharf, as it is called in that country.

A pilot came alongside of us while we were yet many miles from the coast, in a vessel of the country, a sort of schooner, of about 60 to 70 tons burthen, sailing remarkably fast, and built to weather the severest gales. The pilot immediately took charge of the ship, and showed us, by his activity and his orders, that he was a perfect master of his profession. We sailed along an inlet from the sea, surrounded by highlands, all of them well fortified, called the Narrows, that leads from the bay to the port. The season of our arrival was the month of May, when nature is in her best attire. A lively verdure brightened the

surrounding shores, where the flowers were all in bloom, as well as a number of the trees, and their fragrance, wafted to us on the cooling breezes, filled our senses with delight. The position of New York is highly attractive, and extremely advantageous, being placed at only about 20 or 30 miles from the sea, and the port is easy of access at all seasons of the year, whilst the other harbours of America are obstructed with ice, or difficult to enter when certain winds prevail. The city is built on a peninsula formed by an arm of the sea, called the Sound, and the great river Hudson, having water communications with the interior of the province of the same name, a rich and fertile country, independent of a large coasting trade; and it may be said to be the emporium of the foreign commerce of America. The houses are built of brick, and, having been originally erected by emigrants from Holland, it has the appearance of a city of the old continent. As we wished to proceed directly on our journey to the province of Pennsylvania, where my guardian meant I should reside a few years at the University of Philadelphia, to perfect myself in mathematics and some of the higher branches of education, I communicated our intention to my friend Tom, requesting him to follow his own inclination, either to accompany us, or to remain in New York. I added, that, wherever he should take up his abode, it would be my guardian's care to keep him supplied with money for his expenses. "This," said

I, "he does not consider as a charge; on the contrary: but, as we are in a country where every one appears to be busy about something or other, he recommends you to choose a profession and to pursue it. It will amuse you at least, and at length, perhaps, become profitable, whilst it will recommend you to your adopted countrymen, who seem all men of industrious habits and money-making dispositions."

He made a thousand acknowledgments for the kindness and benefits he had received at our hands, and said he found my guardian's advice excellent, besides that it exactly corresponded with the plans he had laid down for himself.

"My father," continued he, "when I was a lad, made me study the laws of Great Britain; and, had he not been reduced in his resources, I should have been sent to London to complete my studies: but his misfortunes prevented him from executing his design. The jurisprudence of this country has been almost literally copied from ours; and, on enquiry, I have found, that, with a couple of years' close study, I can prepare myself sufficiently to be admitted a pleader at the bar. In the meantime, as I have no means of subsistence, I must still have recourse to your bounty; and if your good and respectable guardian will permit me to remain here, I should prefer it, although I feel distressed to be separated from two

persons who have overwhelmed me with their goodness and generosity.'

"But," said I, "if it grieves you to part, why not accompany us?"

"At present," said he, "through the goodness of God, and the friendly — I ought to say, fatherly — care of your guardian and yourself, I have conquered my despondency; my mind feels at ease; my conscience no longer tortured by the excruciating reflections which formerly tormented me without cessation. I am, therefore, anxious to avoid the possibility of opening those wounds afresh which the balm of friendship and charity have so happily cicatrised. Farther south, I have been told by a countryman of ours, who has lived some years in America, and travelled through several provinces, there are a great many emigrants from my country. I am therefore fearful, as I am very well known at home, that some of these lads may recognize me; and to be discovered and questioned as to the cause of my coming here would, I am very sure, have the effect to harrow up my soul, and torture me again beyond my feeble power of resistance. Your guardian then will, I am satisfied, agree with me in thinking I had better not expose myself to this trial."

I was really sorry to part with him, but I also felt rejoiced that he had made his own choice, and that we could now provide for him without making him feel his obligations too heavily.

Indeed we laboured, from the first, to be as delicate as possible on this subject, and had the satisfaction to perceive our friend Tom knew how to appreciate our motives. All these matters being settled to his satisfaction, we put him in the way of prosecuting his design without the fear of interruption, and then, packing up our baggage, took our seats in the stage coach, and bade adieu to our friend Tom and the hospitable inhabitants of New York.

After proceeding a few miles, we came to a ferry, which we crossed to a place called Powlis Hook, and we were then in another province, named New Jersey; a country, one half of which consists of a flat, sandy soil, covered with pine forests, or swamps and marshes, and stretching for many miles along the sea coast; whilst the other half is mountainous, intersected with rivers, and extremely fertile. Many of the hills are composed of a sort of soft red and black slate, that crumbles between the fingers, but which, when cultivated, bears uncommonly fine wheat. The red is most esteemed. We also remarked some fields where the ground seemed almost hid by the quantity of small flat stones which lay upon it, yet we were told that it produced fine crops of grain, and particularly in dry seasons, when other parts, less stony, were parched and injured by the drought. Agriculture appeared to be much more carelessly pursued than in Ireland, owing, no doubt, to the richness of the soil and the dearness

of labour in a new country. However, in most parts we saw no want of industry. The great fault was, that the farmers undertook more than the numerical strength of their families and dependants was able to manage well, and, consequently the whole had the appearance of a negligent cultivation.

The morning after we left New York, as my guardian and myself were remarking a decent-looking farm-house, about two hundred yards off the road, and expressing a wish that we had time to take a peep at the economy of the interior, suddenly one of the fore wheels of the stage coach broke down with a terrible crash, and almost threw us out into the road. Fortunately the driver was strong and active, and contrived to check his horses immediately, so that we escaped with no other harm than a severe fright. The driver now told us he must return back two miles, to a blacksmith's shop, to get the stage coach repaired; 'where, gentlemen,' said he, 'any of you who wish to breakfast may stop to eat, or else remain in the road until I get the coach mended, and return to you.' Most of the passengers returned with the coach; but we said we should repair to the farm-house, then in sight, and would take care to watch his return. Accordingly, we lost no time in making our way across the fields, following paths through grain and luxuriant clover, and at length through an orchard well stocked with apples, pears, and peaches. We

then came into a little by-road that brought us up to the door of the dwelling. On looking in we saw some women bustling about, apparently very busy in preparing breakfast; so much so, that we went into the room and stood for some seconds before they noticed us. Suddenly, the younger of the party, who we discovered was the mistress, exclaimed —

"By jingo, Barbara, but here's two strangers!"

Then, turning to us, she said, — "What may you chance to want, good people? This is no tavern — we don't accommodate travellers."

"" We know that, good woman," replied my guardian; "but the stage coach broke down here, and whilst the driver is gone two miles back to get it repaired, we thought you would not refuse us a breakfast: we will pay for the same, and thank you for your kindness besides."

She smiled, and replied, that her husband would soon be home, as they were just going to blow the *conch** for breakfast, and if he consented, she would have no objection. Another woman put her head out of the back door, and called aloud, —

"Bill! Bill! blow the conch! It's eight o'clock, and the breakfast is ready."

* A large shell, found on the southern coasts of America and of the Antilles. When perforated, it produces a sound like that of a huntsman's horn, only louder and more sonorous.

A lad of about fourteen, who looked wildly at us as he passed by, bolted into the room, took down the conch from a shelf over the fire-place, and going outside the door, gave three or four blasts so loud, that they could not fail to be heard for three miles round. In a quarter of an hour after, we saw the man of the house and five other sturdy peasants coming slowly home. The women were busy baking what are called buck-wheat cakes, of which they had prepared a good pile; and on the breakfast table we saw a large pan of milk, a piece of cold salt pork, and a loaf of rye-bread. To these were added a plate of honey in the comb; and, thought I, if this be the usual breakfast of the peasants of America, I don't wonder that my poor starving countrymen should emigrate in such numbers to this fertile and plentiful country.

When the table was ready, "You see," said the woman, "our fare is simple; though, thank God we always give our workmen plenty to eat an drink."

Whilst we were talking, the husband entere with the labourers; his wife spoke to him aside; after which, addressing himself to us, he said, in a rough tone, —

"Why, look ye, masters, we don't keep tavern; but since you've met with an accident, if you like our fare, you're welcome to eat with us."

We thanked him and took our places with him and his labourers, who were seated on two benches which

were placed on either side of a long narrow table. In the centre was a large pile of buck-wheat cakes, and a pan of skimmed milk, from which every one helped himself, whilst the man of the house cut a large slice of salt pork, that was very fat, for each of the men, and would have done the same for us, but we refused, saying, we never eat meat for breakfast, and should be perfectly well satisfied with his milk, honey, and buck-wheat cakes.

"Oh!" said he, "it's easy to see, that you're not working people, or you would be glad to take a good slice of salt pork. Wife, put the honey nearer to them? It is last year's honey, but it is good notwithstanding." We thanked him again, praised his fare highly, and I certainly never eat a heartier breakfast; for the buck-wheat cakes* were made *secundum artem;* and it being the first time of my life that I had tasted them, I was so much pleased, that I eat more than I should have done of any other food. As we were all well stimulated with hunger, of course the breakfast was not of long duration, and no sooner was it finished, than the host was preparing to return to the field again. My guardian hastened to thank him for his hospitality, and put a piece of money into his hand, the value of about two shillings and sixpence, which he took with a nod of consent, and an indifference, that I confess hurt my feelings; for he should either have refused payment altogether, or have re-

* A sort of pancake.

ceived it with decent civility. As we left the house, said I, "This fellow lives well, but he is an unmannerly boor, and took your liberal payment with a cold disdain that was quite insulting."

My guardian smiled, and replied,—

"Such is the custom of the vulgar people of this country, who know no better, and conceive their independence invaded, and their liberty attacked, should they stoop to the smallest act of politeness, because, forsooth, they are republicans; but they are ignorant of the real meaning of the term, and still more so of the right application of it to their political and moral existence. Now," continued he, "you have seen the house of one of the little farmers of this country, who works in the field with his labourers, and eats and drinks as they do; but the more wealthy cultivators live much better. They only superintend the business, having an overseer or head man, who lives with them, on annual wages, and whose duty it is to lead the hired labourers to their daily work, and take care that they perform their tasks faithfully; nor are they satisfied by being merely directed in what they are to do, he must be stout and active enough to show the way and the example, else he will not please them, nor will he be able to obtain from them all that they are capable of performing."

"How superior," said I, "is this man's lot to the peasant's of the same class in my unfortunate country! who, with not half his means, pays from

three to four hundred pounds per annum, and may be said to live with his cows and horses."

"Recollect," said my guardian, "that this is quite a new country, a virgin soil, rich, luxuriant, and, as yet, but thinly inhabited; whilst the government, the climate, the laws, customs, &c. all tend to promote the efforts of industry at the expense of every sentiment, feeling, and distinction, which divide the poor from the rich in other countries. The climate of your native island is good, the soil fertile, the people excellent in their habits and dispositions; but oppressive taxes, intolerance, tithes, continual absence of the landed proprietors, a scarcity of money, and a superabundance of population, together with subleasing and agency, all combine to paralise the industry and the efforts of the people of Ireland. Indeed, in richer, less peopled, and more plentiful countries, wherever the proprietor neglects his property or rarely visits it, and leaves the entire management to others, his revenues diminish, his peasants become dissatisfied, and the same complaints will be found to exist among them. The price of labour in America is so high, that the proprietor of land, unless he lives as the man with whom we have breakfasted, rarely obtains five per cent interest for his capital. If then he happens to be above eating, drinking, and working with his labourers, he must have some other fixed income to spend, or he would soon find himself on the list of bankrupts. The cost of tilling the ground is disproportioned to

ercise of your patience. In truth, they are not worth the resentment of a rational man."

We had now gained the high road again, and in about a quarter of an hour were overtaken by the stage coach, in which we resumed our seats. A couple of hours more brought us to a town, where we dined, and immediately after dinner travelled on again, until ten o'clock at night, when we stopped at a tavern to sup and sleep. Here with much difficulty we prevailed upon the landlord, after promising him double pay, to give us two beds, for my guardian and myself, but a separate room was out of the question. We were obliged to try to sleep in the same apartment with twelve other travellers, two in a bed, all of whom were such accomplished snorers, that if I had not been extremely fatigued, I should not have got a wink of sleep the whole night. At first I was much amused by the variety of tones in snoring: some of them might have been properly called snorters. This swinish concert at length became so intermixed and discordant, that it produced a sort of stunning hum, which confounded my senses, and with a leaden impulse weighed my eyelids down, and made me join the inharmonious chorus of those legitimate sons of Morpheus.

The morning was delightful, and after a couple of hours' ride, we arrived at a town named Trenton, the capital of the province of Jersey. The situation is beautifully romantic, near the cataracts of the great river Delaware, about thirty miles from

Philadelphia. This river is the boundary line between the province of Jersey and Pennsylvania for a considerable distance, and is navigable for vessels of two and three hundred tons burthen, within a few miles of Trenton. It abounds with fine fish of various sorts, but the sturgeon particularly is caught in great abundance at the cataracts, during the fishing season. From a window opposite to them we had a fine commanding view of those beautiful falls, with the rich and improved banks on the opposite side of the river, as we sat at breakfast, and which added greatly to the zest of some good coffee, cream, and buck-wheat cakes, with a piece of broiled fish, that composed our repast. After breakfast we crossed the river, and continued our journey in the province of Pennsylvania, on the right bank of the river, where our eyes were regaled with rich fields of rye, wheat, barley, and clover, in full luxuriance, waving to the breeze, and heaving in swells like the bosom of the ocean. Occasionally we saw large forests of tall oaks, hiccory, maple, beech, elms, limes, and chestnuts. Then again, fine views of the river and country seats, and farm-houses, with large orchards of apples, pears, peaches, plums, and cherries. The latter were just then ripe, and in the utmost profusion. In a short ride of ten miles, to get to Bristol, I confess I never had my eyes more charmed than with the romantic sites and luxurious productions of nature which there presented themselves. As we had no particular reasons for hur-

rying away from Bristol, which is only twenty miles from the city of Philadelphia, and hearing the host say that there was to be an election held there the next day, I prevailed upon my guardian to stop until it was over. The tavern was situated upon a high bank of the river, and from a balcony that commanded it we had a superb view of the stream for many miles up and down, and of the town of Burlington on the opposite bank, where two large brigs, some schooners, sloops, and smaller craft, lay at anchor. Various sorts of small barks and ferry-boats were seen plying on the surface, and presenting altogether a scene of industry and activity extremely interesting. At this place the river Delaware is near two miles in breadth, and a little higher than the town there is a large island in the centre of it, part of which appeared cultivated, and well covered with trees of a fine growth, amongst which the tulip poplar spread its lofty branches above the rest, and rendered the scene truly picturesque. Observing our landlord bustling about, and apparently very anxiously engaged in getting every thing ready for the election which was to commence on the morrow, and that prodigious loads of provisions of all sorts were carried towards the kitchen, we stopped him, to inquire who were to be the consumers of such quantities of food in two days.

"Oh!" said he smiling, "you will see to-morrow what a concourse of people there will be here, to vote for the members of the state legislature.

However, between you and I," added he, "it's all the same to me, for you must know one of the candidates for whom I'm to vote myself, has hired my house for the reception of his particular friends, and I shall not *serve* a glass of grog to any one who don't vote for him. Besides, he has ordered me to furnish to the value of five hundred dollars'* worth of liquors to his friends at his expense. There's many a poor fellow, you know, that would like to drink a glass of grog and can't pay for it, and he ought not to leave his work and come here and vote for nothing. I'll tell you a secret too; our adversaries do the same, to entice voters; so its no more than *tit for tat.* But my friend is rich, and a man of influence in this county, which alone brings me good custom, for to tell you the truth, these here country blades are darned tight fellows! they'll drink grog with both candidates, and if you don't look sharp after them, they'll get drunk and forget for whom they are to vote. Others, after taking the first glass, will cry out, 'Darn my old stockings if this does'nt smell of home-made' (alluding to the smell of the rum); 'come, let's go yonder; there we shall get some of the *real stuff!*' So you see, we can't always count upon these here cunning buckskins."

"As strangers," said I, "I hope we shall not be considered intruders if we remain to witness your election?"

* About 100*l.* sterling.

"Oh no," replied he, smiling, "only you must look out for yourselves, and take a bite as you can; for all my folks will be over head and ears, and there will be such a hurly-burly all day, I'll be darn'd if I don't think you'll find yourselves in a bit of a fluster."

"Never mind," said my guardian, "we can provide for ourselves, and we shall not interfere with any one; all we want is to satisfy our curiosity."

"No! no!" answered the host, "I don't mean that either! We shall provide for you, never fear: there will be plenty to eat and drink, do you mind me? only you must not expect a separate room and separate attendance."

Just as he said this, up stepped his daughter, a pert girl of about fifteen years of age, with a very pretty, but an impudent face, and said,—

"Lord, father! what a fuss you make about nothing, as if these here gentlemen from the old countries never see'd an election! — Why! I'll take care of them myself." Then turning to me, said she, "Sir, you've only to ask me for what you may want, for father to-morrow will be all mops and brooms with his voters, and not know a glass of grog from a mint julep.*"

"Why, Peg, you saucy jade," cried the father, "did you ever see me drunk?"

* Fresh mint pounded and the juice mixed with rum and sugar.

"No, father," said she, winking her eye, "but I've seen you boozey and foggy enough."

"Well, you're a saucy minx," replied the father; "I shall never get any good of you, you're such a queer jade, so take your own way. Now misters," continued he, addressing us, "Peg will take care of you, for she likes to be dangling about the men."

"Not more than you do about the women, father," answered the precious damsel with a sly glance of her eye; "but I likes these old-country folks; they're a thousand times nicer men than ours."

"And we shall be very happy, madam," said I, "to be under such a pretty protectress."

This compliment drew another arch smile upon me, as she answered, "Thank you, mister; but come, now let me show you where the dinner is ready; and mother waits for you to come to table."

Saying this, she darted forward through a long corridor, beckoning to us to follow her. We obeyed the summons, and soon found ourselves in a room where the hostess and several more males and females had just seated themselves at the table; but there were two places left vacant for us, which we immediately occupied.

During the whole time of dinner, the conversation ran upon the election, which raised a warm dispute between two of the guests, with whose eccentricities I was much amused. They grew

exceedingly violent, but more about the men than their measures. Each, instead of praising the good deeds of his own friend, arraigned the conduct of his opponent: they told all the scandalous anecdotes they could recollect, and at last got so warm, that had not the landlord interfered by taking the side of one of them, they would most probably have illustrated the *argumentum ad hominem* by a game at fisty cuffs. Had I not been assured, on inquiry of Miss Peg, that they were two respectable farmers, the language they used, and the disgraceful stories they related of the candidates, would have led me to imagine them the vilest of their species; and the intended candidates such immoral, shocking characters, as were totally unfit for being members of any good private society, much less representatives of the people in the state legislature.

I expressed this sentiment to Miss Peg, who seemed a kind-hearted clever sort of girl, and from whom I had received a good deal of attention.

She replied, "By Jenkins, mister, you're more than half right; but do you see these here fellows are like two mad bulls fighting for a cow; there's a widow in the business, mister," she added, in an under-voice. "Both these here ugly bears want to marry our neighbour Warner, who has a nice farm of her own which her husband left her, and she has no children; so you see, mister, it's the widow and not the election that makes the two dogs fight."

I laughed, and said, "But the widow, I presume, has the casting voice in this affair; which of the two heroes is to be the happy man?"

She stared at me, and I repeated, "Which of them does she like best?"

"Oh! now I understand; but at first I did not know what you meant. Why to say the truth, mister," said she, sneering, and looking with great contempt at the disputants, "the widow thinks as I do, that neither one of them is worth a rotten apple; and she has a nice young fellow in her eye, who's worth a dozen such hogs as these."

By this time the landlord had calmed the fury of the competitors, and after eating heartily of fried chickens, ham, and delicious pumpkin pie, we all rose from table in good-humour again; and the young lady who had seated herself by me at dinner, now went away in haste to attend to her domestic concerns, not without giving me a significant glance to show she should not have been sorry to remain.

CHAPTER V.

The morning of the election having arrived, scarcely had Phœbus decorated with his resplendent beams the glossy surface and fertile banks of the Delaware, when a noise and bustle was heard on all sides. As my host had anticipated, his house became completely filled; but the dress and manners of the candidates, as well as of the voters, were all so coarse and so much alike, it was difficult to distinguish the gentleman *farmer* from the gentleman *clown*. The vulgarity and inquisitiveness of many who, on discovering we were strangers, put a multitude of absurd, impertinent questions to us, might have exasperated me and brought on a quarrel, had I not been forewarned by my guardian of their republican politeness; "at which," said he, "the best way is never to appear offended, but to answer coolly and kindly." This demeanour in some degree produced the desired effect. Seeing I was not to be browbeaten, though still intrusively familiar, they grew more civil, and began to discuss the probable issue of the election, and their reasons for voting for one candidate in preference to the other. Their reasoning, however, was so interlarded with local allusions and provincial phraseology, that I could hardly

appearance, who had been listening to some of my inquiries, now addressed me: —

"Sir!" said he, "I perceive you are a stranger, and if you will take a seat in the porch, I will endeavour to satisfy your curiosity."

I thanked him, and immediately accepted his invitation; then calling for a couple of glasses of punch, we seated ourselves where we were a little removed from the bustle, but at the same time near enough to see all that passed. He told me, he was himself a member of the state legislature, and had been so for several years. "Our government," continued he, "is completely elective; the people elect the members of the state legislature, we choose the members of congress, and the congress elects the president. At an early period, I embraced the democratic side of the question, in opposition to the federalists, as they are styled. This attachment to the cause of the people, for I have always voted against the aristocratic measures of the other party, has kept me in place from the time of my first entering upon a political career. I have been practising the law, and might have gained more if I had left politics alone; but, once attached to a party, I was hurried away by my democratic friends, and have continued, although I now confess I have not been altogether pleased with their conduct. Men in power, and men out of power, seem altogether of a different species."

"Yet," said I, "those men whom you term aristocrats, are citizens and republicans like your-

self. Are they deficient in talents and patriotism, or have they endeavoured to innovate upon the constitution?"

"Oh! no," said he; "if there has been any innovation, it has been made by my party, to counteract the tendency to aristocracy; and, to tell you the truth, the federalists have the advantage of us both in education and talents; but they have been too proud and overbearing for a free country, so that I may safely declare, it was more the men than their measures which we at first opposed. Then, with the egotism and presumption that, I cannot help saying, belongs to our principles, we have advanced much farther than prudence and wisdom can sanction. Some years back, the gross ignorance and vulgarity of some of our popular members of the state legislature were truly ridiculous. Not long after I became a member of the assembly, it was proposed in the house to make some alterations in the law of trespass, as it regarded the encroachments and depredations committed by horses, horned cattle, and hogs, upon a neighbour's land. Some of the members said, there ought to be a particular clause concerning hogs, as being very destructive animals; and farmers ought to be obliged to yoke them, besides keeping them in pens or enclosures, so as to prevent their despoiling the grain, &c. Upon this, a solemn-looking old farmer got up and said,—'Mister Speaker, talking about hogs, puts me in mind of myself; I knows nothing about *trespis*, but this

I knows, that I was born and bred up amongst hogs, and I knows more about them than any other member of this house, and hopes I shall be put upon the hog committee.' The Speaker replied, that he was sure no member would attempt to dispute the *scitiish* knowledge of the gentleman who had just spoken, and ordered his name to be inserted immediately.'"

This anecdote made me laugh heartily, and I expressed my doubts that any man could be so stupid; but he assured me it was a fact, and that he was present when the speech was made. "We have still," added he, "some very vulgar, uncouth men in the legislature; but none so ignorant as to commit themselves in a similar manner."

Our attention was now roused by one of the candidates, who was going to harangue the people from the hustings; and we drew near to listen to him. He began moderately enough, and though he spoke of himself with no lack of modesty, yet he was eloquent on the subject of the liberty and rights of the people, and if he had gone no farther, would have made an excellent speech. However, the frenzy of democracy came over him, and he launched out in violent invectives against his opponents, abusing not only their political principles in the grossest language, but also their private characters and conduct. This last part, however, pleased the mob, for they cheered him heartily.

He had scarcely done speaking, when Samuel with his waggon full of drunken clowns arrived

full gallop at the hustings. The tavern-keeper came running up immediately, exclaiming, —

"Well! tarnation seize my body, Samuel, if you an't a buckskin every inch of you; and now hurra for the major! he'll gain the day in spite of old Nick and the colonel."

It was with difficulty, however, that they got the whole of this respectable reinforcement out of the waggon and up to the hustings; and if captain Biggs himself had not accompanied them on horseback, half at least would have been enticed away to the tavern of their opponent. One or two were kept back with difficulty, for they ranted and swore that the best rum in the state was sold there.

After much intrigue, drinking, fighting, haranguing, &c., the poll was closed in favour of our landlord's friend, who became so overjoyed, that in less than half an hour afterwards he was as drunk as a man could be without falling, though, as Jack would say, "he made traverse sailing with a fair wind," and reel'd to and fro, so that Miss Peg was obliged to take the command, and put him to bed.

The numerous guests now began to decrease very fast: most of them being "how come you so," they were glad to be off whilst their limbs were yet able to support them in an upright position.

One room, however, where the principal heroes of the hustings were assembled, and fortunately, the most distant from where we slept,

seem'd (to speak metaphorically) *a little hell upon earth.* Roaring, singing, fighting, screaming, &c. all combined to make a confused and horrible uproar, and my fair Hebe hinted to me, she thought the party would remain all night, for the greater part of them were unable to stand, and several could not sit, so that near one half had fallen on the floor from their chairs, and lay grunting like so many hogs.

Altogether, this pure republican election exceeded one of our fairs for drunkenness and vulgarity; even at an election in Ireland, I had never seen any thing half so riotous and abominable.

My guardian being now seated quietly with me in the corner of a large room, observed, —

"Well, Walter, I need hardly ask your opinion of the scene that has been presented to your eyes to-day; I read your opinion in your features."

"Yes," said I, "my disapprobation must have been strongly marked there, and my surprise not less; for in this land of liberty, independence, and morality, I thought to have found more virtue, not imagining that vices could have so soon crept into a new-born republic."

"Recollect," said he, "what I told you before, that amongst the number of good religious people who emigrated from Great Britain to colonise this country, there were also vicious characters, who imported their immoral habits, and propagated them likewise. These heroes of the democratic school are never satisfied until they throw off all

which Miss Peg invited us to partake, by observing, with a smile,—

"Misters, you must take care of yourselves, for these here country fellows never think of sarving any one with a morsel, unless they're axed for it."

"None of your airs, Peg," said a clownish looking young man on her right, who appeared a little tipsy; "we arn't ignorant of your seed and breed, and that you know as much about politeness, as mother Snave's old cow. Misters," addressing himself to us; "she's a pert one, and you must n't mind what she says about her betters."

"You've more grog than brains in your pumpkin head," replied she, "and if you're saucy, I'll tell father to-morrow, and he'll pay you off for your impudence."

"Yes!" said the mother, reddening with indignation, "it don't become such young milksops as you, who can't pay your reckoning, to be saucy; so if I hear any more I'll send your bill to the Squire to-morrow morning."

"Lord have mercy upon me! since the old hen begins to peck," cried the young fellow. "Come, mother," added he, "don't get angry; I was only in fun; I shan't meddle with Peg again."

We were happy when the supper was finished, when we immediately retired to rest; and the next morning early, bidding adieu to our good host and his pretty daughter, we crossed the river in a ferry-boat to Burlington, where after breakfast we continued our passage in the packet bound to Phil-

found his wife and several of the boarders; almost all of whom, being old acquaintances, greeted my guardian cordially. After a few weeks' residence, I became familiar with many of the richest and most distinguished families of Philadelphia. I was truly astonished to find, amongst the higher classes, all the refinement and luxury of my own country; and could scarcely believe that such elegant and polished manners could possibly have found existence in a new-made republic. My guardian's reasoning on its aristocratic principles, and the power of wealth, was now exhibited in its fullest extent. They proved to me, that man, in order to become a civilised, rational, industrious, moral being, requires an energetic government, where his person is protected, and his property possesses due influence; where religion is respected, and where the political dogmas by which he is governed are the result of the experience of ages, and not the new fangled doctrines of ideal liberty and equality; where not only the dependence between the different classes of society, but even that which every mortal ought to have upon his Creator, are forgotten and despised. How is it possible, thought I, to equalise power, talents, and riches? What a phantom, then, has the spirit of democracy raised to deceive and destroy the human species! I sighed inwardly at the misery and oppression of my own countrymen; yet, thought I, if only a few among existing abuses were reformed, they

would also be happy under a solid government, nor be liable to the shocks and changes which local interests and other hidden causes must eventually produce in this widely-extended republic. Indeed, the rich seemed already in possession of all that proud distinction which elevates the high-titled nobility of other countries; and which, in America, has excited the animosity of the democratic party, who, being poorer and worse educated, wish to level all to their own standard. What is there styled the *first society*, includes the richest; though I must, in truth, add, *not always* the best educated: but, generally speaking, they keep themselves aloof from the other orders, more proudly and disdainfully than our nobility.

"My next essay was amongst the plainest class, named by the others Quakers; but they call themselves Friends. The appellation Quaker is given them by other sects, and alludes to their religious tenets. Indeed, in the united provinces of America there is no state religion, consequently the number of sects tolerated there are countless. The most rigid are those which inhabit the northern states: they were almost the first settlers, and the first to resist the imposts and other claims of the mother country, which commenced the revolution; and, by their great industry and commercial enterprise, for a long time after their independence, they bore away the palm from the rest of their compatriots.

"A severer climate, a more stubborn soil, and a more numerous population, obliged them to exert themselves to obtain from nature what the genial seasons of the south yielded almost spontaneously. Those northern men, partaking of the nature of their climate, hardy and enterprising, have become sailors, fishermen, or soldiers; and their surplus population emigrate to the west, to people immense tracts of fertile land, that have hitherto only been inhabited by the wild beasts of the forests.

"See," continued my guardian, "how wisely God has implanted in man a disposition to explore new countries, and cultivate and improve what was created for his use! Wherever he chooses to fix himself, nature yields to his industrious efforts, and moulds all things to his wishes.

"The Americans certainly fought bravely, and with great perseverance; but the English generals neglected their duty at first, and gave the enemy time to collect his forces. However, if the mother country had known her real interests, she ought never to have opposed their independence; for there is no doubt that she has reaped ten times more benefit from America as an independent nation than she ever would have done as a colony.

"In the infancy of the republic, having no manufactures of their own, they took almost all that they stood in need of from Great Britain: but this could not continue; for as the country be-

comes thickly populated, and possesses extensive manufactures of her own, the importation of goods which they make themselves must, of course, cease. Yet you will find there is a natural and mutual dependence, that will keep alive an active commerce of exchange; for the Americans are shrewd calculators, and they will not be so stupid as to attempt to make themselves what they can purchase at a cheaper rate. Although there was a good deal of rancour between them and Great Britain at first, it at length gave way before their mutual interests, and a brisk commerce has always existed between the two nations. Nothing is more natural for people, whose habits, manners, religion, and form of government bear a strong resemblance to each other, than to be united in the bonds of friendship and trade, especially when interest is joined to the causes I have already enumerated. Their dispute was like a family dissension, that, once ended, they might have become more firmly united than before; but political writers on either side have, by their malice and envy, endeavoured to keep alive the former animosities, and produce another war.

"I came to this country," continued my guardian, "for the first time, a very young man, being engaged in making a survey of the coast. During my stay, I travelled through the Irish, German, and Dutch settlements, or colonies, and found the first-mentioned nation always on the advance, for they may be styled the pioneers of

the province of Pennsylvania. They attack the wildest and most uncultivated parts of the country; but, as soon as the industrious, sober, economical, and, I may add, niggardly, Dutchman settles near, he invariably buys them out, profiting by their first efforts to facilitate his own settlement; whilst the Irishman continues to advance into the forests, as if flying from a pestilence. If perchance they should remain neighbours for any length of time, they are sure to quarrel: however, the Dutch, in general, are afraid of them, well knowing their superiority when it comes to fighting. An Irishman once told me a ridiculous anecdote, that is only worth relating in order to show the character of the men who endeavour to get rid of the Irish by purchasing their lands.

"A friendly connection once subsisted between two settlers of these nations, who were near neighbours. The Irishman, being more economical than his countrymen generally are, had added a fine large stock of cattle and horses to his other possessions: of the latter he was a great breeder and a keen judge, and had always a number for sale; so that the Dutchman found his account in being on good terms with him. His neighbour, however, understood his character well, and determined to repay his interested motives at the first convenient opportunity. One day the Dutchman came in great haste to purchase a horse, saying he should leave the choice of the animal to his friend.

"'Oh, no,' replied the Irishman, 'I cannot choose for you; it is enough that I declare my cattle sound in wind and limb. To pick out a horse to suit another man's taste, would be like choosing a wife for him; therefore select for yourself. But the money must be paid the moment he leaves the stable: such is my fixed rule.'

"The Dutchman then examined several horses with great care, and at length took what he conceived to be the best in the stud. On returning home, he despatched his waggoner to Lancaster, the capital town of the district, to sell his old horse, and the next morning set off himself to visit a friend, in order to dispose of his new acquisition at a profit, and, on his return, to buy another; for the Irishman's house was on the road, about half-way between him and his friend. But what pleased him most, was the idea of making a good profit; and, thought he, I will stop at the Irishman's house to breakfast — this will be a saving; and, just about dinner time, I shall arrive at my friend's. 'No tavern expenses to-day!' said he to his wife on starting; and the horse having snorted at the same time, 'Oh!' he exclaimed, 'what a good sign! I feel the dollars already jingling in my pocket.'

"Off he set full of his scheme, and chuckling at the prospect of great gain; but when he got within about two hundred yards of the Irishman's house, his horse all of a sudden began to stagger from one side of the road to the other, shaking as

if he had been seized with the ague, and at last dropped down dead in the middle of the road. The Dutchman's surprise and grief were excessive, but there was no remedy; he had himself chosen the animal: his neighbour even reduced the price to please him. It was, to all appearance, the best in the stable; and, more than all, the money was paid for him: cruel reflection! What was to be done? He dried his tears, and said, 'But I'm not to lose my breakfast, nor will I lose the hide: I'll e'en request the Irishman to come and help me skin him.'

"Having examined the horse again, and satisfied himself that he was really as dead as a stone, the Dutchman hastened to his neighbour's house, and related to him his dreadful misfortune. The other appeared greatly astonished, and said he was very sorry, but that no blame could be attached to him. He treated him to a good breakfast, and offered to lend him a nag to continue his journey. The other refused, saying, 'I shall not ride farther to-day, after such a misfortune: but come, as you are friendly inclined, assist me to skin the carcase; you know the hide is valuable.'

"The man consented, and away they went together to the dead horse. Being both expert with their knives, they soon accomplished three fourths of the task: one only of the hind legs remained, which the Hollander flayed from the hoof upwards, and then told his companion to

gant and improvident. An Irishman will gain and spend three fortunes whilst a Dutchman is economising one; but this he preserves, and, though overflowing with riches, never changes his manner of living. Content with his sour cabbage, and a glass of rye brandy, he stews himself in a small hut, warmed with iron-plate stoves, whilst his cattle and horses live in fine airy stables, and his barn, built of stone, is like a castle.

"The Germans are another people who have also emigrated in considerable numbers, and settled in this province. They may be characterised as pursuing a medium line of conduct between the two nations just mentioned — rather leaning to the side of economy. They are better educated, but not so active and enterprising as they are solid, sober, steady, moral, and industrious; and may be said truly to be the most valuable colonists of this fertile country. Not content with working the land in the ordinary manner, they seek, if it be productive, to preserve its good qualities; and, if poor, to enrich it and improve all its capabilities. Other settlers, finding a rich virgin soil, imagine it inexhaustible, and continue to work it for a series of years, without rest or manure, until it becomes at length quite impoverished and unproductive. The German builds himself a commodious stone dwelling, that conveys to your mind at once an idea of solidity, with a fine large barn and outhouses, all kept in

decent order and good repair. Then his healthy-looking wife, stout and rosy-faced children, sleek cattle, a large and superior breed of horses, flocks of sheep, herds of swine, and poultry of all sorts in abundance, impress the beholder with ideas of industry, probity, peace, and plenty.

"There are, perhaps, some of the Americans who can vie with them; yet, generally speaking, the Germans manage their affairs with better capacity, order, and regularity than any other class of agriculturists in America. But enough of this for the present; you shall see the proofs hereafter. Now, I perceive, you look drowsy: it is late; let us retire to rest, and at a more convenient time I shall renew the subject."

Some time after our arrival in Philadelphia, on returning to my lodgings one morning, I found my guardian with a packet of letters before him.

"Here," said he, "are several letters from Ireland: the one that has proved the most interesting, although addressed to you, I took the liberty to open. The elder brother of your cousin Donnovan is dead, and his estate goes to his brother, who has been long settled in America, whom we must now seek out in the western country. By these letters I find the secret of his residence is known only to my old friend Fisher, whom he made his agent when he was at this city. Donnovan is a noble fellow; and I am sure the news of the emancipation of the Catholics will afford him more pleasure than the inherit-

ance of a large fortune. I have another letter for you, bearing the New York post-mark, from our friend poor Tom Bryan, who is married to a lovely, rich, and accomplished woman; and there is little doubt that, in a few years more, he will arrive at wealth and distinction by his practice at the American bar."

On opening it, I read as follows: —

New York, 10th of April.

"My beloved and best friends,

"Indebted as I am to you, not only for life, but for every good that has been heaped upon me since I first knew you, I should be indeed ungrateful were I to delay any longer the communication of the happiness I now enjoy. I have before detailed the causes that led to my passion for the lovely Henrietta, and which I laboured in vain to suppress: indeed, I went so far as to affect the coldest indifference in her presence. This struggle lasted for some months, until I found it not only affected my health and spirits, but unfitted me altogether for business. I saw, with grief, that Henrietta's spirits were also depressed: she lost her gaiety as well as her appetite; and her parents began to be greatly alarmed, for a sort of fixed melancholy seemed to prey upon her heart. One day, whether by accident or design I know not, we were left alone in the saloon, about half an hour before dinner. Henrietta stood gazing through a window that

fronted the flower-garden, and I was seated not far from her. She appeared to be unconscious we were alone: a tear trickled down her cheek and fell upon her hand; her bosom was agitated; and, raising her eyes to heaven, she sighed deeply.

"Immediately I felt a sudden emotion of pity, intermingled with love, which quite overpowered me. I attempted to rise from my chair, but my agitation was so great, and my heart palpitated so violently, that I was unable to move or utter a syllable. Nor can I remember how long this paroxysm lasted; but when I recovered my self-possession, and looked towards the window, I saw the lovely but melancholy Henrietta immoveably fixed in the same position. The tear glittered upon the back of her fair and delicate hand, that still rested upon the window. My feelings now became irrepressible: rising from my chair, I moved towards her. The motion attracted her attention: she turned her face, and her pale cheek became at once suffused with blushes, while her melting blue eyes swam in tears. I took her hand, exclaiming, as I kissed the tear from it, 'Oh! lovely Henrietta! tell me, can you pardon a being who has apparently remained so long insensible to your merit and charms?'

"She was too much agitated to reply immediately; at length, with a look of angelic sweetness, and throwing herself upon my neck, she exclaimed, 'Ah! Mr. Bryan, I have loved you

from my childhood—from the first moment I saw you: my affections are yours alone!'

"I pressed her to my heart in ecstasy. She then told me her parents had that very morning proposed to marry her to the son of their friend and neighbour, but that she had refused; 'and now,' she continued, 'if you really love me, go immediately, tell them what has passed between us, and save me, oh! save me from being tortured to marry a man whom I despise!'

"In an instant I determined to seek out her father and mother; when they opened the door of the apartment, and entered it together. Taking the former aside, I explained to him the reason I had not before spoken of my attachment to his daughter, and was about to apologise for my conduct, when he said,—

"'Enough, Mr. Bryan; you have made me the happiest father alive. If there is a man in the world I should have preferred for a son-in-law, it is yourself.' He then led me to his wife, and told her what had happened; then seizing his daughter's hand, he put it into mine, exclaiming, 'There, receive her from me with my blessing; and may God crown your union with happiness and prosperity!'

"The poor mother, who is devoted to her daughter, was so affected, that she hung upon my neck, and bathed my cheek with her tears. Never were parents so happy as they appeared to be. The son was now sent for, who also shed tears of

joy as he shook my hand; for he is a most affectionate brother.

"Our transports were so great, that we scarcely ate any thing during the dinner; and, immediately after, the father and mother invited me to fix the day of our marriage. As you will readily conceive, I did so without hesitation, and we have since been indissolubly united.

"I take the earliest moment, after this excess of happiness, to relate my good fortune to my old friends and benefactors, and to assure them that no change of circumstances can ever make me forget what I owe them. My gratitude will only end with my existence. Write to me; and by your participation add another joyful sensation to those which now play around the heart of your faithful and devoted

"Tom Bryan."

CHAPTER VI.

On applying to Mr. Fisher for Donnovan's address, we learned that his estate was in the valley of Legonier, but in what part of it he could not inform us. "It is, however," said he, "a place of no great extent; and the inhabitants, being not very numerous, are known to each other for fifty miles round: consequently you will not find much difficulty in discovering his dwelling."

Having now obtained all the information he could afford us, we thanked him and retired.

"As I have been in the western part of this province before," said my guardian, "I gathered sufficient from what we have just heard to enable me to discover your cousin's residence; but, as I wish you to surprise him, when we get to Carlisle I shall let you go ahead and find him out yourself. He has not seen you since you were a child, and cannot know you; the meeting, therefore, will appear quite accidental, and you may discover yourself to him, or not, according as you find him agreeable or the reverse."

This scheme pleased me exceedingly, and I retired to rest full of the pleasure I should derive from arriving at Donnovan's house like a perfect

stranger, and of afterwards making myself known as a relation.

We started the following morning on horseback; for my guardian chose to commence with this method of travelling, because, after making about one hundred and fifty miles, we should have been obliged to purchase horses, the roads being impracticable for any thing but rough waggons: besides, we travelled more leisurely than by the diligence, and had a better opportunity of examining the country and its inhabitants.

Our first day's journey was but a short one. On arriving at the small river which empties itself into the Delaware, a few miles below the city, my guardian stopped, and we spent some hours in walking along its banks and admiring the beauties of the different farms and gentlemen's seats of the neighbourhood.

The next morning we made some miles before breakfast; when, feeling my appetite sharpened by the morning air, we determined to stop at a small and neat tavern by the road side. On entering, we found the interior corresponded with its promising aspect from without: every thing appeared very clean, and in good order; the tables and chairs were of pine, the latter rush-bottomed; but all were scoured white as milk, and the floors were well sanded. Our host told us there was a cold roast turkey, bacon and eggs fried, good cheese, and fresh butter, very much at our service. In a few minutes the table was

spread with this tempting fare, by a neatly-dressed young girl about eighteen or nineteen years of age; who, as soon as we were seated, asked many questions, as to where we came from, who we were, where we were going, our reasons for travelling, &c. &c.; which we of course answered, or not, as best suited our convenience. This frankness did not offend her, but, on the contrary,—

"Mister," said she, "I hope you don't mind my freedom of speech. It is not every day that rich folks stop at our little tavern; and we like to know who they are, and all about them."

She now poured out tea for us. After handing me a cup, I observed to her, it was then my turn to ask questions.

"How comes it," said I, "that a pretty girl like you is not married? for in this country early marriages are very common, particularly when there is beauty to attract lovers."

"As for lovers," said she, "there is no want of them; but good ones, who think seriously of matrimony, are scarce. I have one, and ought to have been married to him long since; but my father won't consent to part with me from the tavern: and my sweetheart, who has a nice little farm of his own, won't agree to keep tavern, or to let me live in one."

"What," I enquired, "are your lover's objections to a calling which, in this country, is thought respectable? for I have seen many

"You astonish me!" I replied. "Every one says there is neither bribery or corruption in the United States."

"They may say what they like," said she, warmly; "but I know better. Before an election, when my father wants to procure votes, he must treat certain folks handsomely, or he will be left in the lurch. Many come and drink at his house who would look black as ink if their bills were handed to them; but it is understood they must exert themselves at the proper moment. My father's wine, brandy, rum, and sugar, which these folks use, were not bought without money—good hard dollars."

The tavern keeper's daughter, who had now got her blood a little up, related several curious anecdotes about electioneering tricks, bribery, &c., that amused us exceedingly, and sufficiently proved that the Americans are as corrupt in practice as other nations, who talk less about political virtue. Above all, I was shocked at their love of money; and I said to my guardian, when we left the tavern, how much it was to be lamented that such interested views should have crept into the minds of people who ought only to think of living in contentment, peace, and love."

"Alas!" replied he, "man is the same in every clime! His passions always lead him beyond the bounds of prudence and moderation, making him neglect real solid enjoyments for the hope of something better in a higher sphere of life; and

which, constantly evading his pursuit, urges him on, until disappointment and death close his mortal and inglorious career. He is short-lived, and has but few real wants; but his adventitious ones are incalculable, owing to the frailty of his nature. Not but that he has within himself the counterpoise to this weakness: still he does not allow time for reflection. All the splendid pageants of ambition, glory, riches, and honours blaze in succession before his ardent imagination, and dazzle him with their gaudy trappings; whilst virtue, honour, truth, and justice, clothed in modest colours, are thrown into the back-ground, unable to keep the field against such fascinating antagonits; or, if they should gain the ascendancy, it is only momentary. Their russet plainness soon displeases; their monotony and steadiness produce ennui; their rigid formality and exactness quickly disgust; and they are then banished altogether, lest, like hideous spectres, they should rise to disturb the conscience, and cast a shade over the pompous baubles which amuse his vanity at the expense of his eternal welfare. Yet man, without ambition, would be a miserable being; but the great secret, my son, is, to know how to govern and regulate it, so as to make it subservient to honour and virtue."

Pursuing our journey slowly through a fine, rich country, inhabited principally by Dutch and Germans, we saw on all sides extensive meadows, rich pastures, and numerous herds of cattle, with

large fields of grain in full luxuriance, that kept us in continual admiration of the native resources of the soil, and the activity and industry of its inhabitants. Then, again, immense forests of the finest trees of every species covered the surface, in a manner that bore testimony to the richness of the earth from whence they sprang. In many uncultivated parts, white clover and blue grass clothed the earth with a thick coat of exuberant pasturage from the hand of nature. Stumps of enormous chestnut and other trees, to all appearance felled some eight or ten years previously, were visible at intervals, whose roots, except the main one, which defied the efforts of man, had been grubbed up or destroyed by fire.

We stopped purposely at the house of a German farmer that was two stories high, and built entirely of stone. The barn and outhouses were large, and built of the same materials. Here we found neatness, comfort, and convenience; every thing appeared in its place: even in the barn and outhouses, all the farming utensils were placed in rows, or hung upon wooden pegs; and we noticed a man, who had been working with a fork and a shovel, bring them on his shoulder, and deposit them in the precise spot allotted to them. My guardian complimented the owner on the appearance of his house, farm, cattle, horses, &c. &c.

The host smiled, and replied, "Habit and education are the causes which produce what you

guardian to alight there to see what sort of a being he was, who had built a hut for himself and a palace for his cattle.

On approaching the door, we discovered the host, a fat, slovenly, overgrown Dutchman, who scarcely deigned to reply, when we asked leave to stop and refresh ourselves. After regarding us with an air of contempt, he said,—

"Tish ish no tavern; an you vant to eat un drink, tir ish a tavern only fon mile off."

"Good man," replied my guardian, "don't be alarmed: if you furnish us with any thing, we have money to pay for it; but we do not so much desire to eat as to see your farm." This, however, was refused in a surly tone, until he understood we were strangers from Europe, desirous of being made acquainted with the mode of cultivation pursued in America.

"Oh, ten," said he, "you ish from Europe? Tat ish goot. Ten I shkall lat you zee all vat you vish for notings."

We now entered his dwelling, which was composed of large timbers, hewed flat, and laid one upon another, and which, in the language of the country, is called a log-house. It consisted of five rooms and a kitchen, all of them small; and, although kept in tolerably decent order, they were not to be compared, in point of neatness, with those we had seen the day previous. On entering, the host said to his wife,—

"Here, vife, are peples from Europe; can't give tem zumting to eat?"

The wife, who appeared a very tidy person, soon prepared a table, with milk, curds, bread, and butter; but we were not hungry, and refused to eat, begging the host to grātify first our curiosity by shewing us over his farm. Like the barn and outhouses, his cattle and horses were above the ordinary size; and, although we were pleased with what we saw, yet there was a great deficiency of order and regularity. Many implements lay carelessly about, where they had been thrown down, or left by the labourers, and none of the stables or other buildings were kept so clean and neat as those of the German. His fields, however, did not seem to have been neglected, and promised luxuriant crops of grain and grass. After a short excursion, we returned to the house, our host apparently much gratified by the encomiums we passed on his farming. He was a very fat and a very tall man withal. I made my guardian laugh by comparing him to the upper part of a whale; for his head was only divided from his shoulders by a roll of blubber instead of a neck. We left him much pleased with his visiters; and he said, as we rode off, "Goot py; an you shkal gom dish vay again, don't forget to gif me call."

We had now traversed a considerable portion of the richest part of the province of Pennsylvania, besides stopping several days in the large towns

of Lancaster, Carlisle, and Bedford. The inn in the first-mentioned place was large and well kept; and the German language in almost universal use. Indeed, the town altogether looked differently from those of America, and made us almost fancy ourselves in Europe again. At Carlisle we obtained the necessary intelligence concerning Donnovan, and found that his residence was at no great distance, in the beautiful vale of Legonier. This valley and its environs had been first colonised by emigrants from Ireland; but many Dutchmen, who came after them to settle on the adjoining lands, soon bought the Irishmen out; and when we arrived there, there were only two or three families of that nation remaining besides my cousin. At Carlisle we were received in the most kind and hospitable manner, and feasted with wild turkies, delicious venison, and the largest and most delicate-flavoured salmon trout I had ever tasted. We also found tolerably good wines; and, when I reflected that we were in a new country, 120 miles from the capital town, I could not help feeling surprised to find myself so well provided with almost every luxury in addition to the abundance of good things indigenous to the country. At this town there is an university, where, I was told, youth are extremely well taught, and that some of the professors came from Europe. The inhabitants were so truly hospitable, that we found it difficult to fix a day for our departure. At length, however, my

guardian went on ahead, promising to wait for me at a town beyond the valley, named Greensburg, and directed me to proceed alone to the residence of my cousin.

"He will certainly keep you ten or twelve days with him," said my guardian; "therefore do not spend any more time at this town than you can help, as I wish you to meet me at Greensburg before the army, which has preceded us but a few days, quit their camp in its neighbourhood."

The government of America had despatched a body of 2500 men, horse and foot, into the Western Country to quell the insurgents, who again refused to pay the tax upon whiskey. One of their oldest generals, a man distinguished for his patriotism, wisdom, and courage, headed the troops until they arrived at Carlisle, where we had the pleasure to see him review them; but, being at that time President of the republic, he there bade them adieu, and returned to the seat of government. I took such a liking to the cavalry, that I requested my guardian to get me admitted into a volunteer troop, in which I had before served during my residence in Philadelphia, and which gave me the right to ask to be attached to my old commander. He was an honest, worthy country gentleman, who had always treated me in a very friendly manner; and he immediately appointed me quarter-master to the regiment.

My guardian had managed the matter so that I was not expected to join the army until I had

paid a visit to my cousin, as the corps of cavalry was ordered to remain encamped a little beyond Ligonier valley, and was to pass through Greensburg, where he awaited me. From thence the troops proceeded to Washington, and afterwards to Fort Pitt, a town about 320 miles west of Philadelphia, at the confluence of the rivers Allegany and Monangahela, which, by their union, form the great stream of the Ohio.* The morning after receiving my appointment, I set out at the dawn of day, determining to make a late breakfast at a tavern not far from the skirts of Ligonier valley, so that I might arrive at the centre of it between four and five o'clock in the afternoon, and pass the night in comfort. It was a delightful day, in the month of September. The air was pure and elastic, and the sun rose with great splendour, tinging with a fringe of gold the rich and variegated foliage of a superb forest that skirted the road. Then, as he ascended towards the zenith, his vivifying beams spread far and wide, kindling all nature, and pouring an ardent flood of light upon the world, that seemed to smile responsive to his cheering rays. I marked those transitions as I rode slowly along, and could not help reflecting on the wonderful works of the creation, and how minute must be the particles of heat and light, and with what incomprehensible velocity they must travel from their great

* This river abounds with fish. A perch, as large as a full-grown cod, was once brought to me, which had been caught in its waters.

source, to be able to illumine our globe in a few seconds! Is it possible, thought I, that any human being can witness the rising of the sun without thinking of his Creator?

Whilst I was indulging in these reflections on the mysterious and inimitable works of God, and the millions of atoms which escape our eyes, suddenly I heard my name uttered in a tone of despair, as by some one in distress. Checking my horse, I turned him immediately; and, as the sound came from behind me, I drew one of my loaded pistols from the holster, cocked it, and then proceeded to examine into the cause of my alarm. My astonishment may be more easily conceived than described, when I beheld my servant with his face distorted by fear, and his eyes glaring wildly upon a tree before him, whilst every limb trembled as if he had the ague; and his horse, that stood snorting and shaking, seemed not less terrified than its rider. As I galloped hastily towards him, he had the presence of mind to point with his finger to where I saw a panther crouched, curling his tail, and just ready to make a deadly spring.

"Give spurs and whip to your horse, and rely upon me," I exclaimed.

"He obeyed instantaneously, and the horse sprang off sidelong just at the very moment that the panther leaped from the branch. This movement spoiled his aim; and, instead of striking the man, he fell upon the animal's rump; but, ere he

had time to raise a paw the second time, I shot him through the head, and he fell dead at our feet.

The poor horse was severely wounded by his fangs, which penetrated at least an inch into the flesh; but the servant was unhurt. In his ardour to catch his prey, the panther did not observe me; I therefore got near to my servant, so as to fire at him the moment he struck the horse. The man dropt to the ground with the panther from fright; but in a few seconds he came to his senses again, and was not a little delighted, as well as astonished, to see his dreadful enemy lying dead at his feet. The horse, however, was so alarmed, that he burst into the woods at full gallop, and seemed determined to traverse the forest as fast as his legs could carry him. Luckily it was much overgrown with bushes and underwood, which impeded his progress; and at length the bridle got entangled in them. This fortunate occurrence enabled us to catch him; but it was some time before we could calm him. Whenever he came near the road, he snorted violently, reared, kicked, and drew back. Indeed, my own horse could not be enticed within fifty yards of the panther.

Although I was anxious to take the skin, for it was a very handsome animal, what with my frightened steed, and timid servant, who still trembled, I was compelled to desist, and rode off, leaving him in the road for the next comer.

The people at Carlisle had warned me of two panthers having been heard and seen in the forests

bordering the valley; but I had entirely forgotten their caution, although my pistols had been purposely loaded in consequence. My servant's horse was very shy and fretful for some time, but grew quieter as we proceeded on at a round pace through another large forest, which we were obliged to pass to arrive at the settlements in the valley. No doubt the wounds which the poor beast received, and which bled freely, contributed to make him uneasy. I took care, after this adventure, to keep exactly in the middle of the road, and examine every tree, lest the companion of the dead panther might be lurking there to revenge his death. I made my servant watch to the right, and I looked to the left, so that we could not have been easily surprised again: besides, I was a very tolerable marksman, being sure of any object I fired at with a pistol-ball within the distance of twenty yards. However, those animals are always to be dreaded, because they have the art of concealing themselves on a tree so effectually, that they are not seen until it is too late to escape them.

As the forest was of great extent, we were for a couple of hours or more on the look out; until at length, on reaching the centre of the valley, the country began to be more open, and the trees receding on either side, presented cultivated lands in gradual ascent to the base of the mountains which enclosed it. These grounds were all fenced in, and fields of clover or stubble, where there

had been fine rye, wheat, and barley, displayed themselves at every step. A beautiful river, that meandered in a serpentine course through the valley, sometimes gliding smoothly, and sometimes rushing in cataracts over its rocky bottom, gave a finish to this highly picturesque and interesting landscape.

As the road made a sudden turn to the left, my attention was attracted by a verdant copse, skirted with chestnut and tulip poplar trees, of a very large growth; beyond which the tall wreaths of blue smoke rose into the bright, clear atmosphere, and announced the welcome vicinity of some human habitation. Trotting on briskly, I had no sooner rounded the copse, than I beheld a very handsome wooden house, having a row of columns in front, and built with great taste, on the declivity of a hill, commanding a noble view of the cataracts of the river, and the principal sites of the valley. Another stream, that had its source in the neighbouring mountains, flowed through the cultivated grounds near the house, and, after a very devious course, joined the main stream at some distance below the cataracts.

As we approached the dwelling, I observed a person, whose appearance at once marked him for a gentleman, sitting on a turf bank, raised at the foot of a shady sycamore, enjoying the cool and fragrant breeze that passed over an adjoining garden well stocked with flowers. He was absorbed in thought; nor did he perceive our com-

ing, until we got close to the fence immediately opposite where he was seated. Accosting him politely, I begged to know how far I was from the next tavern.

He seemed at first not a little surprised at the unexpected appearance of two strangers in this sequestered spot; then raising himself up as he spoke, he replied,—

"I am very sorry to tell you, sir, that, if it is a tavern you seek, you have yet a full twenty miles to ride before you reach one; and then it will be of a very inferior sort, being used principally by foot travellers, and waggon drivers."

"God bless me!" said I; "twenty miles!"

He interrupted me by saying, "Don't be alarmed, sir; I cannot think of letting a gentleman of your appearance pass my door at this late hour, without offering him the hospitality of yonder cottage, where you will be heartily welcome to pass the night, and good care shall also be taken of your servant and horses. God be with the day that brings a gentleman traveller to my mansion!"

"It is, then, the master of yonder house," said I, "with whom I have the pleasure to converse?"

He smiled, and replied, "To be sure, sir, or how could I dare to offer you the freedom of it?"

"Excuse me," said I; "my question was of curiosity, and not of doubt. If it be not deemed impertinent, will you favour me with your name? My native country is Ireland; and, understanding

there are some colonists from our island settled here, perhaps I may be acquainted with it."

"By my soul! sir," said he, interrupting me, "but I knew you were from Ireland by your tongue, before you had spoken five words. My name is Donnovan: but enough for the present; this is not a place for explanation: continue along the garden fence, then turn to your left, where I shall meet and conduct you to my cottage."

"By the powers of wonder! sir," said he, the moment we met again, "but I cannot help asking how long you have been from Ireland; for the manly accent of our broad native pronunciation hangs upon your tongue like a charm. Have you only just arrived?"

"No," said I; "I have been some time in this country; but, being a native of the south, where you know we have the old mother accent, I find I cannot get rid of what seems to be a part of my very self."

"Here's the hand of a southern man," said he, grasping mine with a friendly squeeze; "may God keep you so all your life!"

We no sooner got near enough to call the servants, than he cried out, "Patrick, here, my lad of wax, take the gentleman's horses, and assist his servant to walk them about: when the cattle are cool, feed them well."

On entering the house, I was charmed, and, indeed, astonished, to see every thing so neat and elegant at such a distance from the capital; and

my cousin's wife and daughter, who were well bred, and both very beautiful, spread a sort of enchantment around that made me, at first, almost doubt my own senses.

"This, sir," said Donnovan, "is my domicile; and here are my wife and daughter. How do you like my dwelling, or cottage, as I call it?"

"In my mind," said I, "you have misnamed it; it ought rather to be called a palace, as it really is, in comparison with all the houses I have seen since I left Philadelphia; and I am really proud to have discovered a countryman, who, in the midst of the forests of America, has constructed such a charming edifice, and made the grounds which surround it a perfect paradise.

"Mrs. Donnovan here remarked, that my encomiums were too flattering; that they had only assisted nature; and as to the house, it appeared elegant by contrast with the wildness of the country, and the rusticity I had met on the road.

Whilst she was speaking, my cousin's eyes became riveted on my features; and she had scarcely finished, when he exclaimed,—

"By the powers of wonder! sir, but you resemble my old uncle by my mother's side as much as if you were his own son! and now, in turn, let me ask from what country of the south you come, and what may be your name?"

Finding it impossible to conceal myself any longer, I replied, I was born in the county of Cork, and my name was Walter Brabazon.

In an instant I found myself clasped within his arms, whilst the tears flowed in a stream from his eyes. Mrs. Donnovan and her daughter followed his example; and I felt at that moment the supreme delight of disinterested relationship and affection, from a family who were taught to remember with gratitude the friendly conduct of an uncle.

When Donnovan had recovered himself, he gave me his hand, and said, "Your father acted like a father to me when mine died and left me unprotected: his conduct can never be forgotten. I have taught my wife and children to remember it: and now, Walter, I tell you, that, although I have a son and daughter to provide for, if you have need of it, you shall share my fortune with them." Then, without giving me time to reply, he called out to his wife,—

"Zounds! Caroline, we have forgotten, in our joy, that he is hungry. Make the cook twist the necks off half a dozen chickens, and order some good slices of ham to be broiled with them, to regale our blood relation, who is come all the way from the county of Cork, in old Ireland, to see us in the back woods of America. Don't forget, also, to have a batch of good potatoes boiled. The seed, my lad, I brought with me from home: you shall see how they 'll burst their sides for joy to be served up to a countryman!"

What could be more gratifying to the heart than such a reception? Or could there be any

thing more honourable and noble than his remembrance of my father's conduct, and the generous offer that accompanied it? What a difference, thought I, has nature made in the minds and characters of men! How superior is Donnovan to the nearest relation I have in Ireland, whose whole thoughts are directed to deprive me of my patrimony!

I inwardly offered up my thanks to God, that he had, in his great goodness, afforded me such heartfelt, pure, and unsullied pleasure as I that moment experienced.

I now spoke in the highest terms of every thing I had seen; and related to my affectionate relative the events of my journey from Carlisle, and how I stumbled upon his dwelling.

"I purposely keep the copse there," said he; "for, after passing through that immense forest, it conceals for awhile my house and principal improvements, until they burst upon the eye all at once. It was fortunate you bore to the left, or you might have rode five or six miles before you met with another dwelling, or any one to inform you of your error. God be with the hour that brought you to the cottage of your blood relation!"

Whilst we were talking the tea-table was prepared: Mrs. Donnovan and her daughter took their places, inviting us to join them. This picture of domestic felicity, and, above all, the transcendent beauty of the two ladies, fascinated me

so, that I sat in silent contemplation, without thinking of eating what was placed before me. At last my cousin exclaimed,—

"Why, Walter, you should have left your bashfulness at home; it won't do in this republic. Come, eat and drink; and make us happy by convincing us that you are pleased with our rustic fare. There must be no ceremony between us: your father was a father to me, and we must be brothers."

I gave him my hand, and said I accepted the offer; and then I excused myself, by declaring that his cottage, as he called it, and every thing about it, had so enchanted and surprised me, it required some time to recover myself; but that he should soon see I was neither bashful nor ceremonious.

I then began upon the ham and chickens, in a manner that convinced my cousin my appetite was good, and my abilities as an eater by no means contemptible. He noticed my progress in silence; but the ladies kept up a sort of broken conversation with me, until I had demolished a large portion of these savoury viands, and swallowed a proportionate quantity of tea, during which my cousin exhibited many symptoms of impatience. At length he could contain himself no longer.

"Come, Walter," said he, "since you have now taken off the sharp edge of your appetite, I am panting to hear the news. A traveller, the

other day, gave us some strange reports; but these Americans are so fond of coining news, I make it a rule never to believe more than one fourth of what they relate: besides, brother, I hardly think you would travel so far to search me out without bringing a letter from my brother, or at least from my agent, Mr. Fisher. But, first of all, let me ask how your father and mine bears his years?"

"Alas!" said I, "he is no more: I am sorry his son should be the bearer of the sad news."

Donnovan struck his forehead, and exclaimed, "Alas! my ever-to-be-regretted benefactor!"

His eyes filled with tears; he sighed, and said, in a tremulous voice,—

"Great God! thy will be done. But I thought thou would'st have granted me the happiness of seeing him again."

His manner affected me; but, recovering myself, I said,—

"Cousin, my poor father has been dead now some years. But, come, cheer up, for I have brought you joyful news."

"I cannot listen to it just now," said he: "excuse me a few minutes, I will return to you." He rose and left the room. In less than a quarter of an hour he came back, and appeared to have recovered his former serenity and self-possession.

"Well," said I, "are you prepared to hear me?"

"Yes," he replied, if it be in any way favourable to our poor afflicted country."

"It is," said I: "the Catholics are emancipated! I have brought the Philadelphia Gazette with me, where you will read the official account."

It would be difficult to paint the paroxysm of joy which overpowered him at that instant. He sprang a foot high from his chair, threw his arms round my neck, clasped me to his bosom, and cried out aloud, "*Erin! old Erin for ever!*" whilst the tears rolled in torrents down his cheeks. Then he exclaimed again, "The green sod of Ireland for ever! Oh, that I should have lived to see the day!" Addressing his wife and daughter, who were also bathed in tears, he said, "Do you hear the news, my love? my child?" and then embraced them.

Of a sudden, as if recollecting himself, he called aloud for his man Patrick, who came into the room immediately.

"Run, my honest fellow," said he, "and bring me a bottle of our old Irish whiskey: call all the lads about me, and let me give them a cheerful noggin of their native liquor, to drink success to old Ireland."

The order was no sooner given than obeyed; and Ellen, with tearful eyes, ran to bring her old nurse and waiting woman to enjoy the grateful intelligence. Six or seven stout, healthy-looking men now came into the room, with Patrick and

James at their head; who were no sooner informed of the emancipation, than they roared out "Hurra!" with such thundering voices as made the cottage shake to its foundations; whilst the waiting-woman and the old nurse, though upwards of seventy years of age, joined in the chorus.

The whiskey bottle was soon emptied, and another was ordered to be given to the lads to drink success to their native land; whilst Ellen brought some home-made cordial on purpose to treat the women. It would be difficult to conceive any thing more joyful than the congratulations which passed from one to the other on this happy occasion.

Said Patrick, filling himself the last glass of the bottle, "Here 's long life to your noble self, your honour! for you 're the heart's blood of an Ireland man."

"Long, long, your honour, have we muttered and groaned over our griefs unpitied; and now, that God has taught the people of great Britain to listen to our cries, let us rejoice that they have begun to do justice to the poor Catholics. In this, England has done honour to herself; for, by my soul! she has strengthened her own powerful arm with the sinews of a true and loyal people. May she learn how to value the faithful hearts of Ireland! and she will then be convinced, although they differ with her in religion, they are not the less staunch in supporting her crown, and are alway-

ready to shed their last drop of blood in her service. Then, your honour, we must consider this emancipation as only the beginning of a good thing; and the abolition of the tithes must follow, if there be any justice in their hearts. So let us not be cast down, but rejoice at this happy commencement."

"Patrick," said my cousin, giving him his hand, "your native eloquence is irresistible: I accept your congratulations with pleasure; your feelings and sentiments on the subject are just and natural; and your words have poured a balm into the wounds that began to bleed afresh. Yes, we must live in hope. My countrymen will, no doubt, convince their rulers that all they want is tolerance, a free commerce, and their own legislation; and that their hearts are too firmly attached to their brethren of Great Britain ever to think of a separation."

I now interrupted Donnovan by saying,— "Cousin, you had an elder brother in Ireland, who took the opposite side of the question; and you parted enemies. He has bid adieu to this world of troubles. Here is a letter from your agent, enclosing a copy of his will, that, I understand, leaves all his property to you and your daughter: — read for yourself."

As I handed him the letter, a tear started to his eye, and he said, "May Heaven receive his soul! In our youthful days we were affectionate brothers; but the moment he took the part of the

Protestants, he became my enemy: yet my heart has long since pardoned him."

The death of a brother whom he had not seen for upwards of twelve years, and with whom he had seriously quarrelled before his departure from Ireland, could not, of course, prove a subject of much grief. He, however, appeared pensive; and, to rouse him, I pledged him in a tumbler of good warm whiskey punch, that had been placed on the table some minutes previously; and afterwards put several questions to him concerning the spot where he was settled.

"Walter," said he in reply, "I am lord here of about two thousand acres of fine land, which I have held in peaceful possession since I purchased them, except for the first three or four years; the tyrants of the forest, bears, wolves, and panthers, having attempted to dispute my sway. My neighbours and myself then established a regular weekly hunt; and, with our dogs, guns and horses, we soon drove them off, with the loss of many of their brethern slain in the chase; and nowadays they are but rarely seen in our forests. I have two or three excellent neighbours, whom we visit, and who visit us in turn. The friendship and hospitality of these people often remind me of Ireland; for we spend several days at a time with them, and they do the same with us. Thus situated, all the additional gifts which fortune may shower upon my head cannot make me resign the solid pleasures which I now enjoy for imaginary

ones, which I may never be able to realise. Here every hour has its appointed occupation; and our pleasures and recreations are rendered more pungent, from the inward satisfaction of having first performed the duties which God has assigned to us. My wife and myself rise with the lark; I oversee all the out-door and agricultural part, whilst she, with her faithful and industrious Katty Mullen, the house-keeper, manages the within-door concerns. Patrick is my head workman and fac-totum, who takes care that my orders and plans are faithfully executed; and that sharp fellow, Jemmy Calihan, is my servant, gardener, &c. &c.: besides, I have ploughmen, mowers, ditchers, and wood-cutters, almost all of them from Ireland. My farm, in its management, may be compared to a ship: every man has his station, and every thing its place. There are certain magazines, or outhouses, as they are called in America, for all the implements of husbandry, gardening, &c.; and the moment a labourer finishes his work, the instruments he had in use are restored to the place where they belong. This exactness saves both time and trouble. Besides, if any thing gets broke, or out of repair, the workmen are bound to report all such accidents to the overseer, who takes care to have it mended, or to supply its place with a new implement. In summer, the labourers go to work before breakfast; but in winter they breakfast by candle-light, and go to work at the dawn of day. When dinner is ready, a boy, who assists about the

kitchen, blows a large conch-shell that can be heard two miles off, and the people come home immediately. They are allowed an hour and a half to eat and repose themselves, when they renew their labour until sunset; and then, returning home, they sup and retire for the night. As we have no church near us, on Sundays and holydays, Patrick reads prayers to the servants and labourers; and, after the holy service is finished, I permit them to go hunting or fishing in the Junaita, a tributary of the great river Susquehanna. The fish of both these streams are remarkably large and fine-flavoured. Deer and game of almost every description abound in my own forests, so that I get an ample supply: for I have sportsmen whom I pay purposely to furnish my table. To-morrow I shall give you a dish of woodcocks as fine as ever you ate in Ireland. In short, I find myself so comfortably settled, I could wish to spend my life here, feeling perfectly persuaded that my native country will never recover, during my lifetime, what she has lost; and which, in reality, seems to me irretrievable. The only circumstance which now affects me, is the necessity I feel of going to take possession of the paternal estates for my son James, and to secure to Ellen the property left to her by my brother. Although my daughter has been educated with great care, and taught every thing necessary to an accomplished woman, I could not think of taking her to Ireland, because she has already expressed a wish

never to inhabit the great world, and seems perfectly happy in this lonely retreat."

Ellen, who overheard what her father said, immediately observed,—

"My dear papa, it is not every one who is formed to live in the world; and many who are educated to adorn the circles of fashion prefer and seclusion. Much depends upon the feelings, sentiments and disposition; and, according to my ideas, those who are well educated, and possess resources within themselves, are the persons best suited to enjoy a life of retirement. Let me tell you, sir, that papa and mamma have several times disputed with me on this point; but, thank God! I have not heard them say any thing on the subject for a long time; for, having become themselves attached to our present mode of life, they have ceased their efforts to persuade me I was formed to live in a city."

The father smiled, and the mother said, "We have ceased to oppose your wishes, because we perceive you are really, at present, enamoured of a country life; but, if you were thrown suddenly into the vortex of fashion, you would, perhaps, change your opinion."

I could see, from Mrs. Donnovan's manner, that this was said to make her daughter deliver her sentiments more fully.

"No!" replied Ellen, somewhat indignantly, "never! True, I have not yet seen the great world; but I have read enough of it to convince

me it is for the most part composed of empty pomp, dress, useless expense, cards, and pleasures, as they are misnamed, which have too much alloy to leave any pure sensations of delight — such as are constantly derived from the contemplation of the boundless combinations and varieties of nature, and from more simple, innocent, and less refined amusements. The very idea of inhabiting a city is irksome to me. I consider those who live in towns as persons imprisoned. All around them is artificial, and they are themselves little better than automatons. What I read of the world alarms me. I certainly should be grieved to be separated from my beloved parents, and must follow them wherever they go; but no other earthly consideration could induce me to sacrifice the delights of a country life for the smoke and fashion of a city.

These remarks raised her still higher in my estimation; and the spirit and animation with which she expressed her approbation, or disgust, though full of mildness and good temper, evinced a decided character, and showed she was not one of those soft, simple women, whose sentiments and opinions melt like wax before the fire of opposition, and amalgamate with those of the person who disputes with them. No, Ellen had an opinion of her own, founded on correct and solid principles; yet nothing could be more modest and unassuming than her manner of offering it to her hearers: in short, I perceived she was a woman,

the beauties of whose face and person were eclipsed by those of her mind; and she regarded the embellishments of nature in their true light, like flowers that soon fade, and laboured to engraft on them those solid accomplishments, which continue to charm, when the former have lost their lustre.

Our conversation became so animated, that we entirely forgot the hour, until Mrs. Donnovan said to her husband, — "My dear, it grows late, and our cousin must have need of repose after his journey."

"Thank you, good wife, for the hint," said Donnovan; "then, come, Walter, let us finish our punch, with success to old Ireland."

After this toast, the ladies retired, and I was shown to a chamber by Jemmy; who said, as he opened the door, "By my soul! but it makes the cockles of my heart glad to be putting a true Ireland gentleman, all the way from the green sod itself, into this room, that has not been so honoured for many a long day!"

"You do me honour, Jemmy," I replied. "Good night, and send my servant up to assist me."

"I beg your honour's pardon," said he; "but the poor fellow is fast asleep—as sound as a top; and, as to pulling off boots, and all that, I hope your honour won't be angry if I say there's not a man on this side of the big ocean that understands the duty better than Jemmy Calihan."

There was no resisting this appeal, especially as I shrewdly suspected their hospitality to my poor Thomas had rendered him quite unfit for service; and my humorous countryman, having performed the necessary duties, wished my honour a sweet night's rest, and retired.

CHAPTER VII.

THE following morning the sun was shining brightly through my windows for some time before I could shake off my drowsiness, and persuade myself I was at my cousin's. I rubbed my eyes twice or thrice, and gazed all round the room, ere I felt convinced it was the same into which I had been introduced the previous night. As I was beginning to dress, I heard a tap at the door; and, ordering whoever was there to come in, Thomas and Jemmy entered together. The latter made his bow, saying, —

"I hope I see your honour in great good health this morning, and that you have slept off the fatigues of the road!" I thanked him. Thomas immediately excused himself for not having waited on me when I went to bed, as the whiskey had confused him so he could not keep his eyes open.

I smiled, and replied, that on such an extraordinary occasion I should pardon him.

"Thanks to your honour's goodness of heart!" said Jemmy; "for Thomas was not to blame: his countrymen forced him to make merry with '; and your honour knows, that no sooner e juice of the rye get into a man's noddle,

than his mother wit, if ever he had any, leaves him in the twinkling of a bed-post."

"That's a queer simile, Jemmy," said I; "but the observation is not the less just. How comes it, though, that I find my clothes all brushed, and my boots clean? I must have slept like one of the seven sleepers, to have had my chamber-door opened twice, and my things brought into my room, without hearing a footstep!"

"By my soul! and you may say that," replied Jemmy; "for although we both stumped over the floor with our iron-bound brogues, your honour lay as snug as a bug in a rug, without moving a limb; and I very believe the march of a whole regiment of soldiers would not have made your honour blink for a second."

"I fear," said I, "that I have kept the family waiting breakfast for me, and have innovated upon their usual regular habits: for, doubtless, they are early risers?"

"By my soul!" said he, "but the sun must rise sooner than ordinary, to catch them napping. At all events, they don't breakfast before this time: so that your honour may dress yourself at your ease; ay, and if you were a couple of hours longer, I'm very sure they would want the pleasure; for my master is a true son of Ireland, every inch of him, and as full of kindness and hospitality as an egg is of meat."

"And you, Jemmy," said I, affecting to be

ignorant who he was, "you are also from Ireland, or your tongue belies you?"

"By the powers of Moll Kelly!" said he, "but your honour never made a closer guess in all your life; for, by Jasus! I drew my first breath amongst the turf-smoke of my father's mud castle, near the old head of Kinsale; and God be with the day that brought a real Irish gentleman into these wild parts of America, to bless our eyesight!"

"I am proud," I continued, "that you recognise me for a countryman."

"May the devil receive my sinful self!" retorted he, "if I could not pick a man from the green sod of old Ireland out of a million of your dirty outlandish spalpeens. There's something about us, your honour, so different from other people; and the women say, when they look in our eyes, that they see the babies dance there."

I could not help laughing at the mother-wit of my countryman; and, wishing to hear some more of it, I said, "My lad, I have forgotten your family name: how do you call yourself?"

"By my soul! sir," he answered, "according to my old father's opinion,—God be with him! for he has been dead for many a long day,—the only name worth having, is that of an honest man; and may a heavy curse light upon him who ever dared to say black was the white of Jemmy Calihan's eye! My name is not worth the snuff of a farthing candle: but, by Jasus! my honour is not to be bought with gold!"

"I am happy," said I, "to find you pride yourself on your probity; and, depend upon it, your good name shall be in safe keeping with me. So, come, show me the way down stairs; for I am sure the family will be displeased at my late rising."

"Make yourself aisy, your honour," replied he, "my master has a soul to be saved. He loves guests, and has often waited much longer for one of your long-sided, ill-looking Americans, who is no more to be compared to an Irish or an English gentleman, than a kish of bad turf to a chaldron of Kilkenny coals; which, your honour knows, before I can tell you, burn like a furnace, without any smoke at all, at all."

So saying, he conducted me to the breakfasting-room, where I found my cousin and his wife and daughter, who had just returned from taking their morning's walk. I began to excuse myself for coming so late to breakfast; but Donnovan stopped me short, by saying, —

"Come, cousin, none of your apologies; a tired traveller has no occasion for them, and a countryman and a blood relation still less."

"By my soul! sir," said Jemmy, "and I told his honour you would sooner wait for a guest than eat yourself."

"Thank you, thank you," said my cousin; "and now run, man, bring us in the hot rolls, eggs, and butter, and we shall soon make up for lost time."

He was off immediately, and back again, before I thought he had well got out of the door, together with another servant; and the hot rolls, &c. were all put on the table at once.

"There, there they are, your honour," said he, "piping hot, as neat a batch as ever came out of an oven; the eggs are all fresh laid, and the butter hasn't been churned an hour."

Although I had not walked, like the rest of the company, I had a good appetite, and did honour to the excellent fare before me.

"Notwithstanding I am in love with this spot and its productions," said my cousin, "I must confess that the butter is inferior to that of my native country, and particularly what we call the cowslip butter."

"Begging your honour's pardon," observed Jemmy, "for putting in a word or two; but the reason's as clear as mud: the cows in our dear country eat nothing but clover, cowslips, daisies, butter-cups, and the like; but here they wallow up to their bellies in coarse wild grass! Surely your honour wouldn't think of making a poplin gown out of a pound of Oakum?"

"Jemmy," said I, laughing, "is more than half right, cousin: it is our rich pastures which make the butter of Ireland the finest in the world."

"True," replied Donnovan; "but this poor fellow, who has just explained to us the cause of its fine flavour, paid one hundred pounds a year

for his farm; yet I believe he very rarely anointed his palate with the delicate products of his dairy. If he ate butter at all, it must have been on some great holidays, twice or thrice a year, and with potatoes, for he was too poor to buy bread. Is it true, or not, Jemmy?"

"Long life to your honour!" said he. "Who relieved me from debt, and saved me and my little family from starvation, and brought me to this land of plenty? Many's the pound of fine butter, by my soul! that I never ate; and the devil receive the agent who oiled his fat paunch with it at our expense! Be that as it may, however, I sometimes kept a good lump for my wife and my boy Larry; and, to be sure, didn't I ate a little bit myself? So your honour sees that, poor as I was, I sometimes greased the way for the dry potatoes with a lump of cowslip butter; and the smack of it, by Jasus! like old whiskey, hangs upon my tongue's memory as the tune of the ballad of 'Erin go Bragh' does upon my ear."

"Well said, Jemmy!" I observed; "we give you great credit for that simile, as well as for getting the upper hand of the agent."

"By my soul! and you may say that, your honour; for we have flesh and blood as well as richer folks, and warm blood too; but Irish agents are cursed with cold blood, and icy hearts; and as for consciences, God made them free of those heavy appendages, which press upon other men's souls, and make them honest."

After this eloquent philippic, he seemed no longer inclined to talk on the subject, and quitted the room.

"Poor fellow!" I observed, as he went out; "he expressed himself in a manner that shows he has suffered severely."

"I found him, his wife, and a poor labourer who assisted them, together with a daughter and his son, a fine boy, then about eight or ten years old, all in rags, and living in a smoky hovel," said Donnovan. "He had a good herd of cows, and the pastures looked luxuriant: in short, every thing on the farm seemed flourishing; but the habitation, and the beings who dwelt in it — alas! that human creatures should be thus degraded. On enquiry, I found he was the son of a respectable farmer, whose ancestors had occupied the same spot in leasehold for upwards of a century; and Jemmy had received the lease in lineal succession, but much in debt, in consequence of the misfortunes of his father. He was clever, active, and industrious; but latterly, the proprietors living almost entirely in England, they had empowered an avaricious agent to manage their estates. About this time Jemmy's lease was renewed with such a heavy augmentation of rent, that he had the greatest difficulty to pay it. At length, a disease that carried off several of his cattle, and a fall in the prices of beef and butter at the close of the war, gave the finishing stroke to his misfortunes, and brought him so deeply in

debt, that he was ejected from the premises, and obliged to surrender all he had in the world to pay his cruel creditor. Travelling, one day, on horseback from Ross to Kinsale, and finding myself tired and hungry, I halted at a neglected, ruinous habitation near the road-side. On entering, I perceived the interior corresponded with its aspect from without, for it was miserably furnished, and the family, who appeared lean and wretched, were seated round a small oak table, on which was strewed a batch of potatoes, accompanied by two salt herrings and some sour milk. On perceiving a stranger, they sprang from their seats, greeting me in the most respectful and hospitable manner, and requesting to know in what they could serve me. I told the man that, if they did not all sit down and finish their meal, I should ride off and leave them: 'when you have done dinner,' said I, 'I shall tell you what I want.'

"They obeyed immediately, and I went out, ordering my servant to walk the horses to cool them, while I amused myself by taking a turn round the fields. In five minutes afterwards, the farmer came to me, and, touching his hat, observed that they had finished their dinners.

"'I am a traveller,' said I, 'and, being a little tired and hungry withal, have stopped here to repose awhile, and get something to eat: give me some hot potatoes, butter, and fresh eggs. I'm sure you must have a little butter to spare, as I see you have many good cows.'

"He bowed assent, and, beckoning to his wife, whispered something softly in her ear. She replied in a similar tone; but I overheard the words, 'and what will the agent say to it?'

"'If the devil himself were agent,' said he, 'his honour shall have them!'

"The wife went away in a hurry, and I, of course, concluded that those poor people had butter and eggs, but were not permitted to dispose of them. Jemmy (for my entertainer was no other than my present faithful servant) then approached me, and said, 'We have plenty of hot potatoes ready dressed, if your honour will only wait until my wife boils the eggs?'

"In a short time after she came into the hut with the eggs and butter; and, as she put the former on the fire, I said,—

"'Don't be afraid to furnish me with these things, as I shall give you enough to satisfy the owner of them, if they are not your own.'

"'God bless your honour!' said the husband; 'we know your generosity, and how you treat your tenants at Clonmel. If the butter were gold, and every egg a jewel, by Jasus! and they wouldn't be too precious to place before such a guest.'

"I was not insensible to the high tribute conveyed in this artless burst of feeling, and, when he went out, I asked the wife how they were situated. At first she refused to tell; made excuses of not wishing to trouble me with their sad story; that her husband would be angry, &c.; but I persisted, and

at length drew from her a heart-rending description of the villainy of the agent; the loss of her eldest son; who, being seized on suspicion of associating with a band of disturbers, whom, however, he had never seen, had died of grief in prison; the seduction of her eldest daughter by the agent's son, a profligate young rake, who promised her marriage; and the melancholy fate of the poor girl, who, in despair, drowned herself in a neighbouring lake. To these domestic afflictions were added the seizure of their cattle and effects to pay up the arrears of rent, and the loss of the farm-house by fire. The poor woman concluded her dismal narrative by saying, that a writ of ejectment was shortly to be served upon them, when their little remaining property would be sold, and themselves driven from the farm to beg from door to door.

"'My poor boy and his little sister,' said she, weeping bitterly as she laid her hand upon her son's head, 'with Patrick, our friend and assistant, who has seen better days, but who now works with Jemmy for his victuals, are all that remain to comfort us.'

"Her mild interesting countenance, and her story, affected me exceedingly. I gazed upon her with the keenest emotions of pity, and forgot the calls of hunger in the contemplation of the misery of a fellow-creature. An inward horror at the conduct of the barbarous agent made my blood boil with indignation, and still more so, when I

reflected that all this wretchedness sprang out of the vices and inconsiderate conduct of the opulent proprietors.

"She was sobbing at the close of her recital, when her husband returned.

"'What!' said he to her, in a tone of reproach; 'you have been crying! Have you no shame left? Instead of eggs and butter, you have been serving up to his honour a dish of our misfortunes, which you had better keep to yourself, nor pester this kind-hearted gentleman with an affair that is too bad to be bettered; or, at least, you might have let him eat a mouthful or two to satisfy his hunger first. The will of God, woman, must be done, as old father Leary has told you many's the time; so screw up your baby's face to a smile, and give his honour the eggs.'

"'Don't be angry with her, Jemmy,' said I; 'I alone am in fault. I forced her to tell me some of the particulars of your mishaps.'

"However, I could get nothing out of him: he bustled about, pretended to be very busy, made his wife put the eggs on the table, and then he served up the potatoes and butter, giving me evasive answers to all my questions.

"Seeing he was desirous of hiding from me the desperate situation of his affairs, I inquired of the wife where the auction was to take place. Casting a frowning look at her, he said,—

"'Oh, your honour, don't listen to a weak woman's fears. I assure you the agent won't be

so cruel as to turn us off the farm upon the wide world.'

"'The tears ran down the poor wife's cheeks as she exclaimed, —

"'' God grant that he may prove kinder!'

"'' No,' said I, 'Jemmy; don't flatter yourself that his iron heart will suffer you to remain. According to your wife's account, the forms of law are all gone through: the auction and the ejectment must inevitably follow. Take my advice; your family is now reduced to five persons. If you have no objection to quit your native country, come to me; I will find you a conveyance, and take you all with me to America, one of the finest countries of the globe. There you shall have as much land as you can manage, or live with me to manage my cattle, whichever you prefer.'

"The poor man sighed, and replied, in a melancholy tone of voice, —

"'Ah! poor deserted Ireland! All thy true hearts are going to leave thee, to be preyed upon by those unprincipled men, whom our masters have sent to goad us to death. Oh! your honour, I would go to the end of the world with such a kind-hearted gentleman, and spend the last drop of my blood in your service. But, to tell you the truth, this spot, where my forefathers have prospered for many generations, is dear to my heart. My father died here, in the service of its lord; and I cannot quit it until I'm driven off by force.

Every inch of the sod is entwined with my existence; but God's will be done! If I am to be banished from it, as your honour has said that you will receive me, I shall certainly come to you.'

"His utterance now became choked, a tear started to his eye, and he left the hut abruptly. When he was gone, with great difficulty I made the wife accept of a bank note of the value of five pounds, and obtained her promise not to inform her husband of it, lest his love of his native spot might induce him to fee the agent to delay the writ, which eventually would render them still more miserable. She consented to let the law take its course, and, when they were thrown upon the wide world, without hope of assistance, then to give the money to her husband, to enable him to bring his family to me at Clonmel.

"My meal was a delicious one, for the eggs and butter were fresh and sweet, and the potatoes excellent; while the idea of having devised a plan to rescue this poor family from destruction, gave an additional zest to my homely fare. I then mounted my horse, and continued my journey. At Kinsale and Ross, I made inquiries concerning them of some of my old acquaintances. They gave the husband an excellent character, confirmed his wife's story of the villainy of the agent, and added that, through them all, Jemmy's integrity and honesty had never been called in question.

"Three weeks after I had returned to my estate, as I was mounting my horse, one morning, to take a ride about the dairy farm, who should I see coming towards me but this poor family. I dismounted to receive them. They threw themselves at my feet, thanked me for saving them from starvation, and Jemmy exclaimed, —

"'Here we are, your honour, ready to follow you to the world's end, and back again, never to quit you as long as we live. As for wages, we shall leave that to your generosity, after you have tried and seen whether we are worth our milk and potatoes.'

"Such is the history of Jemmy Calihan and his family. He superintends the whole of my domestic economy; his wife manages the dairy; his son, who is now a stout man, is the best ploughman in the province; and the daughter, a very pretty, well-behaved girl, is Ellen's waiting woman. Patrick, whom I found not only an honest, but a sensible, clever fellow, is my agricultural overseer and factotum, — an office which his knowledge and experience in farming enables him to execute in a very superior manner.

"You will now perceive," continued Donnovan, "how good sometimes springs out of evil. This poor man's misery and wretchedness would have been prolonged, could he have raised a little money; therefore, the persecutions he endured were of service, as it brought all to a close, and left him free. Here, he seems perfectly happy,

being completely master of the house; nor do I believe there ever was a more faithful, true, and conscientious steward; and, in spite of all the liberties we allow him, he never has shown the least symptom of disobedience or disrespectful behaviour. I consider myself truly fortunate in being served by my own countrymen, who, in this land of liberty, as it is called, have not been spoiled by the examples of insolence and disregard for the distinctions of society, which they cannot fail to have remarked amongst the natives, and which are carried to an extent beyond what I could have imagined. The common people are not only coarse, but grossly impertinent, and almost universally regardless even of the forms of decent behaviour. At first, several labourers refused to work, because they could not dine at the table with the master of the house. They told Patrick they considered themselves as good as I was, and they would not labour for any proud, overbearing fellow who was above dining with his people. Patrick's Irish blood began to rise at this, and he was with difficulty prevented from beating them. This disposition, at first, occasioned serious inconvenience; but I persisted; and, although my crops sometimes suffered, I contrived to manage with my own people. Seeing me inflexible, and that we cared not for their help, as they call it, they afterwards came of themselves, and offered to reap and mow for us. Since then, there is a perfect good understanding between us, and all goes on

smoothly; for Patrick is of a character not to brook the slightest offence; and, being extremely brave and robust, as you have seen, they are obliged to respect him. The attachment of such a family to us is in itself a blessing; for their zeal, industry, and unshaken integrity are as great as if they were employed for themselves."

"Yes," added Mrs. Donnovan, "I can vouch for that. Jemmy's wife is a pattern of good housewife's neatness and economy; and as for Ellen's little companion, Mary, she looks upon her as a sister: besides, she is so handsome, every one is in love with her."

We had nearly finished our breakfast when a knocking was heard at the outer door. On its being opened, I saw a handsome young man, above the middle size, apparently about twenty-five years of age, attired in the usual sporting dress of the country, namely, a short blue jacket, deer-skin pantaloons and boots; with a bird-bag and a powder-horn at his shooting belt. He carried a double-barrelled fowling-piece in his hand; and two brace of tall setters bounded into the apartment before him. Entering with a smile of familiarity, he exclaimed,—

"Good morning to you! Not yet done breakfast?"

Donnovan rose, and shaking him by the hand, replied, "Good morning to you, Charles: you have just hit the nail on the head. I am persuaded some coffee and hot rolls, with a slice or

two of broiled venison, will not be unacceptable; for I can see by your spattered boots you have traversed many a mile of the valley, in pursuit of your favourite pastime. You must have been early at the sport, for your home is at least six miles from us."

During this conversation, Ellen's cheeks resembled the brightest colours of the rose. She seemed too happy to express herself in words, and looked as angels do when they wish to confer a blessing upon mortals. Her glances were not lost upon the young sportsman, who approached and whispered something in her ear that made her blush still deeper than before; then, turning to the father, he replied, —

"Distance to a determined sportsman is a matter of no great moment: but I certainly have gone over a good deal of ground since the dawn of day, when I left my father's farm; and I cannot help confessing that I am in perfect readiness to partake of a second breakfast: but first let me beg your acceptance of the fruits of my morning's excursion."

So saying, he produced a brace of fine pheasants, with several partridges and woodcocks.

"Thank you!" said Donnovan; "you are an acceptable guest indeed, for you bring your dinner in your pocket. Our economical Dutch neighbour would be glad to receive you every day."

"Yes," observed Charles; "I have no doubt of it; but the niggardly fellow shall never exercise

his teeth with the produce of my chase. Do you know that I once stopped there in the heat of summer; and, being overpowered with fatigue, I asked for something to drink. He told his wife to go bring some fresh water from the spring; but I refused, begging her to give me a drink of what had been some time in the house; as cold water to a person overheated was highly dangerous. She gave me some in a tin pint. I drank a little of it, merely to moisten my parched throat, and left the house abruptly. Since then I have never been within a mile of his dwelling. The avaricious, inhospitable barbarian, who knows that a draught of cold water, in this climate, during the heat of summer, to a person heated with exercise, is death. No, no! those Dutchmen are greater brutes than their cattle."

"Come," said Mrs. Donnovan; "don't think of them now, but eat your breakfast."

"I hope," said Donnovan, "you have come according to your promise, to stay three or four days with us. Ellen and myself have discovered a place near the first cataract where there is an abundance of bass and trout; and we are anxious to try our luck."

He then introduced me, saying, — "Here, cousin, this young gentleman is the son of our most intimate friend, Mr. O'Grady, who has been settled in America about thirty years. Political reasons obliged him to quit Ireland; but, being admitted to practice at the bar in Philadelphia, he

made a large fortune and retired to this valley, where he purchased lands some time back; and, in the bosom of an amiable family, employs and amuses himself, as I do, with agriculture."

The conversation now turned on fishing; and the whole party was forthwith deeply engaged in discussing the various mysteries of the "gentle crafte;" — Limerick hooks, O'Shaugnessey's flies, and the "Gillaroo trout" of Lough Derg, in Ireland. This singular species often weighs upwards of thirty pounds, and possesses a gizzard resembling that of a fowl. The magnificent white trout of the Costello River were also mentioned, in conjunction with their still more gigantic brethren of the Huron and Moose Head lakes of America, where they never take a bait, and are seldom killed except in winter, by spearing them through holes in the ice. As most Irish country gentlemen are fond of this sport, the subject interested me. I gathered from their conversation that the streams which flow from the Alpine districts of the province of New England, the rivers and brooks of Long Island, and, above all, the waters of the celebrated Waquoit Bay, are among the best American stations for fly-fishing, being all abundantly stocked with trout, especially those last mentioned, and having their banks generally unincumbered with wood. For lake angling, Sebago Lake, and some others in Maine, afford the greatest probability of sport, and may be compared in this respect to the Belvidere, the Hoyle,

the Ducuereagh, and other celebrated waters of the county of Westmeath.

My piscatory lore, and the enthusiasm with which I entered into this the favourite topic of the moment, so delighted young O'Grady and his affianced bride, that, *nolens volens*, they were for enlisting me in their party to the river side.

Donnovan, however, quickly put a stop to the project by exclaiming, "No, no! I shall not part with Walter to-day, as I wish to show him round the fields; therefore let the young people go by themselves. I am persuaded he will prefer looking at my improvements to an angling party."

Politeness to my host induced me to reply that he was right; for although I was extremely fond of trout fishing, yet there were many things more interesting at the present moment, and I longed to gratify my curiosity.

No sooner was the breakfast over than Ellen and Charles prepared to depart. In addition to the fishing-rods, he took with him his gun and ammunition. "Who knows," said he, "but we may stumble upon some squirrels, or a wild turkey or two?"

I remarked that he might chance to see wild beasts, and it was always well to be armed.

"Oh, no," said he, smiling; "there are no animals of prey larger than foxes, or occasionally a straggling wolf; and even they for some years past have very rarely visited this neighbourhood."

Then, after a short pause, he added, "But,

now you mention it, I recollect a few days ago hearing a scream in the forest that must have been the cry of a panther."

I now related the accident that occured to me, and the fortunate escape of my servant. My cousin congratulated me on my prowess, and said, as the young people quitted the room,—

"Your adventure reminds me of an instance of Ellen's great presence of mind when she was only ten years of age. I took her, one morning after breakfast, to walk with me through the large forest, as we call it, being the most considerable of three which compose a portion of my possessions, in order to gather some very fine nuts, which one of the hunters had discovered in his sporting excursions. As he was the only person who knew the spot, I was obliged to take him with me; and I ordered him to prepare his rifle, as we might probably meet with game.

"During our walk through the forest, I had got a little a-head, as Ellen often stopped to pick up nuts, and the hunter kept ranging with his spaniels on one side, in the hope of getting a shot. Having discovered a tree where there was a quantity of fruit, Ellen stopped to gather it, while I proceeded on at a slow pace. Suddenly she espied an enormous panther, creeping cautiously upon his belly like a cat in the direction I had taken, until he should be near enough to spring upon me: for these animals are, by a natural instinct, enabled to calculate their dis-

tance with the greatest precision. Breathless with terror and anxiety, she instantly flew towards the hunter, and, grasping him by the arm, silently pointed towards the ferocious beast, that had now advanced within a dozen paces of the spot where I stood.

"Being a practised sportsman, as well as an excellent shot, no sooner did he behold the panther than he cocked his rifle, and gave a shrill whistle, that re-echoed through the forest. Startled at the noise, the creature paused for an instant, ere he raised himself for the fatal spring; but, before he could move an inch farther, the hunter's bullet hit him just beneath his shoulder, and, with a hideous scream, he rolled lifeless on the ground.

"The discharge of the rifle followed the sound of the whistle so instantaneously, that, before I could turn round, the animal was struggling in the agonies of death; and almost at the same time I found Ellen hanging on my neck, exclaiming, "God be praised! my dear papa, you are safe!" I gazed upon her in astonishment, so unconscious was I of the danger from which she had rescued me: for had she lost her presence of mind, or neglected to point out the panther to the hunter, a few seconds would have closed my mortal career.

"Since that day, as I am myself a tolerably good shot, I invariably take a gun with me when I walk in the forest."

A sudden thundering at the outer door interrupted our conversation, and attracted the attention of the whole household. We sat in mute suspense, listening to Patrick, who had answered this rude summons, and was talking with some one that replied in a hoarse, uncouth tone of voice. Presently after a loud trampling, like the sound of a horse's hoofs, announced the intruder's approach, the parlour door opened, and in walked Patrick, conducting a huge, gigantic Dutch waggoner, upwards of six feet in height, with a head like a bushel, and shoulders as square as the side of a house. He had a large slouched hat on his head, which resembled an eagle's nest upon a watch-tower; in the band was stuck a half-a-dozen white clay pipes; and in his hand he held the long whip with which he drove his team.

"Here, your honour," exclaimed Patrick, as they entered together; "here is an overgrown, outlandish sort of a monster, with bull's eyes, and a head like a washing tub; a cousin-german to Mr. Bruin of this land of beasts, or some such savage family, if I may judge from his paws; and, axing the gentlefolks' pardon, he has no more manners than a hog. Besides, your honour, his lingo has something swinish in it too, and the devil relieve the schoolmaster who taught it him; for he can neither speak Irish, English, nor American. So, by Jasus! let him tell his own story, or else send to Carlisle for an interpreter."

The enormous waggoner stood all this time

behind honest Patrick, above whom he towered like a church steeple; and, finding no one to speak for him, he began, with a thundering voice, as follows:—

"Ish tish von Irish mon vash lives here, vot dey callsh Donnovan?"

My cousin, composing his countenance, replied in the affirmative. The fellow then asked whether he was sure he was the man.

"For," said he, "I hash got von letter from von stiffish Quaker at Philadelphia; and mit tees quakers tere ish alvesh te tyvil to pay mit em, an you dush not stick close mit his horders."

"Don't fear," said Donnovan; "you're quite right, so give me the letter."

The waggoner now took off his hat, and having laid it and his whip together on an adjoining table, he pulled out of his bosom a large black leather pocket-book, stuffed with papers, and as greasy as a lamp-lighter's apron, and began rummaging among the folds to find that addressed to my cousin. After a tedious search, he at length drew forth the letter, saying, with a broad grin,—

"Here it ish at last; obber I not shkall part mit it till you dush gif me fon ritten resheet for em tat I can show to te Quaker fen I goes pack agen."

"Oh, my good fellow!" said Donnovan; "that's all correct;" and, ordering pen, ink, and paper, he began to write the receipt.

Patrick now whispered in my ear, "When did your honour see such a huge wild beast of the forest before; or did you ever hear such a savage lingo as he spakes? Big as he is, I was very near wiping him down with my cudgel, and polishing his rough surface; for, at first, he wanted to bolt into the house without saying why or wherefore: however, I lifted up my oak twig, by way of a hint, when he became as mild as a lamb, and asked for the owner of the house. Even then, I hardly knew how to admit such a monster into the presence of two Irish gentlemen."

The receipt was at length written; but Patrick's wit, and the wild stare of the Dutchman, threw us into a fit of laughter; and he, from sympathy, laughed as loud as the rest, although he understood nothing of what was said.

"There," said Patrick, "you see how the stupid brute butts his own ribs: why he's the biggest noodle that ever peeled a potato!"

My cousin now ordered the boor a dram; who said, as he took the glass,—

"Zo, man, tat ish ferry goot. I lovsh a trop of tee shnaps."

After drinking it down at a single draught, he drew a long breath, and added,—

"Ha! tat ish te real stufsh: tankee, mynheer. Zukzess to you!"

He then put his hat on one side of his head, and, taking up his whip, marched off with the same gait with which he had entered, to the great

amusement of us all. Jemmy accompanied him to the door, being fearful lest his fellow servant, who evidently regarded his vulgarity with no very complacent feeling, might commence a quarrel. When he came back, he exclaimed,—

"By my soul! but that animal only wants the hair to grow upon his hide, and a pair of horns upon his head, to be as complete a brute as ever ate grass. If I had him in Ireland, I'd show him at the fairs, and make my fortune out of him, all, intirely."

"Faith!" said Patrick, "if you were only to tie a short-pointed stick to his forehead, and call him a unicorn, the devil a mother's son would know him to be a man."

After another hearty laugh, my cousin opened his packet, which was from his agent, enclosing a letter from his son. Donnovan, who instantly recognised the handwriting, opened it in haste, and read as follows: —

"Calcutta, May 5th.

"My dear father,

"By the greatest good fortune I arrived this morning at Calcutta, having obtained leave of absence to quit my post at Benares, and return to Europe for two years. I have been promoted to the rank of colonel, and am in hopes, during my stay in London, whither I shall go first, to be able to obtain a regiment at home; for I am really tired of this terrible hot country, where my

health has greatly suffered. Such are my plans; and, if I can accomplish them, I shall be able to keep nearer to my relations than heretofore. Your letter of last June afforded me the most heartfelt satisfaction; first, to hear that those whom I love best in this world are well; and next, that you, my dear father, have become at length contented with a retirement which I long to visit.

"Now, my dear father, I must inform you, that I shall sail from this port for London in the course of a few days, where I shall probably arrive shortly after you receive my letter. I beseech you to write to me immediately, to the care of my bankers, Messrs. Ransom and Co., Pall Mall, and let me know your wishes; whether I am first to visit Ireland to see my uncle, or come over to you? I shall await your orders in London, as I know not exactly whether you wish me to go to Ireland or not."

"A dutiful and affectionate son, cousin," said Donnovan, as the tear trembled in his deep blue eye.

Then turning to his wife, he exclaimed, "Thank God! my dear, our son James will spare us the trouble of going to Europe: his letter has relieved me of a duty that would have been exceedingly irksome to my feelings. I shall send him, by the first opportunity, an ample power of attorney, and Ellen must do the same. All will

now be as well done as if we were to go ourselves."

"Praise be to God!" said Mrs. Donnovan. "You see, my love, how much better matters have turned out than you anticipated. Our son will do every thing, and we shall remain where we are, in peace and contentment."

Ellen and Charles, who had just returned from the river, laden with a full basket of golden, crimson-spotted trout, were in ecstasies at this unexpected news; for the idea of a separation had evidently depressed the spirits of both.

"Long life and success to the colonel, our noble young master!" shouted Patrick.

His master took the hint, and immediately handed him a tumbler of punch to drink the Colonel's health; and we all filled our glasses with the same intent.

"Now," said I, "since it is decided that you are to remain in America, I am not afraid to show you a poetical effusion of mine;" and, drawing a paper from my pocket, I handed it to my cousin. His eyes glistened and filled with tears as he glanced at the title; then, after a short pause, with great feeling and emphasis he read aloud as follows: —

AH! WHERE GROWS THE MYRTLE!

Response of the Genius of Ireland to one of her exile America.

Ah! where grows the myrtle, the green myrtle tree
Whose branches I robb'd when a boy?
Its sprigs and sweet flow'rets, blooming for me,
I placed in my bosom with joy.
Oh! learn, son of Erin, thy favourite grows
Far, far on the banks of the Lee,
Whose soft murmuring current mourns, as it flows,
Thine absence beyond the salt sea.

There shamrocks, green ivy, and white blossom'd th
With bright yellow furze, fresh and gay,
Impearl'd with the glittering dew drops of morn,
Exhale their sweet odours to May.
But, ah! long-lost son, all those beauties you prize,
Which cover thy dear native land,
Cruel agents and hard-hearted landlords despise —
They fade by oppression's hard hand.

Slowly home pace the herds, and seem to partake
The gloom that diffuses around;
No gay wedding songs, nor the poor peasant's wake
To the lively shrill bagpipes resound!
The trumpet's hoarse blast, spreading direful alarms
Now bursts on the genial gales;
And the roll of the drum, beating promptly to arms
Resounds through my once peaceful vales.

Then cease, thou poor exile, to think of thy groves,
Of youth's fondest transports the scene, —
Of thy fairy delights, thy rambles, thy loves,
Of the gay evening dance on the green!

From all art thou banish'd; — may God be thy guide
Thy soul here indignant would burn:
In peace may thy bones in a strange land abide,
In bliss may thy spirit return!

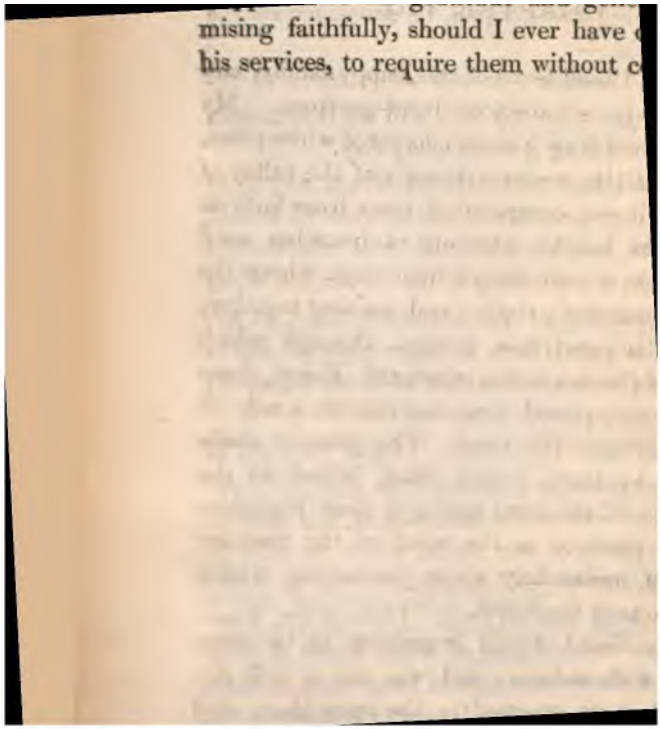
W. Brabazon.

After reading this effusion, he shook me by the hand, and said,—

"Thanks, brother! it will often serve to remind me of you: for my wife will set it to music, and Ellen shall sing it to us every day."

The period had now arrived when, owing to my military engagements, it was necessary I should bid adieu to my kind-hearted and affectionate relatives. On the morning of my departure, when we were assembled at the breakfast table, in addition to the usual fare, a large plate of buckwheat cakes, and another full of fresh honey in the comb, were placed before us.

"Cousin," said Donnovan, "I got the meal of which those cakes are made from the mill yesterday; it, as well as the honey, is of this season, — the first fruits of our fields, which we offer to our blood relation. All we regret is the necessity of parting with him so soon. Once more, however, let me remind you of what I owe to your father; and if ever you should have need of help, in any way, half of what I possess is at your disposal. I have taught my children to think with gratitude of their great uncle, your father: I am persuaded they will fulfil my wishes, in dividing with you their property, if you should have need of it, when I am numbered with the dead."


mising faithfully, should I ever have
his services, to require them without

CHAPTER VIII.

I SIGHED as I took leave of this happy family, and moved slowly on towards head-quarters. My road lay through an immense forest of white pines, that skirted the western division of the valley of Ligonier: it was composed of trees from forty to fifty feet in height, destitute of branches until within three or four feet of their tops, where the foliage is extremely thick; and, uniting together, forms an impenetrable canopy, through which the rays of the sun never penetrate. Below, there is so little underwood, that one can see a mile all around between the trees. The gloomy shade produced by these tufted pines, joined to the murmuring of the wind amongst their branches, is apt to produce in the mind of the traveller feelings of melancholy whilst journeying within the precincts of the forest.

I really found myself beginning to be overwhelmed with sadness; and was not a little delighted when we emerged in the open plain, and in a few minutes after beheld, sparkling in the sunbeams, the clear and rapid waters of the Juniata, whose romantic banks appeared doubly beautiful and interesting when contrasted with the sombre spot we had just quitted.

We made a good day's journey, and slept in a dirty log-house upon the floor, in the same apartment with all the family, there being only one room besides the kitchen; and, though they supplied us with clean straw, the fleas pestered me so that I had but little rest. My servant Thomas, who suffered in a similar manner, ran out into the open air, where he undressed himself, and having shaken his clothes, he put them on again; after which he walked about until breakfast time, to keep himself free from the tormenting vermin. I was obliged to follow his example before I could find peace from their bites; and the moment we had done breakfast, I bade adieu to "Flea Hall."

About midday we arrived at head-quarters, where I had the satisfaction of receiving an affectionate welcome from my guardian. He immediately took me with him to the commander-in-chief; who, after a polite reception, informed me I was appointed to the rank of deputy quarter-master-general of the cavalry; and that I must commence duty on the morrow. The rest of the day I spent with my guardian, who was highly pleased with the description I gave him of Donnovan, his residence, and his noble feelings and sentiments.

I found many of my brother officers very decent, gentlemanly men, whilst others were perfect clowns; coarse, vulgar fellows, with whom I never associated except when on duty.

Whenever we became attached to the vanguard, then, indeed, I found myself in congenial society; because there was a volunteer corps of gentlemen in that part of the army, many of whom had been my intimate acquaintances at Philadelphia; and we now renewed our former friendship. They were a set of young bachelors; merry fellows, who were determined to be happy under all the vicissitudes of a soldier's life; and performed a campaign of about three hundred and forty English miles, and back again, on foot, with a cheerfulness and courage truly remarkable for men who had been educated in the lap of luxury.

It has been previously stated, that we were employed to quell an insurrection which commenced in the most western parts of the province; the army, therefore, penetrated as far as Washington, and from thence to Fort Pitt, an inconsiderable town at the confluence of the rivers Alleghany and Monangahela, which by their union form the great stream of the Ohio, remarkable for its depth, rapidity, and the fertility of its banks.

Our campaign began at the commencement of the autumn, but did not close until the winter was nearly finished. In passing to the westward, we crossed the Blue Mountains, called by the common people the "Blue Ridge." They extend from south-west to north-east (lessening towards the north), throughout the whole extent of the continent of America. On the northern side

of these mountains, in the month of October, the snow lay several inches thick, and winter reigned in all its severity at their summits; but ere we had descended one third on the southern and western side, spring regaled our senses with its accompanying verdure and flowers. Half way down the declivity we found English raspberries and strawberries in abundance; and on arriving in the plain, the autumnal fruits, such as apples, &c., were still hanging upon the branches. Thus we experienced winter, spring, summer, and autumn in a distance of about fifteen miles from the base on one side, until we arrived at the base on the other.

Having advanced upon the low ground some thirty to forty miles, we were assailed with bad weather. Continuing our march, however, we got a considerable distance ahead of the main body, that was detained by the state of the roads and continual rains. The spot where we were encamped was a flat, surrounded with forests; and the rain fell in such quantities, that we were obliged to dig small canals round our huts, which, notwithstanding, were several times inundated. I ought rather to call them *bush-houses*, for they were constructed with branches of trees, and whatever else we could collect: they proved a bad defence against the weather; for we were drenched to the skin for seven or eight days in succession, until the waggons arrived with our tents.

In this dismal position, with scarcely any thing to eat, constantly wet, and lying on the bare ground, we were only kept alive by a little bread and brandy; which the commissary, with much difficulty, contrived to transport to us through the deep muddy roads, where the waggons frequently stuck fast, and were not extricated without the greatest trouble and labour.

This sort of life brought on a disease that sent several of our corps to their long homes. They were at first afflicted with swelled feet and fingers: these swellings either extended over the body, and produced death, or else what are called *whitlows* or *felons:* and a more painful gathering sore cannot well be imagined. They require to be lanced to the bone, which must be scraped before they heal. I had one on each hand; and, after the first lancing, they gathered again. The surgeon then opened them a second time, and scraped the bone; after which painful operation they quickly disappeared.

To add to our misfortunes, the forests near us were infested with panthers; and we were only defended from their attacks by piquets placed at small intervals. Fires were kept burning during the whole night, and a volley was fired whenever the well-known scream announced the vicinity of these ferocious animals. Several of the horses that strayed into the woods returned badly wounded; while others were actually devoured. The panther is a very dangerous animal; for he

creeps upon his prey like a cat. The hunters, however, who frequented those forests, told us they did not so much fear them by night as by day. In the day time they often lie concealed in a leafy tree, and it is difficult to discover them; but of the darkest night, a panther's eyes can be seen to glare at least twelve to fifteen yards farther than he could spring, and they then shoot him more easily; because, there being nothing visible but the eyes, their aim is certain, and they are sure to hit him in the head. I have been told by experienced hunters, that the eyes of a bear, which are much smaller than those of a panther, also can be seen to shine of a dark night.

We were exceedingly rejoiced when the weather became fair, and the main body of the army drew near enough to permit us to quit a place which had become truly irksome and melancholy, from the recollection of several of our brave companions, who had there met with an untimely grave.

The insurrection being entirely subdued, and having taken about four or five hundred prisoners, we marched forward to Washington and Fort Pitt, where we found ourselves surrounded by a friendly people, who treated us with great kindness and hospitality.

The weather, during our stay, continued mild and steady, although it was now the commencement of winter. A few inches of snow covered the ground, but the sky was clear, and the sun,

in the middle of the day, warm and agreeable. One of my brother officers, whose relations lived in the town, and who had frequently been there before, proposed that several of us should make a shooting excursion with him into the forests on the opposite side of the Alleghany, about twenty miles off, near the banks of the Ohio.

"There," said he, "lives an old acquaintance of mine, a certain Major Semple, who formerly served in the army of the republic. He is a strange, romantic sort of a man, neither savage nor civilised, and who shuns both savage and civilised society. An eccentric being; a fellow of fine talents, good sense, and sound judgment, but differing so entirely in his opinions and habits from any other individual with whom I am acquainted, that I really cannot describe him to you. You must see him and hear him converse, and then form your own opinion. Besides," continued he, "all the way, from the banks of the Alleghany to his dwelling you may amuse yourselves with shooting squirrels, pigeons, wild turkeys, pheasants, &c.; for you are sure of finding them in abundance."

"Enough," said I; "if it were only to see the major, I would walk fifty miles, independent of the attractions of the sport you mention, which would in itself be a sufficient inducement."

"This Major Semple," said my guardian, "I have heard of before; and I am well persuaded there is nothing more curious and interesting in

the neighbourhood than the major and his fortalice. As this gentleman has justly remarked, it is well worth while to hear such an extraordinary man give an account of himself."

"Oh!" said my friend, "you will find him a shrewd, clever fellow; and he sometimes satirises civilised life with great truth and severity. Now, gentlemen," continued he, "I shall expect to see every man with his fowling-piece, and a good supply of powder and shot; with a bottle of some kind of liquor, and a loaf of bread in his havresack. As for meat, we cannot want for it; but bread we must take, our host being a perfect wild man; and, when he happens to have expended his stock of flour, he will live for months on meat and potatoes, without thinking to send for a fresh supply. Of fresh vegetables, he generally possesses an abundance, the produce of his own garden; he having taught his wife, who is a savage, all his knowledge of horticulture. It would be difficult to find a more extraordinary being than Major Semple. He goes clothed like the savages. He is a most unerring marksman; which, added to his connection by marriage with an Indian tribe, as well as his being a skilful hunter and an intrepid warrior, keeps the natives in awe. When he puts his rifle to his shoulder, nothing can escape him. Amongst the aborigines he possesses an extraordinary character for prowess; his isolated castle, therefore, stands secure and unmo-

fested by the hunting tribes, who sometimes pass near to it in their excursions."

This account raised my curiosity to the highest pitch, especially as, being the best marksman of our corps, I felt a secret anxiety to see the famous hunter, who, it was reported, could drive a nail into an oaken plank, by several successive discharges of a rifle-ball, at the distance of one hundred paces.*

Our party, being prepared for an excursion of several days, we at length set out, and I prevailed upon my guardian to accompany us. It was the month of December; and, though the snow lay upon the ground about three or four inches deep, it in nowise impeded our march, or damped our ardour for sporting.

We had each a stock of bread, as my friend proposed; and our canteens were filled with various sorts of wine and cordials; for he assured us they would prove a treat where we were going to take up our quarters.

"The major," said he, "is a sober man, though he likes a glass of whisky, and always keeps a good stock: but those visitors who wish to please him take with them different sorts of wines and liquors, which, after having drunk of his whisky, they beg him to taste. This gratifies him; and he will sometimes drink half a dozen glasses, when he becomes animated; and generally recounts his

* No uncommon feat among the natives of Kentucky at the present day.

extraordinary adventures. If, perchance, a guest should be so imprudent as to produce his own liquor first, and invite the major to drink before he has taken a glass or two of his own whisky, he is offended. He will not refuse the first glass offered to him, but he will take no more, and is silent and sullen during the time the guest remains with him; unless he should be a discerning man, and, discovering the cause, say,—

"'Come, major, you have tasted our liquor, treat us to some of yours.' He then immediately orders the whisky to be produced; and, after a few glasses are drunk, and praised, he forgets the affront, and becomes as gay as ever."

We began our march very early of a cold frosty morning; not, however, before we had first fortified our stomachs with a good breakfast of hot coffee, eggs, buckwheat, cakes and butter, &c. &c. Crossing the river Alleghany, just above its confluence with the Monangahela, we found it extremely rapid, and the water so clear, that, at the depth of three or four fathoms, we could count every stone on the bottom. We were, at first, astonished and alarmed to see the immense rocks, which, in several spots, appeared beneath the water. These, though dispersed all over the bed of the river, instead of being dangerous, are of great utility; for the rapid current, striking against them, is repelled in eddies or counter-currents; and the velocity of the main stream being thus retarded, boats are enabled to pass from one shore

to the other almost in a direct line, or with very little loss. In other parts, where there are no large rocks, vessels are swept down by the current near a mile before they reach the opposite bank.

Having attained the Indian side, as it is called, — for at that time there were no settlements on the western bank, — we proceeded on our excursion towards the château of Major Semple. Our road lay through an interminable range of forests, composed of plane, oak, chestnut, beech, elm, ash, maple, walnut, and several other sorts of trees indigenous to the soil, whose names I cannot express in English, but all of a very large growth. A prodigious quantity of squirrels were to be seen playing amongst the branches of the nut-trees; and pigeons abounded every where in vast flocks.

At length we came to a spot where we found wild turkies*; and there our real sport began. It was only the practised sportsmen and myself, however, who had any great success; the others being too ardent, and bad marksmen withal, only frightened the birds away. We, on the contrary, who went slowly to work, made fierce havoc amongst the feathered race. My young companions were vexed to see me, when three or four of them had missed a bird, coolly take up my stand, and, after allowing the game to run some score and a

* The wild turkey of the American forests generally weighs from twenty to thirty pounds, and is most delicious food. They are almost universally killed with a single ball.

half paces further in advance, quietly bring the rifle to my shoulder, and turn him over upon the green sward, by passing a ball scarcely equalling a cherry stone in size through his body.

Our friend was now obliged to check the ardour of the pursuit; for, having flushed some pheasants, we were marking them down, and following them by quite a different route from that which led to the major's dwelling. However, we were all well loaded with game, and we now determined to continue our march in a direct line.

We kept on at a brisk walk for some hours, and were not a little fatigued with the weight we carried when we arrived at a part of the forest composed entirely of oaks, which our guide told us was not very far from our destination. Indeed, we could see there was a large opening in the trees just before us; but, although so near, our lads seeing the squirrels and pigeons again in great quantities, recommenced their firing.

"There," said our guide, as we stoped to rest ourselves, "there is the major's log-house and fortification, in the centre of a white oak forest, at the foot of a small hill, the only rising ground for several miles round. Its summit defends his house from the north wind, and serves, at the same time, for a fort. The neighbouring country being flat until you get close to the right bank of the Ohio, this eminence is a most commanding position, from whence he can see through the forests for some miles around him."

This military savage as we afterwards learned, happened to return home from a hunting excursion, very late in the day on which we arrived; and, hearing our firing in the forest, in an instant he was on his platform with a spy-glass, to see who they were who dared to shoot within the purlieus of his domain. He first sent out his scout, to reconnoitre the enemy; but, long before the return of the Indian, he had distinguished that we were civilised men, and immediately he came forth with his son, a young lad of about sixteen years old, to meet us.

I was the first who discerned them through the trees; and I exclaimed to my Fort-Pitt friend, who happened to be near me,—

"See! there are a couple of savages approaching us: had we not better collect our scattered forces, lest we should be surprised by them?" Each of our party was provided with a whistle, to employ in case of emergency, and which could be heard in those echoing forests to a very great distance. My companion looked a little alarmed at first; and I had already put my whistle to my mouth, when he stoped me by exclaiming, —

"Hold! I see, now, it is the major and his son. Come, let us hasten towards them." The meeting of my friend with the major and his son was extreemly cordial. When I was introduced to him, he shook me by the hand with a truly savage air; but, on being informed that I was the best marksman at Fort Pitt, or, indeed, in

the army, he eyed me steadily from head to foot, for a second or two, then giving me his hand again, he said, in a mild tone of voice, singularly contrasted with the air of perfect *savagery* that distinguished his deportment, "We must be friends: I respect all those whose courage, skill, and fertility in expedients, enables them to live wherever chance may throw them, without the aid of a butcher, who assassinates cattle as I would a roving savage with my hatchet."

The introduction being over, we moved on towards his castle; and, as we proceeded, I put my call to my lips, and gave a shrill whistle, that was heard far and near through the forest. The major and his son halted instantly, and, unslinging their rifles with a rapid motion, prepared for action. The father, rolling his eagle eye, full of fire, all around, said,—

"What have you seen that alarms you? Is it possible the natives are coming upon us without either I or my son having discovered them?" "Oh, no," said; I "don't mind my whistle: it is the signal we have agreed upon to collect our straggling party, lest they should pass by your residence."

"Very prudently imagined," replied the Major; "for my little fortress, though near at hand, is not easily distinguished through the trees. We had, therefore, better halt until they come up; when I shall conduct you all safely within my

fortifications, where no enemy has ever dared put a foot: for, as yet, I always have been successful in killing or beating off all those who attempted it. Do not conclude, however, that I fire indiscriminately at every wild man who approaches. No! far be it from me to refuse hospitality to those who ask it: I only make war against the depredators, who are a species of outlaws, belonging to no tribe, and the enemies of all."

After another shrill whistle or two, our comrades joined us. My friend introduced each man by name to the Major; who now took a path to the right, and led the way by the nearest route to his dwelling. We followed him in a field, and had scarcely walked a quarter of a mile, when several fine large turkeys were discovered on a tree immediately before us. They stretched out their necks, looked alarmed, and seemed ready to fly, although we all stooped, and were as silent as death. The Major and his son, however, had cocked their rifles, and I was not behind hand; so that we all three fired at the same instant, just as they were about to rise upon the wing. Three fine birds fell to the ground. Our young sportsmen also fired; but their shots were harmless, for they were so long getting ready, that the turkeys had already flown beyond the range of their guns.

The Major having picked up his bird, and the son his also, I went for mine.

"You are really a good marksman," said he; "but you must learn to shoot as I do, and not spoil your game."

Then holding up the turkey, he showed us that he had broke its neck, near to the body; whereas his son and myself had hit ours directly under the wing. Our lads looked at him with astonishment; whilst one or two put on a smile of incredulity, hinting that such shots were generally the effect of accident. This did not go unnoticed by the old forester; who said,—

"I see, gentlemen, you are acquainted with the vulgar proverb, 'a chance shot may kill the devil;' but, come, I'll give you immediately another proof of my skill. Do you see that grey squirrel on yonder tree?"

"We do."

"In what part do you wish me to hit him?"

"In the head," replied several voices at once.

"Very good," said the major, carelessly raising the rifle to his shoulder, without pausing a moment on his aim; and in an instant the animal fell lifeless from the branch. The young men ran and picked it up immediately, and, to their great astonishment, found that one half the head had been carried away by the bullet. They were so delighted with this proof of dexterity, that they gave him three cheers. This seemed to gratify him exceedingly, and led him to make several shots during our march, all with equal success.

This singular man appeared about five feet

eleven inches in height; broad shouldered, robust, and active; with a light complexion, deep blue eyes full of fire, and fine, strongly marked, manly features. His countenance exhibited in the most striking degree an ardent mind, and great intrepidity and independence of soul, mingled with traits of open generosity and good sense.

In conversing with him afterwards, I discovered that he considered what he called his natural rights superior to all the laws and institutions of civilised society.

"These," said he, "were invented by artful men, who, having been chosen chiefs or kings on account of their superior prowess, endeavoured to hand down their prerogatives to their posterity, and created laws and regulations to bind the minds of the human race to their own interested purposes. I, who once respected ancient republics and free governments, have now ceased to entertain the smallest degree of consideration for any but the patriarchal form, in which the power is vested in a single head, and which nature points out to man in all her works. I roam at large in the forests of my native land, paying no taxes or submission to any power but the almighty Ruler of this wonderful universe. Here, you will see, I have a family, consisting of my wife and son, my wife's brother, and his wife and daughter, who choose to live with me; together with four other Indians, who have voluntarily placed themselves under my protection. All obey me *implicitly;* and thus, you

see, without calling myself such, or making my people feel in the least degraded, I am to all intents and purposes an absolute monarch. I have brought up my son with the same independent sentiments and feelings. You may, perhaps, imagine he is a complete savage; but take the trouble to examine him, and you will find he can read, write, and cipher; and, having studied just enough to be convinced, as I am, that civilised men are wicked, overbearing, cruel, and unjust, he has decided, that the happiest course he can pursue is, to follow in the footsteps of his father. Converse with him, and you will find he can reason on most of those subjects which affect men in your society, although he is so far removed from it. Nor must you imagine, gentlemen, that we have no other companions than the living ones you see about me: when we arrive at our destination, I will show you all its secrets."

We had now got close up to the stakes which surrounded his log-house, or fortress, as I ought to call it, that, really, not only looked formidable, but impregnable also; and, as I saw no gate or opening whatever, I was at a loss to imagine how we were to gain admittance within these wooden walls. After making half the tour of the outworks, he brought us to a spot where the sharp points of two of the stakes had been sawed off; and on them was nailed a small square piece of board. The opening made in this manner was just sufficient to permit a man to pass through

sideways. Here the Major stopped; and taking a small bugle out of his pocket, he blew it loudly. In a few seconds after, a rope-ladder, fastened to the stakes on the inner side, was thrown over to us.

"Come, gentlemen," said he, "I'll show you the way; and do you, Harry," addressing himself to his son, "bring up the rear, and haul up the ladder after you."

He then ascended, and was over the stakes in an instant; we followed his example, and on the other side found some wooden steps, by which we descended into the inclosure. This was also a moveable ladder; and the moment the youth had descended, he laid it flat upon the ground. We now found ourselves within a considerable square, where there was a garden, and a small orchard of apple and other fruit trees, all apparently kept in good order. On one side of the space, were small out-houses built for the horses and cattle, several of which lay basking in the sun before the door.

"These animals," said Semple, pointing to the cows, "we keep for the sake of their milk, and the horses are necessary to bring home our large game, and make distant expeditions; or to send to some of the neighbouring towns, to purchase amunition, tea, sugar, coffee, &c. &c. They only cost me the trouble of sending one of my Indians every day with them to the pastures, for you will see my stock of hay is too small to last them through the winter."

"But," said my guardian, "how do they get in and out of this formidable inclosure?"

"Oh," replied he, "I have a secret door at the back of the fort that cannot be discovered from the outside, because the palisades have been sawed off below the ground, which, being higher outside than within, the gate opens internally, with stakes fast to it; so that, when shut, it is impossible to distinguish the stakes which are sawed from those adjoining them. Besides, at the first moment of an hostile alarm, my people hasten to lower down two immense bars into sockets made purposely to receive them, and which stretch across the gate. These are so strong and heavy that they can only be hoisted and lowered down with tackles."

After examining the outhouses, magazines, &c. we mounted the eminence against which the log-house was built, by an easy flight of steps cut into the side of the hill, and covered with green sods. Some lofty tulip poplars, chesnuts, and oaks, were left growing on different parts of the declivity, and at intervals about the platform; but in such a position that they did not impede the range of the guns.

Upon the platform we found every thing in complete military array. The cannon balls and all the implements for serving the artillery were piled up regularly in their places at its four corners, where there were also rings and ropes for hauling the guns to whatever side they might be used most advan-

tageously. At the back of the platform was a green mound with a door in it, which the Major, pulling a key from his pocket, unlocked for our inspection.

"This," said he, "is my powder magazine. It is sufficiently stocked to enable me to stand a siege of a month; firing every day two or three hundred rounds. But such a circumstance can never happen as long as I have no other enemies to encounter than the wild inhabitants of these forests; for if the savages cannot conquer at the first or second onset, they go off without further disturbance. Depending almost wholly upon hunting for their daily provisions, were these wanderers to continue any length of time in the same spot, they would be certain to perish through starvation."

The powder was in kegs, and there was besides a large stock of cartridges ready made.

The Major continued:—"My family consists of only nine or ten persons, four of whom are women, yet every one of them understands the use of fire-arms and the management of heavy artillery. It is on Sundays, after prayers, that I exercise my little garrison. My wife is now cooking; but no matter. I will at once give you a specimen of the activity, skill, and discipline of my troops."

So saying, he blew his horn in a particular manner, and in a few seconds afterwards the

whole family were on the ramparts, where they stood in silence until he exclaimed,—

"Loose the breechings from No. 1, and go through the exercise of loading and firing it!"

His orders were obeyed with an alacrity that surprised us, particularly by the women, who seemed even more active than the men. He then drew them up in a small file, making them load and fire their muskets, which they performed with as much skill and regularity as the best trained soldiers.

We now complimented him on the steadiness and discipline of his army; and, from all we saw, it was evident that this little phalanx, behind their impregnable stakes, were an overmatch for some thousands of ignorant savages.

"You see," said the Major, "that my piquet fence, where the stakes are twelve feet above the surface of the ground and set close together, the tops being sharpened and hardened in the fire, is alone sufficient to protect me from a surprise."

"Could they not be pulled up or overturned by a party of men who might steal upon you unawares?" said one of the party.

"No," replied he; "the butts of the whole are more than double the thickness of their tops, and they are set in a trench three feet deep, so that it would require a very strong power applied to the upper part to overturn them; and as to pulling them up, it would be almost impossible, for the earth being beat down hard upon them, it has now become

as solid as if it had never been dug. Besides, we keep a good look-out. My herdsman, who attends my cattle and horses, is always armed, and is one of the bravest, most expert, and quick-sighted hunters I ever knew. When he sallies forth in the morning his eagle eye pierces at once every quarter of the forest. Not a leaf can move without attracting his attention. Whilst he is making his observations all around, the herd stand still, nor attempt to move forwards until he gives them the signal. If he perceives no symptoms of danger, he speaks to them, moves on, and the cattle follow him. They know well he is not only their guide, but their protector; having frequently seen him kill panthers, bears, wolves, and buffalos, that ventured to prowl about their pasture grounds.

"On arriving at the centre of the bottoms* where they are to feed, he seeks out a large tree, which he ascends to what is called the crotch, or that part from whence the upper branches diverge to form the top. Protected by his buffalo skin thrown over his shoulders, and his warm deer-skin boots, he sits in this position, as you would in an armed chair. Being generally forty to fifty feet above the surface of the soil, he has a commanding view all around, and quickly discovers enemies of the

* Amongst the interminable forests, on the western side of the Ohio, the rich savannahs that lie along the banks of that river are called bottoms. On these the wild, or buffalo clover, as it is called, grows in abundance, and is found green even in winter, beneath the snow and leaves.

human species, as well as all predatory animals or game which may approach his herd. Scarcely a day passes that he does not bring home a deer, racoons, turkies, pheasants, &c. to supply our table. When he first goes out in the morning, he can tell by the leaves and snow, or by examining the small bushes when there is no snow, whether men or any other animals have passed near his haunt. Should he, from his look-out tree, discern a panther creeping upon his herd, he never moves from his position, awaiting patiently until the animal is within shot. At other times, before he can see the panther, the horses smell him, and show signs of fear. My savage then descends suddenly; and, covered with his buffalo-hide, he creeps cautiously amongst the herd, where he endeavours to discover the panther and kill him before he can spring upon his prey. Once, a small party of marauders—I mean those wild savages who belong to no regular tribe—came to attack my pallisades. My son, the herdsman, one of the women, and myself, happened to be out in the woods. We had killed a couple of deer, and were bringing them home. When within a quarter of a mile of our habitation, being tired, we sat down to rest ourselves; and my son observing a number of squirrels running up and down the trees at some distance from the spot where we had stopped, proposed to go and kill a few, for it being early in the autumn, we had not yet met with any. Whilst he was in the act of loading

his rifle, the herdsman, suddenly starting up, left us, and advanced rapidly about fifty paces to the right. All eyes were now directed towards the spot to which he had proceeded, when we saw him wave his hand to enjoin us to be still and silent. In an instant after he made a signal for us to hide ourselves, and came creeping up to me on all-fours. On getting near, he whispered softly, that a party of about fifty or sixty savages were making for the fort.

"'Now,' said he, 'let you and I dog them carefully: your son and the woman can load the rifles as fast as we can fire; and, by keeping ourselves closely concealed, they will take us for a numerous party, and will soon be off.'

"I followed his advice, and by the time they had got within sight of the pallisades, we had already killed twelve of them without their being able to discover us; for he fired on one flank and I on another, then in the rear, and then in the front of them: and now my wife, hearing the report of our guns, mounted the platform with the rest of the family, and, discovering the savages, she levelled a field-piece at them, loaded with grape-shot. This decided the business; for they immediately fled, taking their killed and wounded with them, as usual; except one poor fellow, whom we found alive the next morning. I took him home and cured him, and he has lived with me ever since. Since then I have had but one serious battle, and that was in our own defence also: it was

from the platform and loop-holes inside the stakes. A tribe, the enemies of my father-in-law, that had been defeated several times by him and his warriors, were determined to take my fortress, which they conceived would be a most advantageous post for them to hold.

"With this intent they came, to the number of about two hundred men, armed with rifles and bows and arrows, to a place about five miles from my dwelling, at the moment when Raven, the herdsman, was despatched to meet a party of backwoodsmen *, about fifteen in number, who had previously sent to ask me to accompany them on a beaver-hunting excursion. Lest they should pass by my dwelling and go there in my absence, I made Raven watch their motions, for some of them also are bad fellows; but my protection, as son-in-law to a great chief in the neighbourhood, was necessary to them in case of meeting any of the savages. Fortunately my cautious Raven discovered the footsteps of our enemies, and traced them to the spot where they had agreed to meet in council. He crept near enough to overhear some of their conversation, and then returned as quickly as possible to meet the backwoodsmen. When he fell in with them, he had the prudence to say nothing of what he had discovered, only begged them not to stop to hunt any where, but

* The whites, who live on the borders of the territory of the aborigines, are so called. They are generally men who acknowledge no government, and depredate upon the savages.

hasten to join me, for that I had some very important news to communicate. They complied, and, by a forced march, arrived here the night before the attack. The moment Raven saw me, he gave me a sign that I understood; and I went out to converse with him immediately after the party were received within my dwelling. He then communicated what he had seen and heard, and advised me to tell the backwoodsmen that the Indians, having discovered our intention of going to kill beavers and otters, had determined first to destroy my fort and every one in it, and then to fall upon and murder them.

"'If you don't tell them so,' said he, 'they won't fight against this tribe, for fear of establishing a feud with them for ever.'

"I thanked my faithful herdsman, and told him to take my son with him, as soon as he was a little refreshed, and make ample preparations to give our foes a warm reception.

"As the backwoodsmen had been expected, my wife had a good supper prepared, and I treated them liberally to whiskey. After supper, one of them, who seemed a prudent, steady fellow, said,—

"'Major, your man Raven hinted you had something of importance to tell us; so come, there couldn't be a better time than the present; let us know what it is.'

"'As soon,' I replied, 'as you sent to ask me to

accompany you to the beaver and otter haunts, I despatched Raven to discover whether any of the savage people were going that way, and what my own tribe proposed to do at the commencement of the hunting season. The information he brought me is this: the Shawnessee have found out our intention, and sworn destruction to us. They are 200 strong. They mean to attack my fort first, and, after taking it, to fall upon and murder your whole party. As to-morrow is the day fixed for commencing their operations, for they are now within five miles of us, I sent Raven to hasten your march, so that you might escape falling in with them by arriving to-night. To-morrow you will be all refreshed; and, only play your rifles handsomely from the loop-holes, whilst I give them round and grape from my field-pieces on the platform, were they a thousand strong, I should not fear to beat them off.'

"'Thank ye, thank ye, Major,' said a dozen voices at once; 'we are grateful for this friendly action, and will fight for you whilst a drop of blood is left in our bodies.'

"'Here's health and long life, Major!' said the head man, quaffing off a large glass of whiskey-punch, an example which they all most religiously followed.

"They all then retired for the night. A little before daylight, Raven promised to go over the palisades into the forest, and bring me the first news of the enemy's approach. The night passed

off undisturbed, and we had all drank our coffee before Raven made his appearance.

" ' The Shawnessees are near,' cried he, as he hurried into the apartment; ' every man to his post! I hear their footsteps.'

" We both hastened to the platform, where, as you have seen, our parapet is so high it defended us from the rifle shots of the savages, whilst we got our four pieces well loaded, and pointed through the embrasures directly opposite to the spot where Raven had heard the sound of their steps, and where, as he had said, they actually made their appearance in a few minutes, uttering the most hideous yells. They came up slowly at first; but when they got within about sixty yards of the stakes, and were about to quicken their pace, I gave them the four pieces at once, which made a lane through their ranks, and threw them into the most terrible disorder. My backwoodsmen were not idle whilst we were charging; and as you have seen how rapidly we perform our exercises, you will readily believe we were prepared before the head warriors could rally their men. The second volley put an end to the battle; for, after giving one of their infernal whoops, they decamped with their wounded and several of their dead; but, notwithstanding, they left about thirty men on the field. These we buried, with the assistance of the backwoodsmen; to whom, in return for their services, we gave part of the booty,

which consisted of rifles, hatchets, knives, belts, &c. Then, holding a council of war, it was agreed that we should send two of their company with Raven to trace the enemy, and endeavour to ascertain if they had returned home, or whether they meant to attack us again. When the herdsman was informed of our decision, he refused to go with the white men, because they were too strong-headed, and, by acting contrary to his advice, might be the cause of all of them being killed.

"'Let me go," said he, "by myself, and I promise, before the great luminary has set three times, to bring you sure intelligence of their movements.'

"He then equipped himself with a rifle, and a bow and arrows; and, with a small bottle of whiskey, and a piece of cold meat in his wallet, off he started.

"Punctual to his promise, on the morning of the third day he was already at home. He related that, after a forced march of a day and a night, the following morning he discovered the tracks of the Indians, who conveyed their wounded companions in litters. They were about eighty strong, and he counted to the number of fifteen litters. When they halted, on the edge of a thick swamp, he made a little circuit, and crept through the bushes near enough to overhear their conversation. They talked about the destructive fire

that came from the field-pieces and the loop-holes almost at the same time; and wondered how it could have happened when there was such a small number of men.

"'I told you all before,' said an elderly warrior, 'that you were rushing upon death. In the first place, if the white men had let us come up to their stakes, we never could have scaled them all at once; and besides, I knew they had cannon, which I have before seen carry destruction through our ranks when of old we fought against them. Let us return home, and say nothing about our expedition; for if his father-in-law, our sworn enemy, hears of it, he will attack us again, and then our miserable tribe, already reduced to a few hundreds, will be extirpated from the face of the earth.'

"'From what the old warrior said, I think there is no reason to dread another attack; so you may go on your hunting party as soon as you please, and I 'll answer for the safety of your house.'

"We started early the next morning; stayed several days; got a great many good furs, and returned safe with them. Since that period none of the tribes have ever dared to attack me. I am, however, not the less cautious; and, whenever we discover signs of hunters or stragglers, the night-watches are regularly set. In ordinary times we have but one sentinel, who is relieved every four hours during the day, and every two

hours by night. This duty is performed by all the men of the family; I take my turn, as well as the rest, and we find it advantageous in more ways than one. Occasionally, a herd of deer or buffalos pass within gun-shot of the stakes: if it be a light night, the sentinel awakes the whole family, and we thus obtain a supply of provisions without much trouble or fatigue."

CHAPTER IX.

We descended from the platform through a trap-door by the private stairs, as the Major called them, into a corridor that ran through the centre of the building, one half of which served as a store room, and was lighted at the end; whilst the other portion led to the four small apartments occupied by the family. A fifth, which extended over one quarter of the whole building, served the double purpose of a kitchen and dining-room.

Though the house could not boast much neatness in its arrangements, it was decent enough, considering the manner of life of its inhabitants. The exterior was whitewashed; and the windows being tolerably large, it had a light and gay appearance.

On the walls of the Major's bed-room were displayed an ample collection of muskets, rifles, cutlasses, pistols, tomahawks, &c. forming a complete armoury. Here, also, hung the standard or colours of his citadel; which, he told me, were always hoisted to a staff fixed on the parapet, near Gun No. 1., on Sundays and holidays, or when an enemy appeared in sight.

Besides the above-mentioned weapons, ther-

was a bundle of unusually long pikes, which he employed against any hostile attempt to scale the pallisades.

The greatest order and regularity reigned in his family. Before the door stood a sun-dial, which enabled him to correct the time of an enormous silver watch that hung at his side in a pouch formed of opossum-skin; and, from its size and antique fashion, had most probably been a heir-loom in his family for many generations: by it all the operations of the household were regulated. They rose at four in the morning, both in summer and winter, breakfasted at six, dined at twelve, supped at six in the evening, and at eight o'clock retired to rest. He had always plenty of tea, coffee, and sugar in his house, to treat his guests, but the family seldom took any thing but milk. Being only two or three miles in a direct line from the Ohio, and having a seine-net, with angling rods, lines, &c. in abundance, he readily supplied himself with a delicious variety in his ordinary diet whenever he felt inclined. The fish of that river, as I have already noticed, are enormous; and the Major assured me he had seen one species, called by the natives the cat-fish, which in other American rivers rarely exceeds three or four pounds, caught there, weighing from forty to seventy pounds.

As we arrived late, and our visit, as well as the Major's return, was unexpected, we had full time to examine his fortress and make the tour of his

possessions before dinner was announced: however, we were happy enough when his wife came to tell us it was ready; for exercise had rendered our appetites sufficiently keen.

A couple of long oak tables, scoured perfectly clean and white, large enough to accommodate us all, had been joined together, and we dined off them without a table-cloth. "Gentlemen," said the host, "you must excuse our lack of table linen, for this simple reason,—we have none; nor do I think it would add much to the flavour of our repast."

The whole party, who were delighted with this singular and primitive entertainment, exclaimed together that he was perfectly right, as they were soldiers, who looked not to such superfluous luxuries. There were a few earthen plates; but the greater part of both plates and dishes were of beech wood, very white and clean.

Our dinner consisted of four dishes of meat, besides an ample supply of potatoes, turnips, and carrots. The first was squirrel soup, which proved excellent, the flesh being white and tender as chicken, and of a very delicate flavour. Indeed it could not well be otherwise, for those animals live entirely on nuts. After this course a turkey was placed before us, so large, that when it stood in the centre of the table we could hardly see the heads of our companions on the opposite side: it weighed *thirty-four English pounds*.

My companion now produced his stock of bread,

and the Major thanked him, but observed,—"You know well we wild people don't think of those delicacies, as long as we have meat and fresh vegetables in abundance."

Scarcely had the turkey been half eaten, when an immense stewed cat-fish made its appearance; and this was succeeded by a large and very fine-flavoured quarter of venison. The cat-fish had of course been cut in pieces by the cook, but, originally, it could not have weighed less than twenty pounds. Our host produced his apple whiskey immediately that we sat down to table, and it was tasted and praised unanimously; for, in fact, it is much more palatable, though perhaps not so wholesome as that made from rye. When the dinner was about half concluded, I said, "Come, Major, we have drank of your whiskey, which is excellent; now I hope you will do us the favour to taste the contents of our canteens, in which we have brought cherry brandy, and a few other cordials."

"With all my heart," replied he: "having drunk of my liquor, I cannot refuse to taste of yours; though I am not fond of cordials, nor, indeed, of any spirit unmixed with water."

It was truly pleasing to see that, while leading the life of a savage, he still practised the civilised virtue of moderation. Our dinner ended with a dessert, consisting of fine wild berries peculiar to the American woods, sprinkled with powdered sugar, which the women had gathered and pre-

served. After dinner hot apple whiskey toddy was introduced; and when we had done ample justice to this agreeable potation, it was proposed that we should retire early to rest, and the following morning accompany him in an excursion to a bottom near the Ohio, where he thought we should find both deer and buffalos.

"As for squirrels, pigeons, and turkeys," said he, "those are plentiful at all times; but the larger and nobler game has lately become scarcer than of old, owing to the constant advances of the backwoodsmen; and I fear I shall soon be obliged to construct a new fortress some forty or fifty miles beyond their haunts. Besides," added he, "they are worse than savages: more barbarous and inhuman, cunning and treacherous; and I should long since have been murdered by them, if my father-in-law had not declared, that the moment they attempted the slightest outrage, he would annihilate the whole race on his frontiers."

After drinking success to our next morning's expedition, we rose from table, which, with the benches, were now cleared off by the women; and in less than ten minutes, the floor was covered with bear, deer, and buffalo skins. Several of the party had brought their blankets with them, and those who had not, were furnished by the Major, who always kept a large stock; for with them he frequently purchased the richest furs from the savages.

A noble fire was kindled in the chimney, and we slept soundly and comfortably after the previous day's march.

Hearing the Major and his family stirring at a very early hour, we quitted our rough beds; and in a few minutes the women cleared the room of the skins and blankets, and the tables, benches, &c. were as quickly replaced in order for breakfast.

Our host greeted us politely, telling us he had ordered coffee and tea to be immediately prepared; "for," said he, "we shall probably have a long walk, as Raven has discovered the tracks of a herd of buffalos some miles farther down the river, and advises me to go there. In his way home, the day before you arrived, he killed a young one that had strayed from the herd, part of which I have ordered to be cooked for our dinner when we return."

Breakfast being over, and all our arrangements completed, we set out for the banks of the Ohio; but, before we started, the Major, with the amiable garrulity of age, assembled the party in a circle around him, and addressed us with the following additional instructions: —

"Now, gentlemen, there is every probability you will meet with abundance of squirrels, pigeons, turkeys, &c.; but I must warn you not to fire at them, as we are going in search of nobler game, which the report of your guns will assuredly frighten away. When we wild people go out to

kill deer, bears, and buffalos, we creep along silently and cautiously: the moment we discover, by their tracks, that we are to windward of our prey, we make a circuit to reach the opposite direction. Without this precaution, their sense of smelling is so exquisite, it would be impossible ever to approach them within rifle distance."

We listened with deference to this old and experienced sportsman; and it was agreed that we should separate into three parties: one being led by the Major, to which I belonged; another by a native hunter attached to his household; and the third by his son.

The old fellow seemed mightily pleased that I was with him; and said to me softly, "Should we fall in with a herd, we will plant these young lads where they can't spoil our sport, and take care of the main chance ourselves."

Before starting, he gave minute directions to his son and his hunter how they were to manage, so as to meet us at a certain well-known spot not far from the banks of the river.

Matters thus arranged, we proceeded on our excursion in "Indian file," as it is called; that is, one behind the other, and in perfect silence. We soon lost sight of the other two parties, who were pursuing a different route, and had already made some miles without seeing any large game, though we were all eyes and ears. Our leader stopped frequently, sometimes climbing a small tree and looking all around, and at other times he

lay flat on his belly and put his ear to the ground. The snow scarcely covered the leaves which had fallen thick upon the surface, but the effect it had in conveying sounds was very remarkable. To this our attention was immediately directed; and the Major, whose quickness and sagacity in every thing appertaining to the chace I had never seen equalled, after lying flat for some moments, with his ear to the snow, stood up and beckoned us to him.

"Now," said he, "hearken attentively, and tell me if you hear any thing peculiar; any sound different from the screaming of birds, or the tapping of the woodpecker." *

We listened, but could distinguish no extraordinary noise; nothing, in fact, but the sounds he alluded to, and the murmuring of the breezes, which sighed gently through the trees.

Again he said,—

"Lay yourselves flat upon the snow; and, when all around seems perfectly still, put your ear to the earth, and tell me what you discover."

We did so; and after remaining a while in this position, he asked the young lads who accompanied us, for they were the most inexperienced sportsmen, what they heard. One of them immediately said, "There was a distant sound,

* These birds pick worms from the body of the tree, and sometimes peck so hard with their beaks as to be heard at a considerable distance, especially through a forest.

something resembling an animal scraping and snorting."

"On which side of you?"

"On the left."

"You are right," said he; and we all now declared we had heard a similar noise.

"Gentlemen sportsmen," he continued, "this is the noise of a herd of buffalos, in a bottom to our left, from whence the wind blows, scraping off the snow and feeding upon the wild herbage, which we call buffalo clover. This herd, you will find, are nearly a quarter of a mile from us: to creep near them requires the greatest caution; in fact, it cannot be done by such a party as ours; we must, therefore, divide, and manage the business like expert hunters. I shall keep Mr. Brabazon with me, because I have already observed that he handles his rifle like a sure marksman; and do you, gentlemen, make a circuit, walking briskly for twenty minutes at least; then stop, and either place yourselves in a group so as to fire all together, or else pick out a tree each of you; climb to where you can sit conveniently, and so fire from thence; for if you should be scattered singly through the forest, and the old bulls meet you after the herd has been once shot at, they will attack you, and they are very fierce and dangerous. For my own part, I would a great deal sooner have to do with a bear than with one of them. We shall remain here twenty minutes by Mr. Brabazon's watch before we start, so as to

make sure that you have reached your station. It will easily be recognised by its vicinity to the river, which will be visible from your position in the trees, and from the many large tulip poplar, chestnut, and beech trees that grow there. When you hear the report of our rifles, keep a good look-out for the herd, which will pass by; and, if you fire deliberately and with caution, so large an object as a buffalo can hardly escape you."

After these ample instructions, our comrades set off full of expectation, and we remained where we were, until, by my watch, the twenty minutes had run out. I then asked my companion whether the buffalos might not escape whilst we were waiting.

"Oh, no!" said he. "Don't you perceive that the frost being pretty severe last night, has hardened the surface of the snow, which, by the bye, is the reason why we heard them scraping at such a distance? and unless bears or wolves should attack them, they will continue on the bottom, until the sun gets up and softens the snow, so that they can eat their bellies-full. I have directed my son to the deer-haunts, two miles farther up the river; and now there being no one to interrupt us, we will take our time, and make sure of our game. When I begin to creep upon the herd, do you exactly follow my example, crawling on all-fours, except where the large trees intervene and conceal you; for as we are luckily to the leeward of them, they cannot smell us: but their

sense of hearing is also very acute. You must, therefore, accelerate your motions when you see them scraping and eating; but, when they stop, do you lie still, always taking care to keep so that we can see each other. One of the bulls constantly keeps watch whilst the rest are feeding. Regard him, therefore, particularly, and the instant you see his eyes turned towards your side of the forest, lie as flat and still as possible, for he can see the smallest leaf that moves for a hundred and fifty yards around him. An old bull generally stands near the young heifers: I shall crawl directly for him, and you must do the same. When near enough, select a heifer as your mark, and prepare your rifle, but don't fire until I have shot and begun to reload; for they never run off until their sentinel leads the way, and you shall see me bring down a heifer close by his side. Exasperated at this, we shall see him cut some curious capers before he goes off: recharge your rifle with all possible despatch, and again let me caution you to lie concealed the whole time, otherwise he will certainly attack us. It is easy to distinguish the bull that keeps sentinel from the other males of the herd; for, whilst the rest are feeding, he stands with his head erect, snuffing the air, and frequently stamping and scraping, without attempting to feed, until he sees some other bull, who has satisfied his hunger, take the watch. Each male has a separate party of cows under his protection, these poor animals havin

to guard against many enemies besides man, who is, perhaps, the least formidable of them all.

"As you creep along, stop now and then, and look cautiously into the trees, panthers being often crouched amongst the branches, when they lie in wait to spring upon the first stray buffalo that comes to feed beneath; and they might pounce upon you as being the nearest prey."

After this long harangue, I felt so well instructed in the art, that I told him he might rely upon my exactness and promptitude in following his directions; and off we set at a good brisk pace. Having got, as the Major supposed, too near to continue walking upon them, he listened again, and then motioned me to creep on all-fours. He began, and I quickly followed.

After proceeding thus for about fifty paces, another sign intimated that the game was in sight; and the major, silently grasping my arm, drew me to his side, and cautiously pushing aside the branches of a large chestnut tree, behind which we were both crouching, in a moment I distinctly saw the whole herd grazing in the centre of a beautiful grassy lawn, formed by an opening in the forest, that encircled it like a girdle.

"Now," said my companion, "this were an admirable stand for our purpose, but I fear the rifles could hardly be depended upon at such a distance; push on, therefore, and get yonder tuft of large trees between us and the old leader. In about a quarter of an hour, or perhaps less, (for

though the distance in a straight line was but small, our circuitous method of advancing had augmented it at least twenty-fold,) we shall be near enough."

Resuming our route on all-fours with the utmost circumspection, we presently reached a small grove of lofty oak and chestnut trees, which occupied one end of the pasture where the animals were feeding.

Very fortunately, something on the opposite side of the forest had attracted the notice of their wary sentinel, so that he rarely turned his head towards us, but seemed greatly agitated and enraged; for he snuffed the air, snorted, stamped, and scraped up the snow with his right foreleg. During this pause, I was struck with admiration at the symmetry and beauty of his form. He was a majestic animal, of a deep brown colour, bordering on black; and when he stretched forth his neck whilst snuffing the air, during which he moved his head in a half circle, his dewlap nearly swept the ground, and his sleek glossy hide shone and glistened in the sun like the finest satin, or as if it had been covered with varnish. Indeed, I was so lost in admiration of the beauty of the whole herd, that I remained, nearly a minute, quite absorbed; nor recollected that I came there to kill them, until, turning my eyes towards the Major, I observed him rise slowly from his crouching position, and, kneeling upon one knee, bring the rifle to his shoulder. I therefore

adjusted my own piece, and watched his motions from behind an immense oak tree, that covered me completely. In a few seconds after, a heifer fell to his shot. Agreeably to his instructions, the moment I saw him begin to load, I also fired, and killed a heifer close by the bull. We still concealed ourselves behind the oaks, whilst the leader of the herd, whose eyes seemed to dart fire, galloped round his fallen companions, tearing up the earth with his horns, and exhibiting indications of the most desperate fury. The rest of the herd raised their heads aloft in great alarm, and for a few seconds stood motionless; when the Major, firing a second shot, brought another buffalo to the ground. The herd, now, curling their tails on their backs, and tossing their heads high in the air, scampered off at full speed; and at length, to my great joy, the old bull followed them; for, latterly, he had turned several times to our side of the forest, as if suspicious his enemies were concealed in that direction.

The Major, who all this time lay still as a mouse, and had fired the second shot stretched upon his belly, now leaped upon his feet, exclaiming,—

"Bravo, Walter! you are a capital shot; but you ought to have killed another of the herd. Come, let us go examine our game." On reaching the place where they lay, we found that the last buffalo still showed some signs of life. The Ma-

jor, who appeared an adept in all the mysteries of the hunter's craft, drawing a *couteau de chasse* from his belt, stuck the point into the nape of the animal's neck, and, by piercing the spinal marrow, instantly put an end to its sufferings.

This done, "Now," said he, "let us hasten to meet our companions. I'll then send off one of the Indians for a couple of horses to convey our buffalos home before sunset, when the wolves begin to roam about; otherwise we shall find every bone picked as clean as those of the skeletons in a surgeon's dissecting room by morning."

In a short time we rejoined our friends, and learned that the herd had passed by them at a brisk gallop. The greater part of the young hunters were so alarmed, that they took to the trees, whilst those who fired shut their eyes, and consequently did no execution. The Major now despatched his man for the horses, and proposed that we should retrace our steps to meet his son and the rest of the party, who had gone in search of deer. During our walk, the conversation turned upon buffalo-hunting, and our young sportsmen decided that it was much more dangerous and difficult, and infinitely less amusing, than the minor sports of grey squirrel and wild turkey shooting.

"No, no, gentlemen," exclaimed the Major, with all the animation of a veteran sportsman; "the boyish pastime to which you allude bears no

more resemblance to the hunting of bears, buffalos, deer, &c., than a skirmish does to a general action. Where there is difficulty and danger, there skill and courage are required: consequently, when success crowns your efforts, the greater is the glory: and even if you do not succeed, at all events, you will have more honour than where there was nothing to surmount."

By the time we got back to the spot where the buffalos lay, the rest of our comrades joined us. They had fallen in with a herd of deer, of which the Major's son killed one, and one of the worst marksmen of the party another: all the rest missed, and were sorely vexed; but at length consoled themselves with squirrels and pigeons, of which they had bagged a good number.

The deer, which had been previously quartered by young Semple, for the conveniency of carriage, were now placed with the buffalos, to be conveyed home on the horses.

"Come, gentlemen," said the Major, "as far as you know how, you must assist me to skin these animals whilst they are warm, and deprive them of their entrails, which will make them lighter, and at the same time leave a good supper for the wolves."

All our party joined in the work, and in a short time the buffalos were skinned and cut up. They were extremely fat, and I expressed my surprise that they should be in such good condition at that season of the year. On hearing this,

the Major, taking his hatchet, lopped a stout branch from a tree, and, having sharpened and flattened one end of it like a spade, commenced digging away the slight crust of snow and a considerable bed of leaves below it, until he exposed a thick coat of wild grass, mixed with a large species of trefoil called buffalo clover, quite green and luxuriant.

"There, Sir," said he, "look at that, and no longer feel surprised that the cattle feeding here should be fat. Perhaps in the whole globe there is not a richer soil than the one beneath your feet; and, if you had no other proof, it appears to me that these enormous oaks, chestnuts, poplars, beeches, &c. which surround you, are sufficient evidence of the fact."

"You are right, Major," said I; "and I must confess that I have nowhere seen such forests and such a soil as on the western side of the Aleghany mountains."

On the arrival of the horses, our game was thrown across them, and all being now pretty well tired, we returned homewards by the most direct route. The conversation during dinner was so entirely occupied by subjects connected with shooting, fishing, the various kinds of winged and four-footed game peculiar to the forests of the New World, with anecdotes of the savage tribes in the vicinity, that no other topic could be introduced, and most of the party afterwards fell asleep.

In about two hours, however, we were all re-assembled round the Major's hospitable hearth, on which an enormous pile of blazing pine logs afforded light as well as heat. Of these comforts we were rendered more than ordinarily susceptible by the inclemency which prevailed without. During the afternoon, the weather had suddenly changed; and now the wind swept round the building with a fierceness that threatened to scatter its shingled roof over the waste. Peals of thunder broke above our heads, with a noise resembling the simultaneous discharge of the whole artillery of the garrison; torrents of hail and rain descended against the casements in terrific gusts; and large branches, torn from the surrounding oak grove, and hurled into the air by the whirlwind, fell against the house with a crash so sudden and unexpected that it made us all start together from our seats. It was an appalling instance of those destructive hurricanes which frequently desolate the forests of the Western World.

Whilst listening to the sounds of this elementary warfare, I occasionally joined in the desultory conversation prevailing at the moment; but my chief amusement was sketching the singular and novel assembly of which I formed a member.—We presented just such a group as Snyders and Zaftleven have delighted to paint; and all the accessories of the scene were in admirable keeping with its more prominent features.

The apartment we occupied answered the

double purpose of kitchen and dining room. It was a large, lofty chamber, roofed and wainscotted with deal planks rudely smoothed by the axe, and reduced to a dingy tint by the smoke from the chimney and the resinous pine splinters, which, in the residences of backwoodsmen, commonly supply the place of candles. A massive beam, formed of the trunk of a very large oak tree, supported the ceiling, and was thickly hung with various articles of savoury provender, sufficient, without any other supply, to have victualled the fortress for a three weeks' siege. There were bear hams, dried venison, deers' tongues, heads and chines of the wild boar, with other manifestations of the rustic plenty prevailing in the Major's establishment. The space above the fireplace was devoted to the culinary utensils: in the centre of them appeared the Indian calumet, or "pipe of peace," gaily fringed with the plumage of birds; and which, like the *lares* of more ancient pagans, the owner of the mansion probably considered would exercise a beneficial influence over the members of his household.

The skull and gigantic antlers of a moose deer projected from the middle of each of the remaining three sides. On these were suspended, in graceful negligence, otter spears, nets, deer toils, rifles, hunting poles, Indian bows, quivers, the tails and paws of sundry leopards, with many similar trophies and implements peculiar to sylvan sport.

In the centre of the living objects, which gave animation to the picture, appeared our eccentric host, whose tall muscular figure was distinguished by a dress half savage, half European, presenting a curious specimen of picturesque costume. On his head he wore a high conical cap of wolf's hide, tasselled with the tail of a grey fox; and which, in conformity to Indian habits, he never laid aside, except at night. A short jerkin of tanned deer-skin, soiled and discoloured by the combined effects of rain, sunshine, and the dark blood-stains of animals slain in the chase, supplied the place of the blanket-coat generally worn by the hunters of the American woods. The rest of his equipment consisted of breeches of the same material, with Indian mocassins or hose, beautifully soft, and covered with tasteful embroidery of split porcupine's quills stained of various brilliant hues. A broad belt, fringed with the tails of some half-score of those smaller wild animals which furnish the rarest and most costly furs of the European markets, was buckled about his waist, and served as a depository for the hatchet, powder-horn, tobacco-pouch, and *couteau de chasse*,—the indispensable accompaniments of his hunting excursions.

The son, who sat by his father's side, was clothed in a manner somewhat similar; while a couple of Indians, with faces bedaubed with alternate streaks of red and white paint, and displaying other fantastic specimens of savage finery, lay on

either side of the ample fireplace, curled round like the two gaunt but beautiful bloodhounds with whom they disputed possession of these comfortable quarters. The dogs had, from the first, attracted my attention. They were of a dark brindled colour, probably a mixture of the old English talbot with the bloodhound of the Spanish Main. The latter they resembled in hue and fierceness of temper, and manifested their descent from the former by a sinewy compactness of form, expansive nostrils, large pendulous ears, and other infallible tokens of excellence, by which the sportsman is guided in his choice of this the most generous of the canine race.

It would seem that the smell of the buffalos, &c. killed in the morning, had attracted about the house some of the predatory animals of the forest; for ever and anon, during the intervals of the storm, these noble dogs half rose from their crouching position, and, elevating their broad nostrils into the air, simultaneously burst forth into a loud, deep-mouthed bay; unchecked by the kicks and cuffs of the dozing savages, or the commands of their master, who, in a voice scarcely less sonorous than their own, shouted forth,—

"Huron! Warrior! 'ware panther!—Velesci allez;—couch, boys! couch!"

Tranquillity being at length partially restored within doors and without, our conversation as-

sumed a more animated character. I then put several very significant questions to the Major respecting the causes, or the principal cause, that induced him to abandon a civilised for a savage life. He seemed indisposed to give the true reason, but evaded the subject by harping on the old theme of all dissatisfied persons, namely, oppressive taxes, impolitic and unnatural laws, dependence, cruelty, and injustice.

On my guardian's opposing some of these sentiments, and making reference to certain writers in support of his objections, he sprung from his chair, exclaiming, —

"Zounds, Sir! I have here, in support of my opinions, many of the most celebrated writers of the world."

Then, opening a closet, he exhibited several shelves well filled with books, most of which, I perceived, were the productions of authors well known for their opposition to the fixed and solid principles of religion, morals, and politics, besides some volumes of freethinkers, who, in their enthusiasm for natural rights and political liberty, have forgotten their Creator, and plunged into an horrible abyss of atheism. The Major, seeing me run over the leaves of one of the last-mentioned works, and then lay it down with disgust, said, "Do not imagine, Mr. Brabazon, because I have such books in my library, that I am in any wise influenced by their doctrines; — far otherwise. I have read them in order to confirm me in the

opinion that he who is an atheist must be either a wicked man or an idiot. No, thank God! I am not destitute of religion; though I confess that, when I first came amongst the savages, I was of unsettled principles, arising from a neglected education, and bad habits acquired amongst civilised men. The contemplation of the sublime works of nature displayed within these vast solitudes, and the habits of reflection incident to my peculiar mode of life, have taught me that God is omnipresent and omniscient. I see proofs of His wisdom and His presence at every step, and at every moment of my existence. I have learnt to offer up my prayers the moment I rise, to thank Him for His protection, and to solicit the continuance of His divine mercy and goodness during a life which I feel bound to be prepared to resign at every moment; for, as the sacred writings say, 'In the midst of life we are in death,' and 'Who can count upon the morrow?'

"I have said thus much to convince you that irreligion ought not to be counted amongst the many eccentricities of which my character is composed: nor can I sufficiently express my contempt of those mischievous politicians who, by teaching mankind to disregard all human restraint, teach them at the same time to forget their Creator.

"As long as I was a member of civilised society, I never attempted to deny the necessity of ceding away what are styled natural rights (but which, I may say in truth, have always been imaginary)

for the benefit and security of the social compact."

"Sir," said my guardian, "you have spoken like a man of sound sense and judgment, no matter what may be your manner of life; for, by sapping the foundations of religion, morality, law, and order, the unthinking multitude are delivered over, without restraint, to the sway of their own licentious passions. If the world were to be governed by a mob administration, anarchy, impiety, and immorality would roam at large, until the light of revealed religion would be again absorbed in the clouds and darkness of barbarism."

In spite of all our objections, the hospitable Major insisted on filling up the interval between dinner and supper with tea, which was made by his Indian wife in a very decent manner, and accompanied with good thick cream, which, together with our bread and the Major's good butter, afforded us quite a regale. He seemed to enjoy it himself, and observed, that if any thing recalled his former mode of life to his memory with the slightest ray of pleasure, it was the fireside, and that civilised beverage, in which he sometimes indulged on returning home late and fatigued with the toils of the chase.

After many sage and appropriate observations on tea and its exhilirating qualities, we commenced talking politics, as it is called in America, and which every man in the republic thinks himself capable of treating and deciding upon, without

ever having studied or practised the art of governing, or the principles of legislation.

The young men of our party, several of whom belonged to this class of pseudo-politicians, began as usual to launch forth in a high strain of republican eloquence on the advantages of liberty, equality, and independence. One of them dwelt more particularly on the great superiority of the free institutions of America over those of every other country.

"They are calculated," said he, "not only to enlighten the citizens, but, by making every one equal in rights, privileges, &c., they enable the poorest man in the country to enrich himself, and become the first in the republic, provided he has talent to support his pretensions."

Semple, who had listened to this speech with great patience and in profound silence, exhibited signs of uneasiness towards its conclusion. I saw, by the twitches of his upper lip, which was curled with an air of ineffable disdain, that he was impatient, and ready to burst forth against these high-wrought encomiums. Whilst the young man continued, the Major seemed on thorns; especially when he began to praise the alterations made by the liberal party, as he called it, to better the constitution, by rendering it more democratic; "the only way," said he, "to crush those aristocratic notions and pretensions, which, for some time after our glorious revolution, seemed to inspire our governors and legislators."

The Major could now no longer contain him self: curling his upper lip to the point of his nos and knitting his brows, he exclaimed, whilst hi deep blue eye emitted living sparks of fire,—

"Zounds! Sir, I am sorry to be obliged to te you, you are not aware of the paradoxes an absurdities you have been pouring forth withou reflection. By my conscience, Sir! but I have th most rooted and profound contempt for a consti tution, or any other human institution, that ha so little solidity as to require mending and re pairs at every step; like a ship built of bad seasoned timber, which gets the dry-rot, and need docking at the end of every voyage. You mus excuse my warmth, Sir; but your argument, fron the commencement, is absurd, and repugnant t right reason. You first expatiated upon the ad vantages of our liberal institutions in making men equal, and with the same breath, you talk of one man, by his talents, rising above the rest. I liberty and equality, as you also say, enable a man to enrich himself, he will rise above his poorer contemporaries, no matter how stupid an animal he may be; and will obtain the first posts in the republic, without a spark of genius or talent, and with a very miserable education. How, then, can this liberty and equality exist?

"Were we all made equal to-morrow, the day after we should become richer or poorer, higher or lower, and be so exalted or depressed by for tune alone, as to render it impossible to preserve

the balance. Alas! Sir, that you do not perceive mankind are the same in this republic, as elsewhere; moved by the same passions, stimulated by the same interested motives; and not one atom more noble, generous, or disinterested than the rest of the species, who live under more rigid and absolute forms of government! Indeed, I have been told by some impartial travellers, that if there is any difference on this point between us and the people of Europe, it is in favour of the latter; and that we are niggardly, mean, and interested, to a degree nowhere equalled in the world besides. However, one thing is certain, because experience has established its truth; namely, 'that there is no equality in nature,'—all is dependence, from the great source of all things, downwards. The beasts of the field, the birds of the air, and the fishes of the sea, are all governed by this invariable principle. Amongst them you will always find one, whom nature has endowed with superior powers, and who commands the rest. If, then, so little equality exists amongst brutes, how much less ought there to be amongst men, whose faculties are so variously developed, and whose minds are so highly susceptible of ambition, and the numerous other passions and propensities which vex the human soul! Young man, listen to the voice of reason, and you will learn to estimate liberty according to the real acceptation of the term, and reject a principle founded on misconception, and contrary to all the works of

God, or rather the government of what has com
from his hands.

" Know that, at an early period of my savage life
I became an astronomer. I began first by mark
ing the different positions of certain constellation
and stars; their time of rising and setting; their cor
respondence with, and dependence on, other celes
tial luminaries; and having brought the theory wit
me in books, I practically applied it to assist me i
my hunting excursions through these interminа
ble forests. The use of a quadrant and a compas
and the perfection of my astronomical studie
enables me to traverse them with confidence.

" It was not until after I had become an admire
of the wonders of the universe, and the fixed rule
order, and regularity with which it is governe
that I discovered this globe to be only a sma
link of the great chain, and that I myself was
mere insignificant atom; far less in compariso
with God, than is the insect, which I trample di
dainfully beneath my feet, when compared to th
human species.

" Not until then, Sir, did I perceive my own ign
rance, folly, and presumption; then it was I fe
an intimate persuasion, that from the Godhea
downwards, the universe must be governed b
certain heads and chiefs, whom he, the Omnipo
tent Director of all, has provided for, by establish
ing fixed and inevitable laws, which can never b
altered or perverted: and now, Sir, since you hav
roused me, I must tell you my history."

This was precisely what we all wished to hear; consequently we drew our seats close to the Major, and listened with profound attention. Calling to his son, he bade him prepare a large jug of apple-brandy punch, and during the time it was making, he remained silent, seemingly absorbed in deep thought.

When the liquor was brought, and each man served, he took a glass himself, which he drank off without ceremony, and filling it again, he placed it by his elbow: then having coughed and stroked his chin once or twice, he addressed himself, with a more softened look, to the same person, as follows: —

"Know, Sir, that I quitted the republic, and came into these wilds, to avoid the ambition, vanity, vainglory, and hypocrisy, which, under the mask of patriotism, wounded my pride and harassed my better feelings. I, who had served my country for years, with honour and disinterested zeal, found myself, at the close of the last war, a mere cypher in comparison with one of your rich traders, who had never received a wound, or spent a drop of his blood to obtain the independence he then enjoyed; but, possessing plenty of money, was opposed to me in the election of a member of the state legislature. He was chosen in preference, although a man of no education, who knew as much about the science of government as my horse.

"Now, Sir, you see that, so far from having any

practical liberty and equality amongst you, you have lost even the semblance of it, and your most determined democrats are the most overbearing, and possess less of those primitive republican habits introduced into America by the quakers than any others. But, Sir, let me ask you candidly if you were to establish a republic, would you have slaves in it?"

"Oh! no," answered the officer; "not a single slave, or any thing that resembled slavery."

"Then," retorted the Major, "how do you reconcile to your feelings the present one, under which you boast of liberty, equality, and independence, where a certain number of slaves are by law accounted equal to a freeman, and by this arrangement, their owners are enabled to bring in notes for members of the legislature?"

"Oh!" said the youth, "I confess this is a blemish; but it was found upon the soil, having existed long before the country became an independent republic."

"So much the worse," replied the Major. "It tends to prove more strongly the ignorance and folly of men, who wished to amalgamate such heterogeneous substances, and combine principles which bear no affinity, no unity of action, and which, like certain salts in chemistry, only serve to disunite blended liquids, and precipitate what was previously held in solution. No, Sir, I have seen your slave-holders in the province of Virginia and further south; I have lived awhile among

those democratic princes, as they may be justly called. I have witnessed their inhuman despotism, cruelty, and pride, as well as their immorality. Farther south again, I mean, in the most southern provinces of this republic, are also found a similar race, whom pride, indolence, and vice have rendered too listless to move a limb without the aid of a slave or slaves; and who may be said to vegetate in libidinous tyranny. Their morals being as unrestrained as their principles are despotic, they vie with the lords of Virginia in casting a deeper shade over the skins of their progeny, and have reproduced themselves *illegitimately*, through every tint of colour between black and white. Those people you call republicans, and I believe they are rightly named; for during the last fifteen years of my life, I have remarked that the more thorough-bred the republican, the more proud and despotic he proves to his fellow men. Then again, there are your stiff religionists of the north, at the other end of the continent. True, they are active, industrious, moral, and frugal; but they are more intolerant than a Turk or an Indian Brahmin, and quite as proud as the lords of the south. Their industry is, in some measure, a matter of necessity; for the soil they cultivate being stony, cold, and ungrateful, they must put their shoulders to the wheel, or they would starve; and notwithstanding their activity and perseverance, they still are obliged to import flour from the southern provinces. However, they have

flourished, and increased in population so much, as to have a large surplus to send as colonists to other parts of the republic. But let us ask, to what part do they emigrate? I answer, not to the old southern land of slaves, but to the western borders of New York, and of this province, where a new, fertile soil awaits the cultivator, and amply rewards his toil.

"You see then, my young friend, the people of the north and south bear not the slightest resemblance to each other in any particular, except pride; and so far from wishing to unite, they shun each other as they would a pestilence.

"I hope, gentlemen, I have not fatigued you by this digression; and now, with your permission, I'll give you the remainder of my history."

Of course we all begged him to continue. He paused for a few seconds, and then said: —

"Disappointed and disgusted with the treachery, wickedness, and injustice I experienced amongst civilised men, I sought an asylum amidst my native forests, attaching myself to one of the most powerful hordes of savages, whose territories, at that period, bordered on the province of Washington. They had waged frequent war against the republic, but were then quiet; and, during the peace, sold all the lands they possessed on the eastern bank of the Ohio to your government. I must premise that, although a major in the American army, I was only twenty-four years old, and remarkable for my strength and prowess, as well

as for being an unerring marksman; a quality which raised me high in the estimation of my savage friends, and which, as you have seen, has been little impaired since I became an inhabitant of the woods.

"Having paid a short visit once before to this tribe, I was partially known to them, and they consequently received me with open arms. From the first, I had conceived a good opinion of their mode of life; my fancy was enamoured with its freedom, and I joined the tribe without hesitation.

"Here, thought I, I shall live according to the dictates of pure nature. The power and distinction which belong to the chiefs seem exercised only in time of war, on account of superior talents or prowess; in all other cases, they enjoy no distinct prerogatives, beyond the respect that their noble characters inspire.

"However, after living awhile amongst them, I found, although in a lesser degree, that ambition, envy, malice, and uncharitableness had forced their way into the forests, and that men collectively, whether in a savage or a civilised state, possess the same evil propensities.

"After remaining a few years with them, and distinguishing myself as a hunter and a warrior (for they maintained a barbarous feud against two neighbouring tribes), the old chief gave me his daughter whom you have seen, in marriage; and I then became the leader of his warriors. My

prowess ceded in no wise to that of the chief himself, who began to be advanced in years; and as he seemed extremely attached to me, great jealousy and envy were excited on the part of his male kindred, who were fearful that, at his death, he might appoint me to succeed him.

"I was perfectly ignorant, and certainly quite innocent, of this; never having harboured an idea of possessing any greater share of power or influence than what I already possessed, and which gratified me, because it appeared spontaneously bestowed. My wife, however, who is very shrewd, and much more cautious than I am, discovered that two of the Indians had a design against my life, and she immediately imparted the secret to me. My father-in-law was a fine, brave, open-hearted, honest man, who highly esteemed my superior courage and education; and certainly might have nourished the idea of naming me chief at his death.

"Whatever may have been his wishes, he had never given me the slightest intimation of them; and certainly I had never discovered an inclination to aspire to any higher distinction than that of his son-in-law and confidential counsellor.—My wife's communication, therefore, vexed, as well as somewhat alarmed, me. Without making any reply to her, or even waiting to reflect on the business, I went immediately in search of my father-in-law, who, on a certain day in every [illegible]h, retired to a hut apart, and spent several

hours alone in prayer to the Great Spirit; and, during his retirement, no one ever dared to approach him, unless some very urgent affair required his presence.

"It was then at the close of the day, very near the moment of his leaving the hut; for at those periods he never transacted any business, or broke his fast, until the sun had set. I passed close to the door, and coughed; he immediately cried out, 'Who goes there?'

"I answered, 'Your son-in-law, Semple.'

"'Enter,' said he. 'My communications with the Great Spirit are finished.'

"I found him sitting on his haunches, smoking; and, according to the custom of the North American Indians, he handed the pipe to me as a token of peace and good-will. After taking a whiff or two, I returned it to him. His features were composed, but, as I thought, a little tinged with sadness; and he seemed to await in silence what I might have to say to him.

"'Father! mighty and illustrious chief of the six tribes of the Shawahnees! favourite of the Great Spirit! listen to thy son, the husband of thy daughter, the beautiful Pachaontas,' said I.

"'He repines at leading an inactive life, and pants with a desire to chase the buffalo and the deer upon the banks of the mighty waters of the Ohio. Grant him Pachaontas, with thy blessing, and permit him to go forth to seek his fortunes. All

he asks of thee, is the protection of thy arm, should any one attempt to injure him. He will build his own hut far distant from thine; but he will never forget that he is the son-in-law of the great and valiant Woraskoyak, who has covered with glory the six tribes of the Shawahnees.'

"The old man regarded me for some seconds with a melancholy look, and the tear started in his eyes, as he said, —

"'Semple, thou art a brave and a noble-minded warrior. I know thy thoughts, and I know the secret intentions of thine enemies. Thou art worthy of a nobler fate. Go, and prosper. Pachaontas is already thine; and thou shalt have my blessing and my protection; and, what is above all, the mighty shield of the Great Spirit.'

"The day following the old chief's fast and seclusion was always a day of business; all the warriors of the tribe being assembled around him, to hear what his prayers to the Great Spirit had produced, the projects he had to communicate, and to offer their advice. I requested him to make my wishes known to the meeting, and to obtain their consent to my departure. Accordingly, when we were all met in council, the old chief pronounced a long harangue. He spoke of the several engagements in which I had been distinguished, and the services I had rendered to his nation.

"'I have always,' said he, 'endeavoured to show him how much we esteemed his prowess;

but he pines at living in retirement with his beloved Pachaontas, and yesterday declared his intention of quitting us, and going to establish himself, to the West, between us and the whites.'

"The following day a feast was prepared for us; and as the whole tribe were to bind themselves in allegiance to me, and I to them, a kettle of soup, made of dog's flesh, was the first thing presented. When we had all eaten a little of the flesh, and drank of the broth, the remainder was poured into a deep hole prepared for the purpose, and a hatchet and a bow and arrows were buried with it. After this ceremony, the ordinary fare of buffalo meat, venison, turkeys, &c. succeeded; and a small stock of brandy, which I had preserved for some time, was brought forward, and proved sufficient to supply a glass to each. We then smoked our pipes in friendship, and sung songs of our feats in war and hunting.

"The next morning, after taking an affectionate leave of the old chief, my wife and myself, with Raven and his family, set off on our journey, accompanied by a party of warriors. They continued with us until we passed the limits of the hunting grounds, when they bade me adieu, assuring me of their eternal friendship. Raven's attachment was a great consolation; for his skill, courage, and sagacity, made him a host in himself.

"Our first excursion was a sort of promiscuous

ramble through the forests; but we always kept near the river, and we generally encamped for the night on its banks. During the day we penetrated in different directions, and thus discovered the spot where we are now permanently fixed.

"It being absolutely necessary that we should build a house immediately, and enclose it with stakes, so as to defend ourselves from the sudden attacks of wild beasts or straggling savages, I proposed to my attendant that we should go to Fort Pitt, which was not far distant, to sell our furs, and hire some men with the produce to assist us in building our little fortress.

"The women and children were delighted at the prospect of this excursion, as they had never in their lives seen any habitation larger than a wigwam, much less a pretty considerable town. On quitting my father-in-law, I left with him two or three packs of valuable furs, for which he gave me a token, promising to deliver them to whoever should present it to him. After a couple of days' easy march, we found ourselves at Fort Pitt.

"And now, gentlemen," said the Major, drawing forth his enormous timepiece, "I find by my watch it is time to sup. I shall therefore postpone the rest of our adventures until afterwards; when, if you are not tired of my long-winded history, I will endeavour to satisfy your curiosity. Excuse me, gentlemen, but although living a savage life, I have fixed and regular

habits; except when hunting, or when extraordinary circumstances occur to interrupt my usual hours for eating, going to bed, and rising in the morning. Besides, all our movements here are conducted with military precision. We always go armed, and I have never laid aside my campaigning habits, which I taught to my father-in-law and his tribe; and that is one reason why they are so superior to their neighbours. I 'll venture to assert, you will nowhere find a garrison better guarded, or a watch more strictly kept, than at his villages."

Our host now left us to order the supper. When he was gone, one of the young men observed, how agreeably he had been disappointed in our host, who was described to him as a wild, uneducated savage, with coarse, disagreeable manners.

"And so he is," rejoined his Fort Pitt friend, "to those frontier woodsmen, or squatters, as they are called in other parts; who are devils incarnate, — men without morals, sentiment, or feeling: and were it not for the dread they entertain of our friend's character and prowess, his fortress would have been long since sacked and destroyed."

Just as he finished speaking the door opened, and two Indian attendants placed upon the table a fine large joint of roasted buffalo, and an immense turkey cooked in the same manner. Our young men praised the buffalo flesh, which they

found very tender and delicate, and much superior to ordinary beef.

Supper being ended, another large jug of apple-brandy punch was placed before us, when we immediately drank the Major's health, and requested him to proceed with his story. He thanked us, and continued as follows.

CHAPTER X.

"If I recollect right," continued the Major, "I told you that we arrived at Fort Pitt; and we no sooner made our appearance in the streets, than we were surrounded by a crowd of curious people, who began putting questions to us which I did not altogether relish, and I became vexed at their importunities. Of a sudden, I exclaimed aloud, —

"'My name is Semple, so don't trouble me any farther, or you may repent it.'

"At the sound of my name the crowd drew back, eyed me askance, and kept aloof, suffering us to proceed on quietly, though they frequently broke out in praise of the form and beauty of my dark-skinned wife. I was directing my course towards the only tavern in the place, when a respectable merchant came up to me, and holding out his hand, said, —

"'Major, I am happy to see you. Your brother and I were sworn friends, and I hope you will not refuse me the pleasure of receiving your family and yourself into my house, where I trust you will remain during your stay. I am a married man; and your wife will find

herself more comfortable with us than if living in a tavern.'

" This cordial and friendly invitation could not be refused. When we entered his house, his wife and two daughters, grown-up young ladies, received us with unaffected kindness, and paid the greatest attention to Pachaontas and her companions. As for the former, she was lost in astonishment at all she saw and heard; and I requested the young ladies to initiate her a little into the mysteries of civilisation. After treating us with refreshments of various kinds, my kind entertainer told me of his having been exceedingly intimate with my elder brother (of whose death I had been informed by a trader the year before); and he was charged by the executors to find me out, and inform me that my brother's estate, amounting to a considerable sum in money, &c. was all willed to me.

" ' It is only within a couple of months,' said he, ' that I got certain intelligence of your place of residence; and I immediately wrote to the executors to let them know of it, and to accept of the commission of putting you in possession of your property.'

" After thanking him for his friendly conduct, I begged he would examine our packages of furs. Being a dealer in these articles, he soon agreed to purchase the whole lot. My share amounted in dollars to about one hundred and fifty pounds sterling, — a much larger sum than I had anti-

cipated, as the parcel I brought with me only formed the fourth part of what I possessed.

"Raven, who received about half as much, was delighted, but would not touch a single dollar, requesting me to join it to my own stock. Knowing nothing about commerce, and being very suspicious of the whites, he deputed to me the task of buying whatever I considered adapted to the wants of himself and family.

"We now informed the merchant of the deposit we had left with our tribe, and the tokens we could give to any one who felt inclined to purchase them.

"He answered, that he knew all the traders who go amongst the tribes on the other side of the Ohio, and would take the rest of my stock at the same prices as those he had already bought.

"'Give me the tokens, and a recommendation for my friend to the old chief,' he observed, 'and I will pay you one half the money now, and the rest when the furs arrive. My friend will be amply rewarded for his trouble by your recommendation, which will enable him to get the preference, at your villages, in the purchase of skins from the Indians who are under the government of your father-in-law.'

"To this plan I immediately consented; and promised that my wife also should entrust the trader with one of the friendly tokens her father gave her at our separation.

"'But,' said I, 'you must assure me that he

is an honest, conscientious, and a sober man. If he were to cheat one of my brethren, or sell liquor to them without my father-in-law's permission, it would be a grievous imposition on our confidence. These tokens are not for trade, but for friendship; and are considered much more sacred than those which I give to enable you to receive the furs. They are the small bones of dog's feet,—emblems of fidelity and truth; therefore be cautious who you permit to be the bearer of one of those links of sacred friendship, which, amongst these unpolished children of nature, are employed, instead of confidential letters of recommendation, in favour of a man of known probity and honour. Some of them are made of a bone, with a dog's head rudely carved upon them; and, during my long residence amongst the savages, I never saw one of them presented by a trader.'

"He made answer, 'I was formerly a small trader amongst your tribes myself, and they are not unacquainted with the name of John Richardson. Although you have never seen a merchant present one of those tokens, I have had them several times; and I confess, that by them I made my fortune. The chiefs put implicit confidence in me when I carried them from one tribe to another, and gave me a decided preference over the other traders;—a preference, also, that I was careful never to abuse, or give them cause to repent.'

"In a few days afterwards the trader made his

appearance, and his features at once prepossessed me in his favour.

"From my description of the furs, he said they were worth from 1500 to 2000 dollars; and, on giving him the tokens, I received 1000 dollars down, and was to get the remainder at his return, or sooner, if he could convey intelligence to our friend Mr. Richardson of his having succeeded in his mission.

"With this money, and the assurance of the handsome sum left me by my brother, I determined to fix myself in the centre of the best hunting-grounds on the south-west side of the Ohio, about twenty or thirty miles from Fort Pitt. Before making a permanent settlement, however, I resolved to encamp for one year, after the manner of the aborigines: I should thus be able to ascertain exactly all the advantages and disadvantages of the position.

"Our wives, and, indeed, we ourselves, soon became disgusted with civilised society. The trouble of dressing, visiting, and receiving visiters, with a hundred other irksome ceremonies, which appeared to us superfluous, as well as the great duplicity and insincerity prevailing amongst the people themselves, very soon determined us to return as quickly as possible to our beloved forests. There, no intruding guests prevented us from eating, drinking, and sleeping at fixed hours, after our own manner; and there, falsehood and deceit were unknown.

"Fortunately, about this time I received an answer from the executor of my brother's estate. He had left me twelve thousand dollars in specie, which were placed in one of the banks at my disposal, and a farm near Philadelphia, worth five thousand dollars more.

"I then purchased a bull, four cows, and the same number of good, hardy horses, of which a very useful breed, capable of living in the woods, and enduring all sorts of hardships, is peculiar to this part of America.

"Thus prepared, we started off, to the great joy of my wife, as well as of Raven and his family, who had been completely tired of living amongst the whites, as they termed it, and '*hearing them tell so many lies.*' This last accusation I did not exactly understand, until they explained what

temporary manner, I set off myself to Fort Pitt; where I bought cannon, muskets, rifles, ammunition, &c. &c., and hired several men to assist me during the summer months, to whom I promised a safe convoy back in the autumn. Having loaded a boat with these effects, I proceeded down the Ohio to the place where we killed the buffalos; and which, in a direct line, is distant only about three miles and a half. From thence, with my horses, which I had augmented to six, I conveyed all my property to this spot, where I fortified myself, and have lived ever since. The progress of colonisation, on the part of the Americans, having taken a direction more to the left or south-west of me, I have remained unmolested, and hope to continue so for many years. The whole of my expenses here has not much exceeded six thousand dollars, so that there still remains a nice snug little property, which I keep as a nest-egg in case of necessity; or, when I am gone to my long home, for my son, who, I am happy to observe, seems inclined to follow his father's footsteps.

"Thus, gentlemen, you see before you a citizen of the world; a civilised man, who has become a savage from principle. I pay no taxes; I am under no control; and stoop to no power but God himself. Notwithstanding, I am obliged to impose laws and restrictions on my dependents and myself. As the master of a family, and captain-general of this fortress, I am bound to protect

and provide for those connected with me; and have certain indispensable duties to fulfil, which I cannot lay aside, or permit to be infringed upon by any one. In short, my veto is as despotic and sacred as that of the most powerful monarch on the globe; and if it were not so, what would become of our fortress? Yet I am no tyrant. My people deem themselves sufficiently free, although not one of them ever dares to disobey my orders. They know that every thing must have a head —a leader who must be obeyed, or anarchy and confusion would ensue. Gentlemen, you may call this what you please; but here I am free from intrigues, malice, and all uncharitableness. My kingdom is situated between the savages and the civilised, partaking of both;—a sovereignty which I declare to you, I would not exchange for the presidency of your highly-boasted republic.

"Now, young gentleman," said he, turning to the panegyrist of the institutions of America, "I hope you will excuse me if I have offended your republican feelings, as I never intended to wage war against individual opinions, but against unsolid systems; and I have candidly exposed to you at the same time my own sentiments and feelings."

At the close of his recital the whole party unanimously arose and drank his health, exclaiming, "Bravo! bravo! Major."

"Sir," said the young republican, "so far from feeling wounded at any of your observations,

have admired your eloquence, and have been overcome by the closeness of your reasoning." Indeed, we were all quite surprised to find a clever, sensible, entertaining man, of solid principles and virtue, where we expected to meet an ignorant, licentious half-savage.

The Major's health was again drunk with three cheers; and, having finished our potations, we retired to rest in the same manner as we had done the night before.

The following morning, after breakfast, we prepared to depart; and found our hospitable entertainer had loaded a horse with buffalo meat, venison, and our wild turkeys, which he ordered one of his natives to lead, and at the same time to conduct us by the shortest route through the forests to Fort Pitt.

We thanked him warmly for his kindness and generous hospitality; promising, if ever we revisited that part of the country, to take up our quarters with him again: and, having wished him success and happiness, pursued our route towards the banks of the Alleghany.

Our journey back did not afford much sport. We killed a few squirrels and pigeons, but met with no large game; owing, I presume, to our travelling in a body, and being very noisy: for we talked and laughed the whole time.

Notwithstanding our toilsome march, my servant woke me the next morning at daylight, to say it was time to dress and repair to head-quar-

ters. In a few minutes afterwards, the orde
sergeant bringing in a report, I hurried off to
duty; for, as we were now beginning to ma
arrangements for the return of the troops to Ph
adelphia, the quarter-master-general gave me
much business as I could manage to accompl
within a given time.

As I before observed, we met with no gr
opposition from the enemy. In the few engag
ments that took place, they never once allowed
to come to the point of the bayonet with the
yet, upon the whole, owing to the hardships
the season, our campaign was a severe one. T
army took about four or five hundred prisoner
and, after all that we had suffered, to march the
over a distance of three hundred and forty mil
through bad winter roads, was not a very agre

I will not fatigue my readers by leading them to every town and station through which we passed; suffice it to say, that we made rapid marches, and arrived within a few miles of Philadelphia, at a village, towards the close of winter.

A committee was appointed by the good people of the town, with the consent of the mayor and corporation, to meet us at this place, and give a splendid entertainment in honour of our return. This committee immediately invited the commanding officer, and all his staff, together with a battalion of gentlemen volunteers, to partake of a supper; for, as we did not get to the station until three in the afternoon, it was too late to prepare a dinner. Several magnificent tents were erected for the occasion; and the rarest and most delicate viands, with costly wines, were presented to us in abundance. Two deputies, who presided at the head and foot of each of the tables, and did the honours as representatives of the inhabitants of Philadelphia, drank our healths in the name of the mayor and corporation, congratulating us on the success of our expedition and our safe return.

After these preliminary ceremonies, the wine flowed in generous libations to the belles of the city; and the health of all the distinguished characters of that period were likewise drunk in full bumpers. Songs, stories, anecdotes, &c., intermingled with copious draughts of the sparkling juice of the grape, made merry the fleeting hours;

and, ere we were aware of it, the sun in all his glory rose to assist at our revels.

The supper did not finish until the guests had either tumbled from, or otherwise quitted, their chairs, to seek repose beneath the tables; and it must have been about ten o'clock in the day, before the company might be said to have completely dispersed.

I was one of the last who contrived to walk away; but I had some difficulty to pick my road, for, under the tables, and all around them on the ground, lay many a brave fellow at full length.

My readers, I think, will believe, from this description, that the inhabitants of the republic are fond of a drop of good liquor; and are not behind those of Europe in paying their devotions to the jolly god.

It was the general's intention to have made his triumphal entry into Philadelphia that very day, but he now found it impossible. His vanquished troops were laid prostrate on the field, snoring in swinish concert all around him.

In the evening the drum beat, and collected all those together who could stand on their legs; and who were as quickly dismissed to sleep, with peremptory orders to appear sober at drum-beat the following morning.

The sun arose, and the troops appeared once more in good condition, all rigged out in their best uniforms. This, however, was a mistake of

the adjutant who conveyed the order, and it did not exactly please the general.

"To enter the capital, tricked out like *petit maitres*," observed he, "after such a severe campaign, will look as though we had been out merely for a few weeks' drill; and no one will believe we have suffered the toils and hardships of a soldier's life. No, no, adjutant; that will never do: it would tarnish the glory of our victorious arms, and reflect eternal disgrace on this honourable corps." So saying, he immediately issued an order to disperse the troops again, and that every officer and soldier should be dressed in their worst suit before they returned to the ranks. This metamorphosis was effected in a short time; and about mid-day we began to advance towards the capital. As the night had been frosty, the roads were quite dry and dusty; so that, during about two hours and a half that we were on our march, we were as completely powdered with dirt, and travel-stained, as our valiant commander could desire. This, added to our old, threadbare, shabby uniforms, gave us the appearance of troops worn down with fatigue and hardships, and excited the sympathy of all the citizens. Our noble general also halted us several times, and made us go through some very irksome, because useless, manœuvres, in order to kill time, so that we might not arrive too soon; and really fatigued us: not to mention

the anxiety of sons, brothers, and sweethearts, to clasp in their arms those beings to whom they felt endeared by every tender tie, and who cursed him in their hearts for this unnecessary delay. At length we got within the city, and nothing could exceed the shouts, the hurras, and ecstacies of the populace; whilst the windows of every house were filled with elegant women, who smiled upon us, and waved their lily-white handkerchiefs, in token of their approbation. A strict order, however, had been issued, that no one should dare to receive the congratulations of his nearest friends or relations, or budge an inch from the ranks after we had arrived at the parade until the word of command was given, and we had gone through some more exercises.

The concourse of persons was so dense, that left only a narrow opening, barely wide enough to allow the troops to march through; for the curiosity of the whole city was excited, not to mention the great interest the parents and friends of those who served in the volunteer corps must have felt at beholding them return in safety.

As we passed slowly along, the crowd cheered us every step, and almost drowned the military music with their shouts of triumph and congratulation. Thousands of hands were stretched forth, but not one dared to receive the grasp of his beloved friend, and the columns moved on as steadily as if they were going into action. This discipline excited the admiration of the spectators, and occasioned

renewed shouts of applause. At length we arrived at the parade, where we were formed into hollow squares. The word of command being then given to permit us to embrace our friends, they rushed into our arms, and the scene was truly affecting.

When I quitted my native country, it was with the full intention of remaining abroad for a considerable period; nor did I then contemplate any event which could interfere with this design. But man is doomed ever to be the sport of contingencies: the receipt of a packet of letters from Ireland, informing me of the death of my maternal uncle, and the bequest of some valuable property, rendered it absolutely necessary that I should return to take possession of it. My cousin, who was the next heir, and with whom I had never been on very cordial terms, had already put in his claim, on the plea of my being dead; and it is probable I do him little wrong in saying that his "wish was father to the thought." A friend, however, to whom I had written in confidence, made a plea in my favour, and prevented him from succeeding in his dishonest scheme. The season of the year, it being the commencement of spring, was favourable to a voyage across the Atlantic; and my guardian seemed greatly pleased that I was about to return to my native land; first, in order to disappoint the avarice of my unprincipled cousin, and, secondly, to give us an opportunity of judging with our own eyes whether all that had been

published in the public journals respecting the advantages arising out of the emancipation was really true.

Though some years had elapsed since my first sea-voyage, which I have before described, it nevertheless had left a strong impression upon my mind, particularly the loss of the main-mast, with the several incidents connected with it. That event in no wise cooled my ardour for the sea-service; on the contrary, I was determined to place myself, in every voyage, under the control of the commander, until I had acquired a perfect knowledge of what, in spite of all its privations I considered the most noble, active, and manly profession a gentleman could devote himself to. Several sciences are necessary to form a good sea officer, with which he must be well acquainted not only in theory, but in practice. Amongst these the sublime science of astronomy lifts his soul at once above the nether world, and draws him nearer to the Divine Creator, by exposing to his contemplation the wonderful order and regularity which pervade and direct his incomparable works. This study impresses him with religious feelings and with a just and proper sense of his duty and the value of a methodical, well-organised system of conducting every thing relating to the service.

In a well-commanded ship, a strict attention to order pervades the whole establishment. Not only the officers, but the petty officers, and indeed the

seamen themselves, take care that each article is put in its proper place; so that, in the darkest night, a marling-spike, a ball of spun-yarn, a gasket, an earing, or any other thing that is wanted, may be found immediately without a candle. I will not pretend to say that lanterns are not used in many vessels; but I have known them interdicted in some, and have myself made the trial, when articles wanted in the night were brought in the dark, with great speed and exactness.—But to return to the subject of our departure.

After receiving my letters, we found almost all the early ships of the season had sailed. One only remained, and as we wished to arrive in Ireland during the spring months, we resolved to take advantage of this opportunity.

Our captain was not only a scientific navigator, but a thorough-bred, practical seaman, as fearless as he was skilful.

It fortunately happened that he was an old acquaintance of ours, and when I told him, I should put myself entirely under his command, he replied, "Then I 'll make a good seaman of you, if you have any taste for tar and rope-yarns in your composition; and if you have not, why you may as well get yourself hauled up high and dry upon shore; for no man ever became a good sailor against the grain."

The commencement of our passage initiated me at once into the most insupportable part of my sea education. We descended the large river

Delaware, and anchored in the bay of the same name, the wind blowing a fresh gale from the N. E., almost directly in our teeth. However, the captain observed, that he always sought a fair wind at sea, instead of waiting, as others did, for a favourable breeze to commence their voyages. He therefore set sail, and putting a press of canvas upon the ship, beat to windward, through Cape May and Henlopen, which form the entrance of the bay, into the open ocean.

Fortunately, the ship, which was of about eight hundred tons burden, was strong and well built, notwithstanding which our noble captain strained every timber-head, and carried away some spars before he got completely clear of the coast. I lay horribly sea-sick in my berth, and at every attempt to rise found my head so giddy, and the motion of the ship so rapid and disagreeable, that I could not stand upon my legs. She pitched violently through a heavy head-sea, that broke in foam over her bows, and kept her decks, from stem to stern, constantly under water.

On the morning of the second day I was roused by the captain himself, who with a piece of fat salt pork on a biscuit in one hand, and a glass of grog in the other, addressed me in an authoritative tone, with, —

"Come, my young land-lubber, rouse out, and eat your breakfast."

In vain I attempted to excuse myself.

"You have put yourself," said he, "under my

command, to make a sailor of you; now, here I offer the first rudiments of seamanship, and shall take no denial; so turn to upon the pork and grog; splice them together with your grinders, and then, if you cannot stand the deck, we shall lay you in the lee scuppers, until you get your sea legs aboard."

The only modification I could obtain of this cruel order was, first to be permitted to dress myself, and go upon deck to eat "my allowance," as he styled it. With much difficulty I donned my clothes, and, tottering like a drunken man, contrived to crawl to the weather side of the quarter-deck, where I found the salt pork, biscuit, and grog in waiting, with another thundering command of,—"Do you hear, my young land-lubber? lay the salt pork and biscuit along-side directly, and let me see no more of your fresh-water grins."

Accordingly, I began to eat and drink; but scarcely had I finished a fourth part of my portion, and drunk a couple of mouthfuls, ere I was obliged to hasten to the lee gangway, and experienced all the effects of a strong emetic. It was near half an hour before my stomach became settled, and I could stand on my feet again; which the captain no sooner perceived, than he desired me to return to the quarter-deck. I obeyed, but with great disgust: however, I found myself better as I proceeded, and at length managed to swallow my portion, and wash it down with the remainder of

the grog. After this, I was ordered to walk u
and down upon the weather side of the vesse
and, in the course of an hour more, felt quite fr
from sea-sickness.

Whenever a sail was to be set or taken in,
any of the yards to be braced up, I was sent
assist. This exercise produced a wonderful
good effect; so that, by the time the dinner w
ready, I had as good an appetite as the captai
himself. Fortunately, our meal was composed
salt beef and potatoes, with a flour pudding; fo
hungry as I felt, I really think I could not hav
eaten of the pork again. Our captain, seeing m
commence like an old sailor, said; —

"Well done, landsman, eat heartily, but don
overload your stomach; and in the course
a few days you will get out of the lubbers' me
altogether."

His words were prophetic, — my appetite i
creased daily, though I still felt an insuperab
aversion to fat pork and grog.

During our passage, I made rapid progress i
practical seamanship; could hand, reef, and stee
and was sometimes put in the charge of the watch
and the commands of — "Larboard watch there
brace up the yards fore and aft; haul out the bow
lines; take care to slack off the trusses, and bela
all fast again,"—were given with all the confidenc
of a veteran sailor.

I remember, on one occasion, when the secon
officer had left me in charge, whilst he steppe

forward for a moment, the wind suddenly shifted in our favour; I called out directly with a sonorous voice, —

"Come aft, lads, and round in the weather braces." On hearing this, the officer hastened back to his station, exclaiming, —

"Bravo! young man; but remember the next time I leave you in command, that you report to me before you dare to start tack or sheet; — 't is a liberty we old officers don't allow."

This tenaciousness of authority appeared so preposterous, that I could not help remarking, I thought he was wrong to depute his office to any one in whose skill and experience he did not feel implicit confidence.

"Suppose," said I, "for example, whilst you were below, a sudden squall had struck the ship; all the spars might be carried away during the time I was occupied in seeking you."

"Right! right! young gentleman," said the captain, who had come upon deck, and overheard the conversation; "you are right; and, Mr. Fearon, I request, whenever this young gentleman takes charge of the deck again, you will permit him to exercise his own judgment,—trimming the sails, or even taking them in, should necessity require it."

"By all means, Sir," replied the officer; "I was only afraid he might want experience sufficient to be so far trusted."

"Then, Sir," retorted the captain, "you were

wrong in giving him the command of the watch, even for an instant." Fearon pocketed the reprimand, and never afterwards attempted to control my orders.

As the passage was extremely boisterous, and we carried plenty of sail, or, as the sailors term it, "packed the rags upon her," she lost several small spars, but fortunately, never when I had the watch upon deck. The weather was superb just before we made the coast of Ireland, and our captain, who was an expert hand at ascertaining his position by the heavenly bodies, or by what is called *lunar observations*, pushed on boldly for the Channel, with the aid of a couple of good chronometers, under reefed topsails, and top-gallants over them. We passed several vessels without a rag of sail upon their masts, and looking as if they had been lying at anchor.

"There," said he, as we went by them, "those fellows are either too timid to carry sail, or know not their longitude; and wait there to get soundings, or a sight of the land, to find out where they are."

Although the weather had suddenly become hazy, and the wind blew hard, he made no alteration in his course during the whole night. The next morning, about half-past seven bells, it being my watch below, I felt myself shaken violently out of a sound sleep. I opened my eyes, and saw the captain standing by the side of my berth.

"Come rouse out, young swab, and smell your

native turf," he cried; "here's the old head of Kinsale all in sight on our larboard bow."

In an instant I sprung upon deck, and certainly never experienced more real heartfelt pleasure than when beholding the black front of this well-known object towering above the fog, after so long an absence.

We passed it at the rate of eight knots and a half an hour, and indeed our run up the Channel was at the same rate; so that in the afternoon of the second day we were safely moored at the pier head of Liverpool.

The short time we remained was occupied in examining every thing remarkable in that great commercial city. Among the objects which excited a more than ordinary interest were the docks, and the bustle of business in their neighbourhood. There one sees hundreds of shipping safely moored in the centre of the town, within square basins, surrounded by lofty magazines of magnificent structure, several stories high. Into the highest of these the merchandise is raised by cranes, or is lowered by the same contrivance upon the quay close to the ships. What labour and expense must have attended the formation of such docks where piers are built to keep off the swell of the sea! Next in importance to these may be reckoned the graving docks for repairing ships, where the tide of the river Mersey rises high enough to float the largest vessels in and out. We were enchanted also with the walk round the

pier head, and the superb view it affords of the Welsh mountains, the Irish Channel, &c.

At length we set off for Chester, an old city in the adjoining county, situated on the banks of the Dee, not far from the sea-coast. At the mouth of this river is a small port or village, whence packets sail constantly for Dublin. Here we were treated with Welsh ale, about thirty years old, that was really as strong as the most heady white wine, yet so oily and palatable that it deceived and gave us tremendous headaches.

At length the long wished-for moment arrived, and we hastened off to join the packet; but on arriving at the mouth of the Dee we found the vessel, a brig, still lying on her broadside in the mud. I now observed to the landlord of the inn where we stopped, that surely the packet could not sail that day:—

"Yes, Sir," replied he, "she'll positively be off about noon. You must not imagine, because she now lies high and dry, that she will not soon be afloat again. In less than half an hour you will see all those flats covered with the waves; so, should you wish to have a luncheon before your departure, there's no time to lose. Besides, if you have never seen what we call the *bore*, it is worth your while to repair to the beach at the turn of the tide."

After partaking of some delicious shell-fish, which abound on that coast, we returned to the water side, and saw the tide running out at a

rapid rate. Suddenly it was checked, and the river began to swell, being met by the returning tide, which rolled forward its turbulent foaming waves with irresistible fury, and would inevitably have overturned any common boat attempting to oppose them. In this manner the river rose higher and higher, roaring like thunder, and forcing back the current, which, in a few minutes more, overflowed all the banks and shoals which we had so lately seen perfectly dry. The vessels soon floated to their anchors, and sent their boats to bring off the passengers.

Nothing could be more beautiful than the scene before us; where the broad estuary of the Dee, bounded on one side by the lofty Welsh mountains, and on the other by a richly cultivated country, gradually expanded itself, until it became lost in the waves of the Irish Channel.

We were not long getting out into the Channel, and the captain steered his course, as near as the wind would allow, for the entrance of Dublin Bay on the opposite coast. The weather continued fine and the sea smooth, but the wind being scant a-beam, we fell in with the Irish shore to the northward of the bay, near the Head of Clogher, not far from the well-known dangerous rocks called the Skerricks. They are quite near the coast; and the channel between them, being full of sunk rocks and whirlpools, is considered so dangerous that no vessel ever attempts the passage, unless from unavoidable necessity.

Our captain knew his position well; but, as the wind seemed inclined to head us off the land, he put about, and kept close in with the coast. Unfortunately, when we got so near as to be exactly on a line with the above-mentioned cliffs, the wind ceased, a dead calm ensued, and, the tide having just turned, we were swept along rapidly without being able to alter our course.

The reader will readily conceive how horror-struck all the passengers were, on perceiving that the brig must inevitably be hurried into this dreadful vortex! What, also, must have been the feelings of the captain, when, counting on a continuance of the breeze, he found himself thus suddenly becalmed! Here it were in vain to let go the anchors, the bottom being too rocky to hold them a single minute; while, by checking the ship's way, they might hurl her into destruction.

Perceiving that he was greatly agitated, I approached him and said, "Come, Sir, this is not a moment to give way to your feelings. Take my advice,—for I am something of a seafaring man: put out your sweeps*, and endeavour to keep the brig in the middle of the channel. Nothing else can save us: even then we must trust in God's mercy; for I believe no vessel of this size has ever before attempted to pass between the Skerricks and the coast. Perhaps, as the tide has only just begun to ebb, the centre rocks are covered deep enough to allow us to pass over them."

* Sweeps are large oars.

He seemed roused to a sense of his situation, and instantly issued his orders, which the sailors promptly obeyed. They rowed stoutly, many of the passengers assisting; though the greater number were sobbing, crying, praying, and wringing their hands, seemingly paralysed with terror.

My guardian now advised me to follow his example, and throw off all my clothes except my shirt and pantaloons, so as to be free to swim, in case of any sudden accident; for we knew, if we could gain the rocks, we should be immediately saved by the fishers who frequent them. "Walter," said he, with a placid countenance, "I am happy to see you so cool and courageous: recollect, if the vessel strikes, to keep by me, and let us meet our fate together."

Having thus prepared for the worst, I hastened to the captain, who was surrounded by the weeping passengers, and begged he would himself take the helm or let me take it, as the man to whom it was entrusted appeared frightened, and did not shift it often enough. He immediately seized the tiller, and began to steer with caution and vigour;—and fortunate it was he did so: for, at that moment, we reached the centre of the channel, and had got within the influence of the vortex, which, seizing the brig, whirled her round and round in a terrific manner; and all the men could do with the sweeps was, to try and check her from going too near the breakers. In one of

these violent twists she struck upon the top of a rock, and the passengers fell prostrate upon the deck with fright. I now vociferated to the men to redouble their efforts; and, after bumping twice, she went over it. After this, we were hurried along with great rapidity, and a breeze fortunately springing up against the tide, we set all sail to it, and at length got out into the broad Irish Channel, to the unspeakable joy and satisfaction of every one on board.

It was like a reprieve from death, and language is inadequate to convey a just idea of the hurry, alarm, horror, and confusion that had prevailed amongst the passengers a few minutes before!— My guardian took the liberty of rating many of them soundly for their pusillanimous behaviour, which tended to embarrass the crew, and prevent them from doing their duty.

When we had passed through, the captain, addressing those around him, exclaimed, "What a miraculous escape! I have heard of hundreds of vessels perishing on those rocks, and never knew one to come safe through before. However, I must say we are indebted for our lives to the coolness and intrepidity of this gentleman and his son (pointing to my guardian and myself), whose advice to use the sweeps has proved our salvation; for they alone kept the ship in the middle and the deepest part of the channel."— The passengers, following his example, overpowered us by their compliments and thanks.

"After a calm comes a storm," says the proverb. In a few hours the wind increased so that it became necessary to take in all our light sails; and then we foamed away, with the wind a-beam, under double-reefed topsails. In a short half hour after it commenced the passengers disappeared, and were soon stowed away snug in their berths, having all become sea-sick.

"Thank God!" said the captain, "I shall now have some peace, and hope to arrive in port before they are well enough to pester me again."

In the morning, the breeze continuing fresh and contrary, we were obliged to beat to windward. However, by two o'clock on the third day, we found ourselves well into Dublin Bay, close under the Wicklow mountains, where, the wind being still unfavourable, we dropped anchor opposite the Dargle.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.



LONDON:
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New Street-Square

AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

VOL. II.



LONDON :
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-Street-Square.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

" Wand'ring from clime to clime observant stray'd,
Their manners noted, and their states survey'd."
HOMER.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR
LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, GREEN, & LONGMAN,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.
1835.



AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

CHAPTER I.

The prospect which meets the view on sailing into the bay of Dublin is truly magnificent and picturesque. Two small islands, one called the Hill of Howth, and the other Ireland's Eye, form its entrance. On the left hand, the green, undulating slopes of the Wicklow mountains exhibit all the ingredients of the most finished landscape, such as richly cultivated fields, superb mansions, villas, parks, gardens, rocks, and cataracts, even down to the water's edge.

At the bottom of the bay, the city of Dublin, built on an eminence, presents to the eye its splendid buildings, gilded domes, and lofty glittering spires. Contrasted with these, on the right, appear the highly ornamented parks and grounds of Clantarf, covered with majestic groves

and never-fading verdure. Then the superb pier-head, a work of immense labour and expense, with the lighthouse upon it, jutting into the bay, is an object worthy the curiosity and admiration of every stranger.

My guardian, who had visited almost every country of the world, declared that he knew no city that could surpass it in beauty of situation.

Being very anxious to reach Dublin, in the afternoon we quitted the vessel, in company with several of the passengers, and landed at a spot where a crowd of poor fellows commenced fighting for the honour of carrying our baggage up to the tavern; and oftentimes they seize upon and run off with it before you can interfere to prevent them, so anxious are they to earn a few pence. This was exactly what happened to us. We were the last who stepped from the boat, and our portmanteaus, being first put on shore, were laid violent hands upon, and conveyed to the inn long before we got there.

For my part, I gave them up for lost; but my guardian said these people were very honest, and that, when we got to the tavern, the persons in possession of our property would immediately come forward and ask to whom it belonged.

Sure enough, when we came there, we espied our portmanteaus in the possession of two poor fellows, who appeared quite happy in having been fortunate enough to seize upon them, and whom we now recompensed for their trouble.

Although we were assured by the innkeeper

that we had already given them more than enough, all clamoured for more money, except a youth and an elderly man, who carried our luggage, and now stood in silence, apparently envying the good fortune of their comrades, whose noisy solicitations in many cases proved successful. I could not help gazing on the mild and interesting features of the boy, contrasted with the rough but honest physiognomy of his companion, who appeared between forty and fifty years of age. Seeing that the former looked sad, I gave him an additional shilling. He seized my hand, and, pressing it to his lips, exclaimed, —

"God Almighty bless and preserve you! — You have given me what will, perhaps, save the lives of my poor decrepid father and mother; — they will ever pray for your honour."

My guardian also gave a piece of money to his companion, who seemed also greatly moved, and exclaimed, —

"God be with the hour that brought you both to Ireland! May the blessing of God light upon your honours' heads!" And then, giving his money to the boy, he turned to me, and said, — "By Jasus! but you're every inch a gentleman, and have done a real act of charity to that poor boy, whose parents are miserable, half-starved cripples, with scarcely a rag to cover their nakedness. Poor as I am myself, your honour, I have given him all this day's earnings, to help him to feed his family."

We added a few shillings to our former bounty, and had now some trouble to get rid of their importunate gratitude; until, the crowd beginning to collect, the youth ran off, and his friend followed him, often looking back as they retired.

My feelings were deeply interested by this adventure; and I know not how it was, but, almost without reflection, I followed them. They walked very fast; and when they turned into another street, where some large houses jutted out beyond the rest, I lost sight of them for an instant. Running hastily to the opposite side of the way, I saw them again just as they were about to enter a low, wretched hovel, that stood on a solitary spot at some distance from any other habitation: having marked the place with my eye, I continued on until I got near to it. It was now growing dark; and, as I paused for a moment to take breath, for I had run extremely fast, a thought flitted across my mind, that, possibly, what these people had told us was false, and that there might be danger in entering a lone house, inhabited, perhaps, by robbers. But the fine, honest, and expressive features of the poor lad, who could not be more than seventeen or eighteen years of age, rose to my recollection, together with the blunt but charitable character of his companion, and banished all suspicion.

In their hurry they left the door nearly half open; and the light of a miserable candle, that stood upon a table in the centre of the apartment,

enabled me to discover a group of wretched beings, whose situation excited the keenest emotions of pity, and riveted me to the spot.

A man and woman, pale and emaciated, had just raised themselves upon their bed of straw, and were clasping their arms about the neck of the boy, who was kneeling beside them. A young girl, of beautiful features, but literally in rags, bent over them all, and was kissing the boy on the head; whilst another man, advanced in years, whom I immediately recognised to be the boy's companion, stood leaning upon his short stick, gazing upon the miserable group, and with his old torn hat wiped off the tears which coursed each other down his manly cheek. I felt myself so moved by this scene, that the tears rushed to my eyes also; and, feeling too deeply interested to allow me to quit this distressed family without enquiring further into their history, I advanced to the door unseen by the inmates, pushed it open, and entered the wretched abode.

The boy and his companion no sooner saw me, than they exclaimed, "Here, mother; here is our angel, our saviour, whom Heaven sent to relieve us!"

"Ah!" cried the poor emaciated woman, in feeble accents, "how shall we be ever able to repay your charity, your noble generosity? You have saved us from dying of hunger!"

"Hold your tongue," said their blunt friend; "don't you see how his honour's noble heart is

mother? give him time to recover himself. Give the honest a little water, Jane." And immediately she brought a wooden cupfull, and held it to my lips. I swallowed a few drops; and, as she removed it, I could not help gazing on her beautiful features, until I perceived she blushed deeply, and hastily turned from me. Although some seconds had elapsed before I found the use of my tongue, my eyes had already examined the countenances of the whole group, which I beheld with emotions of mingled pleasure and pity.

The father looked to be about fifty years of age, the mother much younger; but both appeared sinking from want. Their features bore the marks of honesty and probity, and of having been accustomed to see better days. I began by requesting they would not overpower my feelings again by their expressions of gratitude; having come purposely to inquire into their situation, and see how I could be useful to them. "Here," said I, "are two pieces of gold for your more urgent necessities; with them buy yourselves clothes, and whatever your immediate wants require. Your friend may follow me to the tavern. We shall not leave this place to-night, and at my next visit I hope to see you more comfortably clothed: some food shall be sent you, as well as a doctor; and, no doubt, through God's mercy, you will be restored to health and strength again."

It would be difficult to paint in words the various emotions depicted on the features of this

poor family during the time I addressed them. The tears flowed in streams from their eyes; and towards the last, their utterance, when they seemed to wish again to thank me, was choked with sobs. I hastened away, and found my guardian, who had missed me, anxiously awaiting my arrival.

Whilst relating to him the misery and wretchedness I had witnessed, the old man entered, saying, "Here I am, to receive your honour's commands."

I sent for the landlord, and ordered some good solid food for those who were well, and sent to the sick a bason of excellent soup and bread; but charged the old man not to let them eat too much at first. He crossed himself when he saw the victuals, and exclaimed,—

"Great God be praised! May he shower down his blessings upon your generous hearts! Ah! your honour, for the last four days we have ate of nothing but a few cold potatoes given to us by a charitable neighbour; for we had ourselves no money to buy either potatoes, or turf to boil them; nor could I earn a penny any where. The poor boy also tried in vain to hire himself, and was at last forced to beg."

"Go," said my guardian, "go to your friends; we shall hear your story at another opportunity; at present you must not delay any longer with the food, which, no doubt, they are impatiently awaiting."

"Ah!" said I, as he went out, "this first

essay in my native land has already damped the joy I felt on landing. If my feelings are to be thus wounded at every step, I shall regret that circumstances have obliged me to revisit these scenes of misery and wretchedness."

"Cold indeed must be the heart," said my guardian, "which could pass by such objects unmoved. Let not your spirits, however, be cast down by an isolated example which has accidentally come under our notice; perhaps, as we advance, we shall find such changes in the condition of our population as will revive your hopes, and convince you that Ireland has improved much since our departure."

Whilst we were at breakfast next morning, the old man sent word by the waiter that he was come, and my guardian ordered him in. He approached us, making a respectful bow, and exclaimed, as he kept twisting his old shattered hat on the end of his stick, "Oh! your honours, how happy you have made my poor friends! If you could only have been present when I carried them the food!" Here he paused for a second or two, and then went on with the tears glistening in his eyes.

"By my soul! but it made my old tough heart ache to look at it! Now, thought I to myself, these people, who hav'n't seen a bit of meat for many a long day, will fall to like mad dogs; and how the devil shall I prevent them? Besides, his honour told me not to let them ate too much

at first. By Jasus! your honours, but I was deceived; they looked at the victuals as if they were poison! Not a soul budged to take a bite; and they all began to pray to God and cry. They made a baby of me, and I cried like a fool too; but at last, getting angry, I said, taking a piece of meat and bread myself, 'You're all unthankful people: why, in the name of God, don't you ate what their honours have sent you, through the favour of Heaven?' This roused them, and they began, but sobbed like children at every mouthful. So I swallowed my own share as fast as I could, and ran off to see your honours again."

I rang the bell, and ordered the waiter to bring in a glass of whisky. "Here, old man," said I; "what's your name?"

"My name, your honour, for want of better, is Matthew."

"Then, Matthew, there's a glass of whisky, to fortify your stomach and your spirits; for you have had a painful task to perform, although I am sure you are happy to serve your friends."

"Long life to your honours!" said he, swallowing it; "and may my sinful soul never receive salvation if I would n't give up life to-morrow to see those poor folks comfortably settled!"

"I wish to visit this family myself," said my guardian; "therefore do you return, and say I have sent for a physician, and we shall presently come together."

"Heaven grant you health and long life!" said old Matthew again, as he retired.

On examining their limbs, the doctor found them half paralysed; but said he did not despair of their speedy recovery, as he conceived the illness to have been principally caused by weakness, the result of chagrin, misfortune, and want of food. After putting several questions to them, he turned to my guardian, and remarked, with great good feeling,—

"Alas! sir, I have seen but too many such objects of late; and I must confess, at the same time, that none of them have excited more compassion than the family before me: for I, who, from constant habit, have learned to judge of mankind by their outward behaviour and appearance, could almost answer for the honesty and virtue of these poor creatures. Without knowing any thing of their previous history, I am led to believe that their misfortunes have not been brought upon them by any misconduct of their own."

My guardian, who, like myself, was much struck with Jane's beauty, expressed his astonishment that such a lovely girl could have preserved her innocence through scenes of misery and distress. Old Matthew overheard him, and spoke to us in an under voice, so as not to be heard by the family.

"By my soul! your honours, but that girl is a precious jewel; as chaste and as virtuous as an

angel; and, withal, she has a soul as firm as a rock. Our landlord, and the devil himself in the shape of a young lord, could not seduce her; for she preferred virtue and poverty to riches and prostitution. But I shall tell your honours all about it, when we are alone."

The doctor now took his leave, promising to send his prescriptions to the tavern, and to call and see us on the morrow, before we departed for Dublin.

When he was gone, I observed Jane whispering to her parents; and shortly after the mother, who had apparently the most strength of the two, said, so loud that I overheard her,—

"Why not, my child? I feel so much stronger since I ate of that good soup; and it is a duty I owe to their generosity."

"Yes," said the father feebly; "gratitude demands that we should tell them every thing."

Seeing the poor woman was about to relate her story to us, I told her our curiosity was not of the kind that looks for immediate gratification; it was enough for us to know that they were honest persons, reduced to poverty by misfortune, and not by any bad conduct of their own. Besides," I added, "this good old friend of yours appears to be perfectly acquainted with all your concerns and mishaps. When we have dined, he shall relate your story to us at the tavern, as we have determined to remain in the neighbourhood until to-morrow."

"Ah! sir," said Jane, "forgive my poor father and mother. This sudden burst of good fortune, and your charitable and humane relief at a moment when we were all in danger of starving, has made them forget themselves. But you shall hear no more; we shall not attempt to say a word. Whatever we may feel, we must stifle our gratitude."

"Lovely girl!" said my guardian, "thy virtue cannot be indifferent to Heaven, much less to mortals; and we, who are weak ourselves, must forgive the weakness of others. Now, my dear child, listen to me. I shall leave with the doctor, who, I hear, is a worthy and humane man, an order on my banker in Dublin for money to supply you weekly with a sufficient sum to enable you to hire decent lodgings, and administer comforts to your poor feeble parents; and, should any thing occur to require an additional supply, you or your brother can write to me. Here's my address," he added, pulling a card out of his pocket, and marking it with his pencil.

The innocent girl kissed his hand as she took it. He smiled, and said, "Well, I suppose we must pardon this trespass; and now, Walter, let us be going: we shall expect you, Matthew, in the course of a couple of hours." Bidding them all adieu, we departed.

The hovel scene, and the incidents which occurred there, had such an effect upon my spirits, that I was silent and pensive until dinner was put

on the table; and it was only after I had ate my soup, and drank a glass of wine, that I felt in a humour to converse. My guardian seemed likewise thoughtful; till, suddenly laying down his knife and fork, he said, in an animated tone, "Walter, do you know what I have just planned for this distressed family? Why, to send them, when the father and mother are sufficiently recovered, to America, with a strong recommendation to Mr. Fisher, Donnovan's agent, requesting him to furnish them, at our expense, with a safe conveyance direct to Donnovan's."

"Admirably imagined," said I; "and my cousin will be delighted to receive them."

Old Matthew was now announced, and we ordered him into the room. He told us he had found very decent lodgings for the family, not far from their hovel; and that the father and mother already felt much better.

"William, the boy," said he, "wanted to come with me to see your honours; but I would not let him, knowing I should be obliged to tell the history of the family to your honours, and it would not be well for him to be present."

"You thought justly," said my guardian.

Then filling him a tumbler of wine, he bade him drink it, and begin his recital.

Matthew's Story.

"I hope," said Matthew, "your honours will be after excusing me, should I sometimes come out with a bit of an oath, or other out-of-the-way expression; for when a man's heart gets warmed in the cause of his poor ill-treated friends, he can't always keep himself upright and downright. — You must know, then, that this decent, honest, well-looking family, whom your noble honours have just lifted up out of the bed of poverty and distress, were born and bred in the county of Waterford, of respectable parents, whose fathers before them, for many a long year, held the farm in lease, and always lived as neatly and comfortably as any of his lordship's tenants. The man and wife, now lying on straw in yonder hovel, have been used to a good warm feather-bed all their lives before. Your honours, no doubt, have seen by their faces that they are not vulgar people; and their language shows they have had a better education than we poor devils, who pick up knowledge as the rooks do grubs and worms, by little and little. Jane and William have been both well brought up, and can read, write, and cipher as well as the priest of the parish. Old father O'Donnel used to tell them they were the most learned of his parishioners, and the handsomest too!

"Emily, the mother, is descended from a good

Catholic family in the county of Clare. Her father was foolish enough to harbour a man in his house, for pity's sake, who was outlawed. He knew nothing of his evil doings; but, by my faith! no sooner did the soldiers quartered in the neighbourhood get wind of it, than they surrounded the farm, and took the man, with the whole family, as his accomplices. All their property was confiscated, and they were transported to Botany Bay. James and his wife lived very happily and comfortably together for several years, until their eldest daughter, who was also named Emily, grew up. She was as handsome as Jane; but, I'm sorry to say, not possessing her courage and virtue, she let herself be cajoled by a young man of family in the neighbourhood, and died in child-bed.

"This was the beginning of their mishaps. After the loss of their daughter, the mother fell sick, and was near dying herself. Her illness lasted a long time, and cost James a good deal of money. However, she recovered, and was able to look after the family concerns again. About this time the young lord of the manor arrived from England, to inspect the estates, as his father, a very old and feeble man, was soon expected to quit this world of troubles. He came to the house, saw Jane, fell violently in love with her, and tried every means to effect her ruin; but she was not to be brought round to his purpose. She remembered how her poor sister had been treated (the

devil relieve him who deceived her!), and continued as firm as rock-thunder. Neither threats nor promises could move her, by Jasus!! Many's the turning and twisting she cost the young lord; and, though one of the worst men in the county assisted him, the devil an inch they gained. At last he and the cloven-footed agent, one of hell's imps upon earth, laid their heads together, and thought by reducing the family to poverty they could force the parents to yield up their daughter.

"Oh, your honours, that such hard-hearted villains should find protection!

"The rents were increased upon them, and every hardship and vexation practised that could be devised. They were forced to sell off their horses, their cattle, their furniture, and even their clothes: at every sale the agent used to come and tell them, 'if Jane would only consent to live with his employer all should be well again.'

"Ah! your honours, many's the bitter tear have I shed to see the agonies and miseries of those poor souls. At length it came to the worst, and they were to be ejected from the farm, and left destitute. This, however, was suspended for some time, in hopes of her yielding.

"One day she came to her father, threw herself at his feet, and exclaimed, —

"'Oh, my honoured father! I would to God that I had never been born! I am the cause of all your misfortunes, of all your misery! What shall I do to relieve you? Command me! though

I shudder at the thought: I am your child, and am bound to submit to your will.'

"The poor father raised and embraced her, as he said,—

"'No, Jane; thou art good and virtuous. Thy chastity is a jewel, which poverty cannot tarnish, since thou art disposed to resist the allurements of vice abetted by wealth. God will strengthen this feeling in your heart; and never shall it be said that James Martin consented to prostitute his daughter for the love of the world's gear.'

"The young lord, seeing he could gain nothing by this infernal scheme, hired four ruffians to seize upon her, as she went to milk a cow, of which one of the neighbours, from pity and compassion, allowed them to have the use. These rascals were to carry her to a place where a servant waited with a carriage and four horses to take her off to a sequestered mansion his master possessed on the borders of Tipperary. A comrade of mine, who lived near to one of the villains, overheard them talking about it, and directly came and told Matthew and myself when and how they were to proceed in their damnable scheme.

"William was then only fifteen years of age; but just as tall, and much stouter than at present, your honours; because he was better fed, and in high health.

"'William,' said I to him, 'these villains will get hold of your sister in spite of us.'

"'They may,' answered he; 'but were the

devil and all his imps to assist them, they shan't keep her whilst a drop of warm blood flows in my veins!'

"'By the powers of Moll Kelly! my noble boy, but you speak like a man. Here's the hand and heart of Matthew Turner,' said I, squeezing his within my own. 'I swear to stick by you whilst I have life to lift a cudgel;' and I may tell your honours, without bragging, I have been no fool at the play in my time. 'So, my boy,' I continued, 'since your courage is equal to it, by Jasus! but we will give them as neat a dressing as ever currier did raw hide. Let them carry her off quietly, says I, until they get to the turn of the road near the deep ditch and thick-set hedge; there we'll be in waiting for them; and when they think themselves sure of their game, by the blessing of God, but we will come out, and give them what the drummer gives the drum — a devilish good beating; though four to two, my brave boy, are odds.'

"'That's a bull, man,' said he, 'for they are both even numbers.'

"'Bull or cow, by Jasus!' says I 'never mind, only look to your blows; hit twice, before you attempt to help your sister; and take care you don't strike her.'

"'No fear,' said he, 'the evenings are light now; and if you only do your part, I'll not be behind hand with you.'

"'Well, then,' says I, 'so let it be; and if we

don't give them the devil's own dusting, why, then you may call old Matthew a baby.'

"Sure enough, on that evening we blackened our faces, and turned our clothes; but, first, we told the family we were going to cut furze a good way off, and should not be home until late. Off we set, and hid ourselves in the spot we had fixed upon; each well armed with a nice oak twig, as tough as a gad, that would beat a fellow blind before he'd laugh at you.

Says William to me, 'We must mind the first blow; for, if we should not knock two of them down at once, they may get the upper hand of us.'

"'Let me alone for that,' says I, 'they must have thick heads, if I don't make their sconces sound like an empty tin kettle.'

"'But hear me,' said William again; 'don't beat out their brains, Matthew: let us belabour them handsomely, but not commit murder.'

After lying in our ambush for near an hour and a half, without hearing the slightest sound, we began to suspect they had either given up their design, or had gone off by some other road. Suddenly, however, there arose a terrible shriek; and, after an interval of about five seconds, it was repeated louder than before; and then all was still. I had now the greatest difficulty in keeping William quiet: —

"'Be aisy, man,' says I; 'by the powers! we shall have our turn directly.'

"A little while after this we heard a trampling on the road like that of horses.

"'Listen!' said William, grinding his teeth with suppressed rage, and gasping for breath; 'I think they are all mounted; if so, we are undone.'

"'Make yourself aisy, my brave boy;' says I, 'leave me to know the sound of a horse's hoof; that's only the noise of their iron-bound brogues: be still, here they come: let them pass us a little before we sally out.'

"This being hastily agreed to, in a few seconds after they passed by where we lay nicely covered in the furze. In a twinkle we were out upon them, like hungry wolves upon a flock of sheep. Our two first blows laid a pair of them as flat as pancakes in the road; and the others as quickly followed them. After beating them soundly, while they were down, until we maimed them so they could not stand upon their legs, we left them there; taking off Jane in triumph to her parents, who were sobbing and crying, and thought her lost for ever. It would have made your honours' noble hearts glad to have seen how the father and mother cried like babies; and Jane kissed us all for joy; whilst we laughed ready to burst our sides; for all the soot came off our faces upon theirs, and made them look like devils. Their tears now turned to laughter also: but we washed ourselves white again as quick as possible, for

fear any one should come in. However, they did not suspect us, but a farmer's son and his friend, who lived close by, and who was also in love with Jane, but, being a profligate fellow, she had refused his addresses.

"The young lord became so exasperated at being foiled in his attempt, that he continued his persecutions, until he ruined them altogether, and threw them upon the wide world to beg their bread.

"As I had shared their prosperity, when every thing was seized and sold, I assisted them with my earnings, and have ever since partaken their fortunes; for never, your honours, had any people truer hearts, or nobler souls. Fearful of renewed attempts on the young girl, we left the county of Waterford as quickly as possible, and roamed about the country in the vicinity of Dublin for twelve months, picking up what we could earn by hard labour; but, finding the old father and mother weak and sickly from constant exposure and hard living, William and myself brought them to this village, where we hired the hovel in which you saw them. We made Jane stay at home to nurse the old people, whilst we endeavoured, by our labour, to provide food and clothing, and took a stand amongst the baggage men attached to the packets, but were considered as interlopers; and, although we had been there a whole week, your honours' luggage, as if God had

so ordered it, was the first we had been able to lay hold of; and it was twice nearly snatched from us.

"Thanks to the Almighty God!" said the poor old man, as he finished his story, whilst the tear of gratitude moistened his eye; "who sent two guardian angels, to save a poor distressed family from starvation."

We now mentioned our plan of sending him with his friends to my relation in America; and that we would find them a passage to Philadelphia, where we should recommend them to an honest man, who would procure them a safe conveyance to their destination. "There," said I, "you will all live in peace and plenty, as happy as the days are long, under the protection of Mr. Donnovan, who is a countryman of yours, and one of the most generous of mankind."

"What!" cried the old man, "Mr. Donnovan of Clonmel?

"The same."

"His name," said he, "is known all over Ireland, as being the friend and protector of the poor. By my soul! your honours, and much as I love the green sod of my native land, I'm not such a fool as to wish to starve upon it, when I can get a good living in another country; and I'm sure my friends will be rejoiced to accept your generous offer."

"Then," said my guardian; "you must talk

with them this evening; and in a day or two let us know what they say about it." Old Matthew seemed delighted, and, taking a good pinch of snuff, went off, with a smile upon his rough features, to inform his friends of the scheme we had proposed for them.

Early the following morning we seated ourselves in a jaunting car that the landlord had hired to convey us to the city. A profound silence prevailed for some minutes after our departure, until the driver, who was a merry sort of fellow, began to talk to his horse.

"Come," said he, "Mr. Lazy Bones, don't *you* be after dosing, because their honours seem inclined for a nap; or I'll be giving you a touch in the flank. You know we promised to be in Dublin in the course of a couple of hours."

The poor old horse pricked up his ears and mended his pace, as if he had understood him.

"That's a droll beast of yours," said I; "he appears to know what you say to him."

"By my soul! your honour," he replied, "but I've seen many a bigger beast upon two legs: he's a gentlemanly sort of hackney, your honour, that knows a peck of oats from a bag of sand."

"He looks old," said I, willing to encourage the conversation; "and old horses, accustomed to cities and high roads, are always sagacious."

"Why, to be sure, your honour," said he, "he's no chicken; although he's only in his teens, as

they say of the young ladies; but he's spirit to the back-bone, and has paid his old hard-hearted master for his hide ten times over."

"You're not his master, then?"

"No such good luck for poor Pat, your honour, as long as that iron-hearted son of a tinman lives to torment us all. A miserly old son of a tinker! I wish the devil would take his own, and leave the business to his son!"

"But why do you call him the son of a tinker?"

"Because, your honour, the fellow was a tinker first, and so was his father before him; but, by Jasus! he beat and hammered his tin into *coppers*, and then kept a tinman's shop in Little Capel Street, where he turned his tin into gold, and then into carriages, carts, and horseflesh; and he's now one of the richest in his way in Dublin. But his heart is made of iron, for he would n't give a poor fellow a halfpenny to keep him from starving."

My guardian smiled, and said, "Pat, you are very bitter: I've seldom heard a true Irelandman speak ill of his employer."

"Nor would I, your honour, on my own account," retorted Pat. "But look on the high bones of this tough-sinewed hackney: if he belonged to any one else, he would be as fat as a pig; but the old devil, after a hard day's work, gives him a mess of chopped straw, with a handful of bran; 'Very nourishing food,' he says, 'that keeps him free from bots.'"

We laughed heartily at Pat's account of his master; and, on promising him something to buy oats for his favourite, he made him go off at a round pace, and we arrived in a short time at an hotel in Capel Street, where we stopped and took lodgings.

The streets of Dublin presented scenes like those of all other large and populous cities; but the beauty of its public gardens, squares, and buildings is rarely equalled. We therefore spent our time in continual admiration of what we saw; but my attention was principally excited by the Mole, that stupendous work, on which stands the lighthouse, and from whence prospects the richest and most diversified attract the eye in every direction. I stayed there a couple of hours, gazing at the two remarkable islands forming the entrance of the bay. The sloping sides of the mountains on the right, richly adorned with magnificent country seats; the parks and meadows on the left, covered with never-fading verdure, form a striking contrast with the surface of the harbour, crowded with shipping and craft of all descriptions, plying backward and forward. Then the superb city rises majestically on the back-ground, and commands the whole.

The clock of the tower at last warned me to depart, and I descended from its top to return and join my guardian. In the mean time he had engaged places for us in the stage-coach, which quitted Dublin the next morning at a very early hour.

CHAPTER II.

It was decided that, as soon as we had finished our business in Cork, we should make a tour through the counties of Limerick and Kerry, as far as the lakes of Killarney, and return thence by the way of Kildare to Dublin.

After a couple of hours' ride, the coach stopped at the usual station to breakfast, where we assembled round a well-spread table, with our fellow-passengers, consisting of a fat lady, her daughter, and two middle-aged gentlemen. Tea, coffee, eggs, fine fresh butter, hot rolls, cold ham, and fowls, formed what I thought an ample repast in every respect. The fat lady, however, was no sooner seated than, giving her large pug-nose a still greater exaltation, she exclaimed, —

"Bless me! how inconsiderate these people are, not to put some good hot dish upon the table. For my part, when I travel, there 's nothing I prefer to a good substantial beef-steak: it warms the stomach after a cold morning's ride, and soothes the appetite until dinner; whereas these flimsy, light dishes only give one the stomach-ache."

"Perhaps, madam," observed my guardian,

politely, "the host can furnish you with what you desire."

"No, sir," said the hostess, who stood near, "I am very sorry to say we cannot; for beef is not often to be had in our village at this season of the year, and our last supply was consumed yesterday."

"How unfortunate!" cried the younger lady. "But, come, my dear mamma, do let that gentleman (meaning me) help you to some ham and fowl: you must eat, or the jolting of the diligence will make you ill."

I immediately made an offer of my services, and having carved the fowl (that was a very fine one), I put a leg and a wing upon a plate, with a couple of slices of excellent ham. She smiled graciously on receiving it, and said, —

"Really, sir, you carve so handsomely, it makes the food have quite a tempting appearance:"—and she began, with an appetite that would have done justice to a sturdy ploughman. The young lady, after a more moderate fashion, followed her good mother's example, and likewise passed an eulogium on my dexterity as a carver. Good humour now took his seat on the old lady's ample forehead; and the eggs, hot rolls, and butter were found an agreeable addition to the rest of the repast. After making a substantial breakfast, the lady began to talk about her husband and the price of fat cattle. We soon discovered that she was the wife of a rich grazier,

who purchased cattle at the fairs, on speculation, and which, when fat, he sold to the butchers of Cork and Limerick.

The host now announced that the diligence was again ready to start. In an instant all was bustle and confusion; and each one hastened to his place. Mr. Foster, one of the passengers, politely assisted the fat lady to seat herself, which she did with a flounce that alarmed me; for I thought the springs of the diligence must have cracked! And now, whilst I am thinking of it, I must tell my readers what was done for poor Martin's family before we left Dublin, and which the grazier's comfortable winter wife had, for the moment, driven from my recollection.

One morning, just as we were about to sally forth for a long walk, who should we meet in the entry but old Matthew and the boy William. After the usual salutations, the former twisted his hat round and round, took a pinch of snuff with more than ordinary grace, coughed, and then said, —

"Here we are, in Dublin, your honours, by your great bounty and generosity; ay, and, by my soul! as well trigged out as many a better man that we met in the streets. Long life to your noble honours; for all this happiness we owe to the overflowing goodness of your souls. Here, your honours," he continued (drawing a letter out of his bosom), "is a letter from Emily, the old woman herself, who, by your charity, handles her

limbs as well as ever she did, and writes like an attorney's clerk. But, faith! and I think you 'll find the paper still wet with her tears; for they fell from her eyes in a stream all the time she was writing. The old man and all of them are out of their seven senses at the thoughts of going to America, and can talk of nothing else; but read the letter, and then your honours will know more than I can tell you."

After this eloquent speech, and a smile of self-satisfaction, he took another pinch of snuff, and my guardian broke open the letter. It ran thus: —

"Gentlemen,

"Saved, as has been our poor wretched family, from starvation by your humane and charitable hands, I find language too weak to convey to you the inexpressible gratitude of our hearts. How shall we ever be able to repay the more than fatherly protection you have afforded us, and the obligations we owe you? Why, by our constant and fervent prayers to Heaven for your prosperity and happiness. Our first duty, every morning when we rise, and every evening before we lie down to rest, shall be, to offer up a prayer to God for our generous benefactors.

"Ah! gentlemen, you cannot imagine half what we feel towards you, and the anxiety I suffer at my incapacity to explain it. Our tears, which flow at the very mention of your honoured names, are the

only sacrifice we poor forlorn people have to offer at the shrine of your charity and generosity. We accept with joyful thanks your proposal to send us to America; and I remain, kind gentlemen, with an overflowing heart, your most grateful, most devoted, and humble servant until death,

"In the name of all my family,

"EMILY MARTIN."

After perusing this effusion of gratitude, we hastened to make the necessary arrangements for their voyage to Liverpool, and from thence to America, in the same ship that brought us over. Having furnished Matthew and William with the necessary letters of credit and recommendation, we despatched them back to their family the same afternoon, and my guardian wrote a letter to Emily and her husband, giving them instructions how to proceed on their arrival at Philadelphia.

But to return from this digression: I was dwelling on the happy prospects we had been enabled to open in the future career of this poor family, when the boisterous mirth of Mrs. Mullen and her daughter, who laughed aloud at some observation of their facetious friend, roused me from my reverie. At that instant, a range of fine pastures, thickly clothed with grass, intermingled with wild flowers, and in which large herds of the fattest cattle were grazing, attracted my attention. Near to them rose a handsome farm-house, with barns,

stables, and other agricultural buildings, overshadowed by a grove of venerable elm trees, inhabited by a family of cawing rooks. The whole of these pleasant fields were fenced off with hedgerows, in which the bright yellow blossom of the furze predominated, and poured a flood of golden-coloured light upon the landscape. A crowd of men, women, and children, some in groups, others running to and fro, and all busily occupied, gave life and effect to the picture; but I sighed when a nearer approach discovered their poor and ragged condition. The rosy tints of health glowed upon the cheeks of the younger children; but they were almost naked.

"Alas!" involuntarily I exclaimed, "what a contrast! How gay and beautiful is the aspect of nature; but how miserable are the human beings who cultivate these rich and pleasant fields!"

"This, sir," said a gentleman, who had been conversing with my guardian, and who overheard my exclamation; "this, sir, is the effect of those accursed tithes, agents, and sub-leasing. How unjust are they who, by their narrow policy, and a total misconception of the noble character and feelings of the Irish, and a neglect of their fertile and ever-verdant country, have enacted laws which place the inhabitants in the scale of existence little above those hordes of savage Tartars who roam through the plains of Siberia. Indeed, the latter have the advantage; for their government is mild and paternal. They are not oppressed

with tithes or agents, and pay but a trifling tribute to the great sovereign of Russia: they maintain their independent character, and live in peace and plenty. But our poor peasants, sir, are doomed to labour hard for a miserable pittance, to promote the advantage of a certain class of men — leeches, sir, who extract the vital fluid from the wretched peasant, and exhaust the strength of the farmer.

"Then, sir, the agents of rich proprietors; I can find no terms strong enough to express my disgust and contempt of him who, conscious that the fate of thousands of interesting human beings—men of the same flesh and blood as himself—depends on his will, yet disdains to employ his own eyes to ascertain whether they are capable of supporting the burthen he has placed upon their shoulders. He will look after his horses, will take care that they are well stabled and fed; but his tenants are beneath his notice."

"But, sir," observed my guardian, "the system has already experienced a change: surely, those who have been wise and good enough to bring about the emancipation will not abandon their plan of amelioration until it is completed, and which the government seems seriously inclined to accomplish?"

"The emancipation, sir," rejoined the elderly gentleman, with a contemptuous smile, "was a political bugbear, conjured up to frighten the ministers; which the leaders of the Catholics conceived would be an acknowledgment, or rather

an acquiescence, to the general plan of improvement; and that they would be led on gradually to a compliance with all that was demanded. But they began at the wrong end, and are now sorely disappointed to perceive that the tithes, the greatest evil of all, remain to torment and distress the poor. The abolition of these ought to have been the first step: it would have really emancipated the Catholics from the shackles of a cruel burthen."

"I am surprised," said I, "that the ministers of Great Britain, if they are ignorant of the real state of this country, do not send some men of known honour and integrity to investigate and ascertain the truth."

"Sir," answered the old gentleman, "they have indulged unjust and improper notions of the character, sentiments, and feelings of the Irish. They imagine we desire to make ourselves independent of them; and have mistaken the wild and ridiculous schemes of a few infuriated demagogues for the wishes of the whole nation. How grossly have they been deceived! No reflecting man in Ireland, who possesses the least patriotism, can harbour such a thought. The natural dependence of the two islands on each other is too strikingly evident and necessary to admit of a dispute, or to permit the belief that any one could be so blind to their real interest as to wish for an event destructive to them both. Our union may be compared to the fable of the bunch of rods, which,

united, are not to be broken, but, when separated are easily snapped asunder."

The conversation was now suddenly interrupted by our fat friend, Mrs. Mullen, who espying a herd of fat cattle driven across the road, put out her capacious head, which almost touched both sides of the coach window at once to gaze upon these living sirloins and ambulant beef-steaks:—

"God Almighty save my soul, sir!" cried she, as she resumed her seat, "what well-fed cattle! I have not seen such a show since I left the south. God be with the green pastures of Cork and Limerick!"

"True, true, madam," observed the obsequious Mr. Foster.

"True enough!" indignantly said the old gentleman who sat on the opposite seat: "only it's a pity you cannot teach the peasants to live upon grass also; then they might be as fat and as happy as those who eat the beef of their fattening."

The lady grazier seemed struck dumb by the remark, but took no further notice than by elevating her nose with an air of profound contempt, while the daughter pointedly remarked to Mr. Foster that, for her part, she hated politics and politicians.

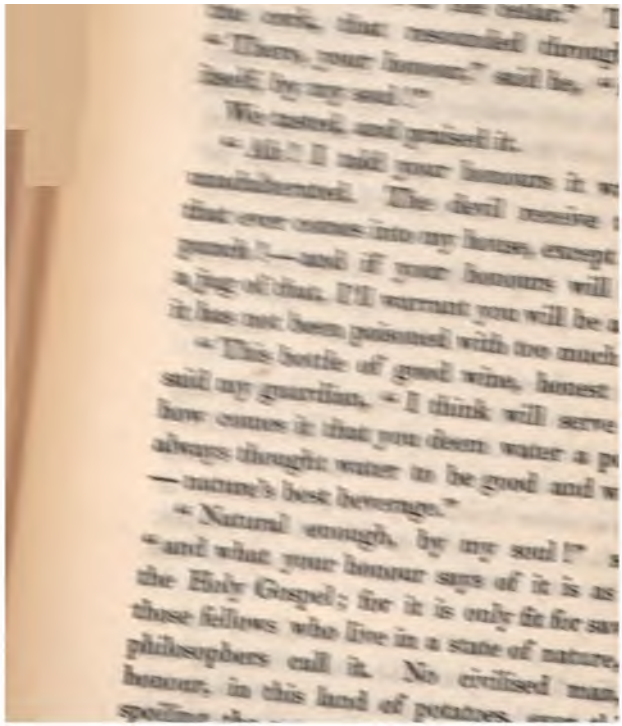
A long silence followed this retort; and I fell into a dose, which lasted until we arrived where we were to pass the night.

Our fat double lady being safely discharged from the diligence, we all followed; and I was pleased to see a neat, comfortable dwelling, a cleanly housewife in the hostess; while the host had one of those honest, open, but witty, countenances which one often sees amongst his countrymen. He was well-behaved, and welcomed us in the broad south dialect; at the same time urging his wife "to be after hurrying the supper," which was duly served; and the amiable Mrs. Mullen appeared lost in ecstasy at the sight of a large dish of beef-steaks, placed immediately before her.

"There! Mr. Foster," she exclaimed, "these are sensible *peple*, of good *eddication*, as you may hear from the landlord's tongue, who knows how to provide decently for travellers. Give us, landlord, if you please, a jug of whisky punch: what say you, Mr. Foster?"

"True, true, madam: oh! by all means. Whisky punch, madam, is a very wholesome drink, and now used by the first people in the land."

The liquor was brought, and the landlord, finding we did not partake of it, said to us, "Gentlemen, wo'n't ye be after trying a bottle or two of my claret? It's from a Dublin house, and of very superior quality: I'll warrant it neat as imported — the genuine stuff, of high flavour and fine colour." We assented, and, in a minute



beverage. Besides, your honour, even those who don't like whisky are always for qualifying the water with *tay;* and *tay*, as all the world knows without my telling them, is a costly foreign lafe, dried the devil knows how, — for I can't tell you, — and is like Sam Loftus's gun, that costs more than it comes to, and weakens the digestion. This is the reason, your honour, why your tay-drinkers have such fable stomachs, and are always for putting a few drops of the cratur into it, to keep off its poisonous effects."

We could not help laughing during the whole of this *tirade* against what Cowper styles "the cups which cheer but not inebriate;" and the lady grazier exclaimed, —

"Right, right, landlord! When I was young I was particularly fond of tay, and was, therefore, very thin and puny; but for the last ten or fifteen years I have never drunk any thing but coffee to my breakfast, and whisky punch to my supper, and ascribe my perfect health entirely to this excellent *regiment.*"

"There, gentlemen!" said the landlord, with an arch look, "I think you'll be after confessing that this stout, healthy-looking lady (God be with her rosy cheeks and her *regiment!*) is a fair proof of the propensity of our Irish liquor to make the fat stick to the ribs. But for laving off the tay, and taking to whisky punch, by Jasus! madam, but you might have died of a consumption!"

We could hardly abstain from laughing aloud,

for the landlord's roguish eye glanced at the dish of beef-steaks, already half consumed, as he closed the last sentence. The old gentleman, however, who seemed to stand in no awe of the lady grazier, burst into a loud "ha! ha!"

The good fat woman was piqued, and said to the landlord, —

"Let those laugh that please; but I thank God that I am no *skilleton*."

The old gentleman, who happened to be very thin, smiled, but made no reply; and the landlord continued: —

"Long life to you, Mrs. Mullen! for you're worth a thousand *skilletons* — the dearest that were ever made in the 'Pothecaries' Hall. By Jasus! but it makes one comfortable to look at you both; for your husband, God bless him! is as stout and as portly a looking man as one meets in a long summer's day. I know him well; he always favours my house. Long life and success to his grazing!"

"A good toast," remarked Mr. Foster, filling his tumbler, and bowing to the lady; who, with an ineffable smile of plenitude in mind and body, said, —

"Thank you, sir, in my husband's name. I'm very much obliged to you, landlord, and shall tell Mr. Mullen that you are a worthy man, who does n't forget your customers."

"Now, your honours," said the landlord, turning to us again, "I have some ould whisky in

my cellar. By the powers! I can't tell you how ould it is, without lying; but I verily believe it was made about the time of King Fergus, or when Adam was a little boy. If you'd only be after tasting a drop of it, your supper will lie upon your stomach as light as a bit of cork."

"No, thank you," replied my guardian, "I never drink strong liquors."

"Strong! your honour," rejoined Boniface, "why, by all the stars in the firmament! it's like an ould man of ninety, for its strength has been kilt by age; it's as mild and as meek as the child in his mother's womb — as smooth, your honour, as the surface of the holy stone, and soft as sweet oil or melted butter!"

"The milder the more deceitful," was the reply. "But, come, make us a small jug of punch from it, and take care to *poison* it with more water than is your general practice." He disappeared in an instant.

When the ladies and Mr. Foster had retired for the night, my guardian, addressing those who remained, observed, "I could not help indulging this facetious fellow; so, gentlemen, if you are not sleepy, we will sit for an hour or two, and enjoy the mother-wit of our landlord, who seems to have been designed by nature for an inn-keeper." They were expressing their hearty acquiescence, when the host reappeared.

"Now, your honours," said he, "if this don't plase you, then you may call me a sheep-stealer.

Nor will I deceive you, but tell the honest truth: it was made by my wife; for your honour must be after knowing that she was a sort of a housekeeper for several years in the family of Lord Longfield, when I was his butler; but, as the devil would have it, I never could plase him in making the punch; so I tould my swateheart, Mary, of my mishap, and that I was afraid of losing my place.

"'Och, Tim,' says she, 'be asy; let me alone for that. Give me the jug and the whisky: I'll do your business for you.' Then at it she went, your honour; and, when it was ready, off I took it, with a trembling at my heart, to know how his lordship would like it. After the first glass, he smacked his lips, and said, 'Butler!'

"'Here I am, your honour,' says I.

"'This punch plases me,' says he; 'and now, since I see you can make good punch when you like, if ever you bring me any more such weak trash as you did yesterday, I'll be after quarrelling with you outright.'

"I bowed, and took myself off; and the next Sunday, by Jasus! I married Mary, and with her punch making, your honour, I wound myself round the old lord so that, two years after, he fitted me up in this tavern; and here I am, your honour, with my good wife, as happy as the days are long."

We now tasted his beverage, and found it

excellent. My guardian then filled him a large tumbler: —

"Come, landlord," said he, "sit down; we want to have some chat with you. We love to hear the old Irish stories of robbers, witches, devils, and enchantment: unlock the storehouse of your brain, and give us a specimen of your talents that way."

"By my soul! and with all my heart, sir," he replied. "And now you talk of robbers, I'll tell you a murderous story about this very spot, and the oak forest opposite the house. The building where the murders were committed has been long destroyed, and this one was erected on its foundation, after it was cleansed and prayed over by all the priests in the county. I had the story from my grandfather, your honour, who died at the age of eighty-six: he heard it from a very old man, who told him it was a tale of a hundred years before his time, when almost every province of Ireland had its own king.

"To begin, then, your honours: —A gentleman of good fortune, who had served in the army, a brave and a stout, athletic man, when there were no wars to occupy him, loved to travel into the different provinces, on horseback, with no other companion than an uncommonly large mastiff. He once set out on a journey from Clonmel to Dublin; but, before his departure, his friends tould him to beware of sleeping at the 'Black Tavern,' as it was called, near the large oak

forest; for, of all the persons who had ever pa
the night there, not one was known to esc
They then mentioned the names of four or
brave men of their acquaintance, who had
traced to the house, but who were never
afterwards.

" ' This is the very place,' said Colonel F
' that I mean to seek out: I shall take ca
arrive there in the evening with my faithful
Lion, and we shall see who will get the u
hand.'

" In vain his friends tried to detain him.
more they endeavoured to excite his fears,
more determined he seemed; and he swor
his whiskers and the holy cross to find out
cause of all those secret murders, or to peri
the attempt. He was an unerring shot, and
owner of a pair of pistols that never missed
then, as to courage, he was bravery to the b
bone, being never so happy as when an op
tunity of exerting his prowess presented itself

" Full of this scheme, he prepared a small
manteau, in which he placed his fire-arms, ins
of wearing them in his belt, as was the custo
those times. This he thought the best mo
concealing his purpose; and, having clothed
self like a simple country gentleman, off he st
with his dog Lion, that had been in many
ventures with his master, and, like him,
killed several men in his time. Having trav
the whole length of the road without meeting

one who dared to cross his way, at the close of the third day he reached the neighbourhood of this much dreaded spot.

"At a farm-house in a village a little off the road, about three miles from the tavern, the colonel asked for something to drink. When he had finished, and was about to ride off, the farmer called after him and inquired where he was going so late in the day?

"'I am travelling on to Dublin.'

"'For Heaven's sake! don't attempt to go farther to-night. It will soon be dark; and the only place where you can sleep, for many miles round, is the Black Tavern, which is notorious throughout this country for the atrocious murders and robberies committed there.'

"This warning, however, had as little effect as the others: he laughed at the farmer's fears, and continued his journey.

"Having rode a good distance that day, his horse began to be fatigued. On coming in sight of the house, he checked his speed, and went slowly, that the animal might grow cool; and seeing a woman at the door, he desired her to feed him with oats immediately.

"'So, then, sir, you don't mean to pass the night here?'

"'Yes; but I wish to start again early in the morning: and when my horse is cool, he must be fed at once. Come, I'll go see you give him his corn.'

"This done, he entered the tavern. In the first room were only the landlord and his wife; but in an adjoining apartment, the door of which lay open, three ill-looking fellows were squatting round the chimney. They would probably have remained unobserved by him, had not one of them begun to scrape up the embers of an almost extinguished fire to light his pipe, the glare of which was just sufficient to expose the group, whose savage and sinister expression of countenance was by no means calculated to lull his suspicions, and tended to confirm the popular belief in the bad character of the house and its inmates.

"As he passed, he heard one of them muttering something about "the traveller;" but it was so indistinct, that he failed to catch the exact import of the words; and, following the woman, who conducted him into a low-arched room, he expressed a wish to sup.

"'Your honour must know,' she replied, 'that in our poor tavern we have not much to offer; but, as far as a broiled fowl, and some eggs and milk, we can furnish them to you almost immediately.'

"'That,' said the colonel, 'is exactly what I like; but first bring some milk also for my dog.'

"He was about to follow her into the kitchen, to see whether he had exactly counted the number of men assembled round the fire, when she said, in a hurried tone,—

" ' Pray, sir, don't trouble yourself, but sit down, and I 'll be with you again directly.'

" In a short time she returned, and placed a vessel before the animal. He smelt all around it, but did not attempt to drink. The woman, seeing him keep aloof, pushed the platter nearer; when Lion immediately growled at her, and showed his teeth. Knowing his dog was remarkably fond of milk, his rejection of it on the present occasion appeared extremely singular: it might be poisoned; and the suspicion of having the same trick practised upon himself made him proceed with caution.

" The broiled fowl was now placed upon the table, and whilst the woman went out to bring the remainder of his supper, he cut off a joint and offered it to Lion. After smelling at it for some seconds, and licking it cautiously, he took it in his teeth and began to eat. Relying on the sagacity of his dumb attendant, the colonel finished the remainder himself, giving the bones to Lion, who cracked them with great seeming satisfaction; but nothing could induce him to drink the milk, or even to approach the vessel in which it was contained.

" The eggs and potatoes were also demolished in their turn; and the moment supper was finished, the colonel asked to be shown where he was to sleep. The landlord himself came in to attend him ; and, on being desired to take up the portmanteau and carry it to his chamber, a sinister

look of satisfaction appeared to cross his features when he felt the weight of it, thinking, no doubt, that the pistols were rouleaus of gold and silver.

"As they ascended a pair of back stairs, the host eyed the dog with a malicious scowl, and asked the colonel if he wished him to sleep in his bed-room; adding, that opposite there was a small place furnished with straw, where he would be more comfortable.

"'O no,' replied the colonel; 'my dog is a troublesome animal. If I were to put him there, he would howl all night, and prevent us from sleeping.'

"They now entered the bed-chamber, and the host laid the portmanteau on the chest of drawers, wished the colonel a 'Good night,' and retired, locking the door on the outside, and taking away the key.

"This unusual proceeding did not escape the notice of his guest. He went to the door with the candle, examined the lock, and saw that the bolt went into the centre of the door-post, in a part well cased with iron, so that it could not be forced back or cut out. Being determined to make a stout defence, in case of any attempt at foul play, this circumstance gave him little uneasiness; it being exceedingly improbable the people of the house possessed fire-arms, which, at the period of this story, were very rare, and only to be found in the possession of military men and persons of

condition. Besides, as he had not shown his own pistols, being four to one, thought he, they will deem fire-arms unnecessary; and, in that case, I shall have the advantage.

"Whilst examining the lock, he observed his dog walking cautiously and smelling all around the room; but when he came to the bedside he was still more guarded, stretching out his fore paws as if to keep himself from tumbling into some snare. His master watched him narrowly; and, conceiving it possible that some one might be concealed under the bed, he stooped down and examined carefully; but nothing particular struck his eye, except that the floor under the bed looked of a darker colour than the other parts of the room, which he ascribed to the shade of the bed. He then searched about to ascertain if the wainscot was solid, and if there were any closets where persons might be concealed; but he could find nothing. In the mean time Lion still continued uneasy, constantly shifting his position; and when he lay down he kept his body in a curve line, with his ears erect, and his hind legs gathered under him, just as dogs do when they wish to spring suddenly upon any thing.

"The colonel now unbuckled his portmanteau, took out his pistols, examined if the flints were in good condition, put fresh priming into the pans, then cocked and laid them on the table. As they had been loaded that very morning at the house

where he slept the previous night, he knew the charges were fresh, and he felt assured they would do their duty in his undaunted and steady hand.

" After his pistols were ready, he threw off the upper portion of his dress, and, taking a story book that he carried with him to amuse himself, he sat down in the arm-chair and began to read. However, he first called Lion to him; but he, that had been hitherto the fondest and most obedient of animals, was now obstinately fixed at his post. The colonel frowned, and spoke to him angrily: he then rose, approached him, licked his hand, and returned immediately to his former station.

" This surprised the colonel so much, that he again looked under the bed, but could see nothing. Finding the dog could not be induced to stir, he went on with his book. A death-like silence prevailed throughout the house: the murmuring of voices, which he heard for awhile after the host had descended the stairs, was no longer to be distinguished, and he concluded the whole family had retired to rest. Not being much in the humour for reading, and feeling rather fatigued with his long ride, but more, perhaps, from having eaten a hearty supper, a drowsiness came over him, and he determined to lie down dressed as he was, so that he might be ready at a moment's warning. As he rose from the chair with this intention, Lion laid hold of his clothes, and held him back with all his force. Astonished at

the dog's interference, he returned and seated himself in the chair, keeping his eyes fixed upon the bed, whilst Lion resumed his station, occasionally looking round at his master.

"All at once, from, perhaps, constantly looking at the bed, he imagined the blankets appeared to rise and fall; and, coupling the dog's constant attention to that side of the room with this circumstance, it immediately occurred to him that a stout fellow might possibly be concealed beneath the bed-clothes, ready to seize him when he should attempt to lie down. Being a powerful man, upwards of six feet high, and knowing by experience, that a thump of his fist would either kill or maim the man it fell upon, he decided to jump up quickly and give the bed a blow well laid on, which would immediately clear up his suspicions. Watching a moment when the dog had turned his head from him, he sprang from his chair and struck the bed violently: he had no sooner done so, than the animal seized him with such force, that he threw him backwards at full length upon the floor, whilst at the same instant, to his utter astonishment, the floor gave way, and the bed and bedstead sank down with a terrible crash into a deep chasm, where, but for the sagacity of his faithful companion, he would have tumbled headlong himself. He had barely time to recover himself from the momentary surprise this most unexpected incident occasioned, and get upon his legs again, when he heard several foot-

steps ascending the wooden staircase that l
his chamber. Always cool and collected
snatched his pistols from the table; whilst
who also instantly noticed the approaching
went and seated himself on his haunches
behind the door.

"The Colonel observed with satisfactio
advantageous position chosen by Lion, and p
himself just behind him; perceiving that wh
entered must expose his whole body direc
his fire, and that he should be enabled t
off a couple of his adversaries before they
have time to make an attack.

"He had scarcely taken up his position
he heard the key forced into the lock, the
opened; and the landlord, who was the fi
enter, no sooner made his appearance, tha
dog, seizing him by the throat, dragged him
the floor. The man who followed was
through the head, and the third shared the
fate; whilst the fourth, brandishing a large
rushed upon the Colonel, who received a
wound in his left arm. He, however, stru
robber a blow on the head that felled him
ground; and Lion, having despatched the
lord, now seized the prostrate robber by the
and the Colonel, wresting his dagger from
stabbed him in three or four places so sev
that he lay for dead.

"He then dressed himself very deliber
slung his portmanteau over his shoulders, and,

ing reloaded his pistols, one of which he stuck in his belt, and holding the other in his hand, seized the candle, and softly descended the staircase. On entering the room below, he saw the hostess, who screamed, and endeavoured to escape; but Lion had her by the petticoats in a second. She fell upon her knees and begged her life. The Colonel called off his dog. He then told her, if she attempted to prevaricate, or in any way conceal the truth from him, he would put her to death instantaneously.

"'First, tell me, are there any more men about the house, or in the outhouses?'

"'None; there is only my son, the boy who fed your horse: he sleeps in the stable, near a horse that is slways kept ready saddled to start off, and carry news to the band in the forest.'

"'Conduct me to him.'

"The woman led the way, and they found the boy asleep. When his mother awoke him, he seemed dreadfully alarmed.

"'Fear nothing,' said the Colonel; 'you have only to do as I tell you, and no harm shall happen to you. Saddle my horse, and lead him and your own out of the stable.'

"The boy and his mother together soon prepared them both; when the latter again fell on her knees, exclaiming,—

"'Have pity, noble gentleman, on an unfornate woman, who has been drawn into this mode of life against her will. My husband and myself.

and this poor boy, lived in a small cabin, o
Dublin side of the forest, where there is
bog, of which the owner gave us the freedo
conditions which enabled us to gain a
livelihood. We had three cows, a couple of h
and some sheep; and, with the produce
dairy, contrived to live comfortably. As th
bers never injured us, when any enquiry was
we always pretended to know nothing about
At last, however, three policemen and som
diers were sent and quartered in our cott
watch them; some malicious person having
that, were we not accomplices, we should
been murdered long ago. The gang foun
that the policemen and soldiers lived wit
and one night, whilst we were asleep, th
tacked the house, set fire to it, and mur
all the men they could find. My husband
the fray; but they took this poor boy and
prisoners, robbed me of our cattle, and burnt
thing else that they could find, even to th
and straw. The man whom your honou
slain kept the Black Tavern, and is one
bullies of the band. He took me home with
and kept myself and my boy ever since
servants; I dreaded him so much, I never
to tell any one my story.'

" ' Enough,' said the Colonel: ' mount b
your son upon that horse, and come with me

" They obeyed, and in the course of a qu
of an hour got to the farm-house, where

Colonel had stopped the evening before. He knocked and roused the farmer, for it was not yet daylight.

" On coming to the door, and seeing the Colonel, he exclaimed, —

" ' God be praised ! good man ; I never expected to see you again, when you told me you were going to sleep at the Black Tavern.' The Colonel now told the farmer the events of the night, and that his name was Foley.

" ' Oh ! your honour ' said he, ' we know you well by report, and long life to your brave heart !'

" ' Here,' said the Colonel, ' keep this woman and her son in safe custody until I return. The work I have begun must be completed. We must extirpate this band of villains.'

" Saying this, he rode off to a town about three miles farther on, where he collected, as speedily as possible, a party of men well armed and mounted, with whom he returned to the farmer's. The woman now confessed that the remainder of the gang lived in a cave in the forest, to which her son could lead them ; and that they were at least twenty strong, all robust, determined fellows.

" ' I would advise you,' she continued, ' to go back to the tavern : not that you will find any thing there, for they carry all their booty to the cave ; but you will be able to discover whether any one has been there since you left it ; and if

not, then you will be sure of finding the whole gang at home; during the morning; for they made an agreement to meet at the cave to consult about attacking a lonely farm-house on the Limerick road, about ten miles off; and to-morrow night is the time they have fixed for the execution of their murderous designs.'

" At the close of this relation, the Colonel took the boy, and hastened with his party to the Black Tavern, where they arrived at an early hour. He first led them up stairs, where they found the four men lying dead; and they were loud in their praise and admiration of his prowess, and the sagacity and bravery of Lion. One of the men, the last whom the Colonel stabbed, had recovered sufficiently to crawl from the room to the head of the stairs; when his strength failed him, and he expired. They now descended, for the purpose of discovering the passage to the frightful abyss, in which the bed and bedstead had sunk, the sight of which made the whole party shudder. After a long search, they found a trap-door in the floor of the kitchen; and, having procured torches, they descended a narrow staircase, which led to a sort of a dungeon. Here a gleam of light penetrated from the large square hole in the centre of the Colonel's chamber, through which the bedstead had fallen. It remained suspended, together with the bed, on one side of the hole; whilst the bedclothes had fallen upon a number of long and extremely sharp iron spikes, fixed in an oak plank,

and on which the unfortunate sleeper must have been impaled and killed immediately.

" The Colonel was now more than ever convinced that he owed his life to the sagacity of Lion, that, no doubt, scented the dead bodies beneath, and prevented his master from lying down on the bed. The mangled remains of two unhappy victims lay naked by the side of the spikes. Others were heaped in a corner, and covered with lime; which some of the party having scraped off, the stench became insupportably offensive; and the party left this horrid charnel-house, muttering oaths of vengeance against the atrocious villains of whom they were in pursuit.

" On questioning the boy, he declared it to be the most favourable moment for attacking them, as they had been roving about all night, and were then fast asleep. When within about a quarter of a mile of the cave, the boy told the Colonel he had better make all his men dismount, and leave their horses tied to the trees; for that the robbers, living under ground, could hear the trampling of a horse a long distance off.'

" Accordingly, the whole party proceeded, according to the boy's directions, on foot, in a file of only two abreast, and with cautious steps, so as not to rustle amongst the bushes, or make the slightest noise. At length they came to the spot where a large spreading oak directed the boy in his search after the secret door, which, being

covered with green sods, was always dif
find, even by those who belonged to the
"After groping about for some time,
ped, and then beckoned the Colonel to ap
"'Yonder it is,' said he, in a whisp
hark! I hear them snoring. Have h
party ready to rush in with their drawn
when I open it, and leave the other half w
muskets to guard the entrance.' So say
boy gently lifted up the door, and the
himself was the first to jump in, follow
dozen more brave fellows. The noise th
roused the robbers, who bounced up a
about them with their cutlasses, which wer
at hand; but the Colonel's powerful arm
man prostrate at every blow. Some few
out in spite of their opponents, and tried t
into the forest; but they were fired at
diately by the guard. In ten minutes fi
commencement of the fight, a fourth
number only remained alive, and they
badly wounded, as to be incapable of mak
further resistance.
"In the cave the Colonel found an i
booty in gold and silver coin, silver plate, r
costly dresses, and merchandise, besides
of eatables and liquors. Half of a fat ox a
fat sheep hung in an outer apartment, whe
found three poor women, who, at the beg
having heard the boy at the door, and th
of many persons, suspected what was go

happen, and ran and hid themselves under some sheaves of straw which lay on one side of this little store-room. They trembled all over, and, pale as death, asked mercy on their knees, declaring they had been kidnapped from their families, and lived there entirely against their will. The boy confirmed their story; and the Colonel bade them make themselves easy, as he should provide for their safe return to their homes.

"He then sent for the horses, which he loaded with the spoils of the cave. His men buried the dead robbers in the forest, and the five survivors were tried and executed. He gave all the women money, clothes, and a safe escort to their relations; and the poor widow, who remained with the farmer, also got her share. As for the boy, he was so pleased with his fidelity, that he took him into his service.

"As soon as the rest of the booty found in the cave arrived at the village, the Colonel declared it was the property of the king; and, procuring a strong escort, he proceeded with it to the palace. His majesty, however, was so charmed with the Colonel's gallantry, and the destruction of this ferocious band, that he made him a present of the whole, named him generalissimo of his troops, and gave him his niece, a young lady of great beauty and accomplishments, in marriage.

"And now, gentlemen," continued the landlord, "I must finish my story, by begging you to drink health and long life to the Foleys of our

days, the descendants of this brave Colonel. At the old King's death (who left no nearer kindred than General Foley's wife), he disputed his right to the crown with a distant branch from Ulster, and was treacherously stabbed by a base and perfidious officer of his own guard on the field of battle, and almost at the moment of victory. The Foleys, your honour, in this county of Cork, hold their heads high, and are amongst our most distinguished families."

We thanked the landlord for his terrific but interesting story; and, filling his tumbler as well as our own, we all drank prosperity to this ancient race, and the memory of their intrepid ancestor.

"What a horrible place," said I, "must this Black Tavern have been!"

"Thank God! sir," said the landlord, "although we have had some murders and violence committed in consequence of the tithes, yet we have none of those bands of rogues and villains as used to collect together in ould ancient times, in defiance of the police of the country."

It being now very late, we finished our jug of punch, and retired for the night.

CHAPTER III.

THE morning found us again on the road; though I confess I wished to have remained to breakfast, in order to have the pleasure of hearing another of our facetious landlord's stories whilst we drank our coffee. I told him so as we were about to step into the diligence: a broad grin overspread his shrewd, good-humoured features, whilst he replied,—

"By my soul! and I am happy to have had the good fortune to hit your honour's taste; and if ever you should do me the honour to take a jug of my wife's punch, I shall be after giving you another batch of them." Then, in an under voice, he added, "Should the diligence be again upset, remember, your honour, to keep the upper side of Peg Mullen; for the devil relieve the poor man's bones that comes under her."

I laughed out as I entered the diligence; and my guardian said, "Why, Walter, you are merry betimes."

"Yes," I replied; "the recollection of a diligence I once saw overturned on this very road, under very ludicrous circumstances, when I was a boy, made me laugh."

"My God! sir," said the Lady Grazier, in a

Ralph. "How can you find subject for mirth in such a dreadful accident? Why, the very mention of it makes me tremble with horror!"

"Don't say one word more," said Mr. Foster, "do not alarm yourself. I assure you, the whole of the saga is found, where we shall breakfast, [illegible] and bolting-gown."

"Yes, assuredly," observed the daughter, "I wonder every inch of the road; and there can be no danger except, indeed, at the hill about a mile from the town, which I hope we shall descend slowly."

The old gentleman again exchanged glances with me, as much as to say that he was pleased that [illegible] the greater's wife uneasy, whom he detested. However, the consolatory assurances of her friend calmed her apprehensions; and on we went at a rapid rate, until we arrived at the very hill alluded to by Miss Mullen. Sure enough, it was a terribly rough spot; and, although we went at a slow walk, the wheels often passed over large stones, and came down with a tremendous crash. From a desire to avoid these frequent concussions, which made the ladies scream whenever they took place, the driver kept nearer to the hedge, where, though the stones were few, unfortunately they were larger. Just as the fore and hind wheel, on the side nearest the hedge, had passed over one immense fragment, of a sudden both the leather straps attached to the springs snapped short off, and down came the diligence with a

tremendous crash on the side occupied by the fat lady. The violent blow which the body received against the iron crane-necks beneath made us all bounce out of our seats. Mr. Foster, who was seated opposite Mrs. Mullen, folding her in his arms as she was about to fall upon him, they both tumbled against the door: the clasp being old and ricketty, it burst open, and out flew the Lady Grazier and her friend into the middle of a thick-set hedge, closely followed by the amiable Miss Mullen, who lay most unceremoniously upon top of them. The moment the leather straps gave way, I had the presence of mind to seize hold of the window with one hand, and my guardian with the other, so that we both escaped unhurt; while the old gentleman, our companion, fell into the bottom of the diligence; but he grasped fast hold of one of my legs as he was sliding out of the door, and escaped with only a slight contusion on the shin.

I now contrived to open the door on the opposite side, and we all three immediately jumped into the road and ran to the assistance of the ladies, who lay piled upon Mr. Foster; whilst he never ceased to roar like a bull, that he was nearly suffocated by them.

The diligence was so near the hedge, that I had some difficulty to squeeze between it and the bushes on the one side, whilst my guardian went on the other: however we succeeded in getting Miss Mullen up, who all but fainted in my arms;

and then, with the assistance of the driver, we contrived to draw her mamma off of the body of her poor half smothered friend, who groaned and sighed, and swore some of the black-thorns had entered a full inch into his flesh.

The ladies' faces and arms were so severely scratched and torn, that the blood ran from the wounds; and, altogether, they cut a dismal figure. What with the lamentations of the bruised and mangled Mr. Foster, whose face was also covered with blood, it was at once a serious and a most ridiculous scene. To laugh appeared unfeeling, and not to laugh required, at all events, more philosophy than was possessed by the old gentleman with the broken shin, whom I observed seated on the bank opposite to us, laughing to such a degree, that he was obliged to hold his sides. Indeed, I was near bursting forth once or twice myself, particularly at first; for the passengers on the top, three in number, were pitched clear over the hedge. One of them, a sailor, exclaimed to his comrade, whilst I was assisting the ladies,—

"Shiver my timbers! Jim, what a lucky escape we've had, in being thrown up high and dry over the shoal when the ship struck; whilst that she whale, with her blubber chops, lies flouncing amongst the furze; and if they don't clap a bowsing-tackle upon her stern-sheets, I'll be d——d if they'll get her afloat again for a month of Sundays."

Whether the Lady Grazier really fainted, or

only pretended to faint, I cannot exactly determine. She was dragged forth from the hedge to all appearance lifeless; and if it had not been for the aid of two or three good-natured pedestrian travellers, who happened to be near, the reader will readily conceive that we must have allowed this huge mass of flesh to lie where it was thrown, and poor Mr. Foster would have perished without rescue.

The smelling-bottle, and some cold water from a neighbouring cottage, at length called the roses to her dumpling cheeks; which, from a livid paleness, now glowed with all the intensity of a full-blown peony. Clapping her arms a-kimbo on her protuberant hips, she waddled up to the driver.

"How dare you, impudent rascal!" said she, "start upon the road without first examining your springs and straps, to see that they are all sound and good; and thus, by your neglect, endanger the precious lives of all the passengers? Rely on it, I'll enter a complaint against you and your master the moment I arrive at Limerick."

"I beg your ladyship a thousand million of pardons," said the discomfited Jehu; "but if your honour will only be after looking at the straps, you will see that they are as sound as good tanned leather can make them. It was the terrible big stones, and your honour, too, being seated on the same side, that made the wheels come down with such a crash: for, axing your honour's

pardon, you 're no *puppet* in weight: by Jasus! I only wonder that the springs themselves did'n't fly like glass!"

This reply excited the risibility of the whole party, not excepting the amiable Miss Mullen herself.

"You 're an impudent fellow!" said she again: "but I 'll quickly mend your manners. Tell me, scoundrel! who is to take me to Clonmel; for I 'm so lame and sore, that I cannot walk?"

The driver disappeared before she could say any more to him, and soon returned with two large pieces of scantling, which, with the help of the sailor, he lashed under the body of the diligence, having first raised it on a level with the side which still remained uninjured. We then reseated ourselves; but the Lady Grazier moaned and complained bitterly, reiterating her intention of making her husband prosecute the proprietors for neglect, besides obliging them to pay the surgeon's bill; for, she observed, it would cost her something handsome to get the thorns extracted from her flesh.

Our elderly and facetious companion was so tickled with all these incidents, that he could not forbear tittering; and I was afraid to look at him, lest he should burst forth, and make me as bad as himself. I therefore kept looking out of the window, whilst the diligence moved towards the station at a slow pace. Fortunately, Mrs. Mullen was wholly absorbed with her misfortunes, as well

as too intently engaged with Mr. Foster, who now began to say all the soothing things he could think of to lighten her grief, to notice us. He spoke of his own sufferings, and his truly awful position, but to which his fears for the ladies had made him quite indifferent; forgetful that he had roared beneath the pressure of the lady like an ox going to be slaughtered.

The recollection of all these ridiculous incidents annoyed me so much, under the restraint in which I was placed, that I never in my life felt more relieved than on finding myself alone with my guardian in a room at the inn of Clonmel, and at liberty to laugh heartily.

Breakfast being over, we immediately set off to find the executors; and young Donnovan's house lying in the way, we determined to call there first, and obtain news from him of his father. It was many years since we had seen each other, both being boys when we separated. I knocked at the door, and found, on enquiring of the servant, that he was at home; but, as there were two gentlemen with him, he asked us to give him our names.

"No," said I; "go and tell him an old acquaintance wishes to speak with him."

We were immediately admitted. I was struck with his figure, and the noble expression of his features, where the beauty of the mother vied with the manly and decided character of the father. He looked at me, for some seconds, with an en-

quiring eye; and then, clasping me to his bosom, exclaimed, —

"By heavens! it is Walter Brabazon, our cousin! our friend!"— whilst the tear started in his eye.

"How opportunely you have arrived! Here are the two executors of your uncle's will:" and he introduced me to them.

"Come, cousin," continued he, "there are no secrets between us; speak out: what have you to say about your estates?"

"Neither more nor less," said I, "than that here I am, to claim them in *propriâ persona*."

The executors then told me they were ready to hand over every thing, in spite of the claim laid by Mr. Harder, my unworthy connection; who, it seems, had had the audacity to declare me an impostor. They informed me, however, that they considered Colonel Donnovan's certificate as a sufficient proof of my indentity; and the next day, or whenever I thought proper, they were ready to resign the title-deeds into my hands.

When they were gone, I enquired very particularly about the Colonel's father; and he told me he had not received any letters since those he found in London on his arrival, which informed him of his uncle's death, and the necessity of his coming immediately to Ireland.

"My father," he continued, "was delighted to have received my letter from Calcutta, at the moment when he was fretting inwardly at the

thoughts of being obliged to come to Europe. — And now, my dear cousin, I must tell you that I had a quarrel with Harder, who had the impudence to doubt my father's having known you before you introduced yourself to him; and was ready to swear that you were so young when he was at your father's, that he could not have recollected your features."

"A thousand thanks, my dear cousin!" said I, "for the warm interest you have taken in my behalf. I cannot regret your quarrelling with a man of such sordid feelings; much less that you should decline acknowledging him for a relation."

We parted with expressions of mutual affection and esteem. The next morning I repaired to the house of one of the executors, and, having amicably settled all matters with them, I was formally put in possession of the property left me by my uncle.

I now began to think seriously of my guardian's proposal, that I should enter the army; for, by contriving to get appointed to a regiment destined for India, I should have a much better opportunity of seeing and examining the several kingdoms of that extensive country, than as a mere traveller.

"There," said my guardian, "you will see the good policy of treating conquered nations with lenity, tolerance, and liberality; and in no country under heaven will you find justice more equitably and impartially administered. The

manners and customs of India, so totally opposite to those of Europe, will afford you ample food for reflection; and you will also find there many natural productions peculiar to a soil and climate where incessant summer reigns, and the richest gifts of nature are presented spontaneously to the hand of man."

As he was tired of being in a constant round of company, my guardian proposed that I should make the tour of my native country without him, and that he should proceed immediately to London, where he had some business of importance to transact, and there await my arrival.

Although I was grieved to part with him, yet I could not object to his arrangements, more especially as I well knew he oftentimes engaged in pursuits, by no means congenial to his feelings, merely for my sake. "Walter," said he, before he left me, "be cautious to act always as you have hitherto done, and you may be sure of the protection of Heaven and of my constant solicitude. I leave you, in the full assurance of your firmness and courage, and that you will never suffer yourself to be led aside from the path of virtue for a mere momentary gratification of passion or caprice."

The day after his departure I felt quite lost, and could apply myself to nothing steadily. In this state of mind, I thought a stroll through the town would be of service to me; and I set off, without any fixed purpose, determining to wander

as chance directed my steps. In turning the corner of the principal street, I was suddenly startled by a smart tap on the shoulder; and, on looking round, to my utter astonishment I beheld, standing alongside of me and tendering me his hand, my old acquaintance, the eccentric Mr. Cahlinan! We had been intimate during the latter part of my residence at Philadelphia; but, from his singular disposition, and still more extraordinary mode of living, he was the very last man in the world I should have thought of meeting in Ireland. He always spoke of travelling as being too troublesome; and oppressed Ireland, as he styled it, the only country of the globe that he did not wish to visit. This strange, inconsistent man was one of those characters which are rarely met with more than once in a half century.

I gave him my hand, expressed myself happy to meet with him, and enquired by what luck yor unlucky accident he had been induced to visit a country he had so often declared he never wished to see?

"The caprice of a moment," said he. "You must know that I thought the lady who kept the Golden Swan tavern, where I lived, began to be careless and lukewarm in her attentions. One of my dinners was badly cooked, and my wines changed upon me: I therefore determined to try my luck elsewhere. Then, all of a sudden, my father's injunctions came across my mind; and, as this was the ninth time I had changed my

tavern residence in America, thought I, Why not fulfil his last wish, and ascertain how I shall be pleased with the taverns of Ireland?' "

Mr. Cahlinan, with all his eccentricities, was a clever, sensible man on most subjects, had been well educated, and had acquired a large stock of useful as well as ornamental knowledge. This, however, so far from serving him as a guide through life, seemed to have led him astray; and he boldly and openly disregarded the customs, rules, and regulations of society, as well as all moral propriety. In short, he was the most singular man I ever saw, except Major Semple: though I would not have the reader imagine I mean to make a comparison between them, as Cahlinan fell far short of him in every quality essential to a good man.

My first acquaintance with him, at Philadelphia, was entirely accidental, at the famous tavern of the Golden Swan, where parties often assembled to eat oysters, and a small species of amphibious tortoise, much esteemed by the epicures of America. Some young men of my acquaintance, several of them gay Quakers, invited me, one evening, to sup with them; or, rather, to make one of a party to sup at the tavern; each man paying his share of the expense. These were parties I assiduously avoided, if possible, because they generally ended in excess. However, this time, one or two of my most intimate acquaintances being invited, I could not refuse.

I repaired to the tavern about eight o'clock of a raw autumnal evening, and found a set of jovial fellows already assembled round a coal fire, that burnt briskly in the grate; and was a very comfortable sight to one who came in shivering from the street.

Before I proceed any farther, however, I must inform my readers, that Cahlinan's fixed and unalterable resolution was, to live all his life in a tavern. This he declared the *ne plus ultra* of independence—the antidote to care and domestic vexations of every description, to which he considered the greater part of mankind wretched slaves, who knew not how to free themselves from the trammels and snares of marriage and housekeeping. This being premised, I must tell my readers he was then living in the tavern where we had assembled to sup, and his bed-room, the door of which was double-locked, actually joined the one in which we were taking tea, and making a noise that might be heard all over the house.

In the midst of this bustle and merriment, the door of the apartment in question was unlocked, and in walked a very genteel, dapper-looking man, who appeared as if he had just sprung out of a bandbox; whilst our party, struck dumb with surprise, were gazing upon this sudden apparition, and wondering what it meant. He put on a benignant smile, bowed very genteelly, and said,—

"I beg a thousand pardons, gentlemen, for this

sudden, unexpected intrusion; and if there is any thing wrong in it, you must blame your own gay and jovial characters, which have emboldened me to request I may be allowed to join your amiable company."

We bowed assent, and he added, "I have risen about a half an hour; for I confess your mirth made me get out of bed earlier than usual; and now, gentlemen, will you permit me the honour of taking breakfast with you, and to pay my share of the expense?"

Our friend, who had the management of the supper, happened to know Mr. Cahlinan, and now stepped forward and offered him his hand, saying, —

"I rejoice, sir to meet you here in this most unexpected but agreeable manner: we shall be extremely happy to receive you into our jovial circle; and now, permit me to introduce you to my friends."

He was then introduced to each member separately.

After this my friend turned to him, and added,—

"You talked of breakfast, Mr. Cahlinan: is not that a mistake?"

"Oh, no!" he replied, smiling; "you know I sleep all day; and this is very near the time I usually break my fast. Oysters and tortoises are not bad things for breakfast: all I shall ask is, the liberty of taking coffee to your wine."

"But is it possible, sir," said I, "that you find it agreeable or convenient thus to turn night into day, and breakfast when all the town besides are going to supper?"

"'Every one to his liking,' sir," said he, "as the old woman said when she kissed her cow. I feel so little disposed to adopt the ridiculous usages of general society, that I have purposely gone in direct opposition to all its established customs. During the night, I walk, ride, and pay visits until three or four o'clock, when I dine. I sup at ten or eleven the following day, sleep until evening, and then breakfast, as I am now going to do. My rides or walks by night are delightful. I am freed from the hurry and bustle of the crowd of vulgar animals who infest the streets during the day; my mind is calm and unruffled; my reflections become more intense; and I continue my excursion under the influence of some inspiring project or scheme, that keeps my imagination in full activity, until my physical wants recall me to the imperfections of humanity — the necessity of rest, sleep, and food, the three grand restoratives of exhausted nature. Should I invite a company to dine, I request them to arrive at three in the morning; and a little before four o'clock, the fashionable hour, my dinner is served. Now, gentlemen, as we are such very near neighbours, will you do me the honour to dine with me this very day?"

His invitation was accepted *viva voce*.

"Gentlemen," said our president, "since Mr. Cahlinan has politely asked us to partake of his dinner, we ought to be prepared to do justice to it. I therefore propose to follow his example by taking nothing but coffee to our oysters and tortoises; and, being as moderate as possible, we shall keep ourselves in reserve for his excellent fare and good wines."

"Admirable advice!" said Cahlinan; "you are a prudent man, Mr. President, for I shall have some fine venison and canvass-backed ducks."

The supper, or breakfast, as he chose to style it, was now brought in; and, being seated near him, I endeavoured to draw him forth.

"How comes it," said I, "that being a man of fortune and education, you do not take a house to yourself, or, at least, elegant private lodgings, in order to live more comfortably, and receive your guests at your ease?"

"Sir," said he, "what you deem comfortable I think entirely the reverse; and what you style ease is, in my opinion, a very great annoyance. Home, servants, domestic economy, stewards, accounts, horses, carriages, &c. &c., are all irksome to me in the highest degree. My aim is pure independence, and to live without care or trouble: for this simple reason, therefore, I have chosen a tavern, where all my wants are supplied at a moment's warning, and often without any previous order. I keep no servants of my own, for the same reason; and I shall never marry, the

more effectually to preserve the consistency of my plan. Depend upon it, this is the only true way of avoiding all the inconveniences, cares, and troubles of life. In my habits I am a regular man, except that I seldom sup; so that the people of the tavern where I live know all my movements and my wants without telling them. The only order I have to give, during the day, concerns my dinner, which is more or less abundant, or more or less costly, according to circumstances. My servants never leave me; my coachman does not cheat the horses, and get drunk; my cook never spoils the dinner; my butler cannot deceive me, or my steward prove a rogue. All goes on with order, regularity, and ease. My ears are never shocked with scolding, or the squalls of children; the breaking of crockery, and the destruction of furniture. No one opposes my will; all my domestic concerns are managed with a precision and a celerity such as are not known even in the best regulated families. With no farther exertion on my part than to say, 'give me this,' 'hand me that,' every thing is prepared, and I am never obliged to wait beyond the time marked down.

"In short, gentlemen," he continued, "true independence is only to be found in a tavern; and I am determined never to barter it for what are foolishly and erroneously styled 'the comforts of domestic life,' 'domestic enjoyments,' 'domestic felicity,' and a number of other appellations equally false and ridiculous;—quite as parodoxi-

cal as if I were to say, he who labours th
is more happy and comfortable than he wh
the fruits of his labour. To do, and to ca
be done, although sometimes tantamou
law, are certainly very distinct affairs; to
which, requires no logical discussion. I a
every gentleman here will acknowledge, t
drink a bottle of wine, and to cause a bo
wine to be drank, are two things diamet
opposite."

To this proposition we all gave our
assent, and told him we would convince h
dinner of our attachment to his principles.

He smiled, and replied, "that nothing
be more gratifying to his feelings, as actions
louder than words. I hope to see that my
are sincere proselytes to my philosophy."

"I admire your plan," said I; "but I
could adopt it. The female sex have too
charms for me; besides, I think you do not
weigh the enjoyments and disagreements
mestic life, or you would find the former fa
balance the latter."

"My dear sir," rejoined Cahlinan, "I
should never marry, because I think I cou
find a woman to please me, and who wo
the same time consent to live in a tavern
hotel,—for I am no Cynic. Nor have I any
great aversion to matrimony; but what I
is house-keeping, and all its concomitant tro
and perplexities."

"But," I rejoined, "if you were to marry you would beget children; and what would you do with them?"

"Send them all," said he, "to the foundling hospital the moment they were born."

"What!" I exclaimed, "without any regard to the feelings of the mother?"

"Why, if the mother pleased, she might have them reared there in her own name, and provide for them afterwards; but I never would consent to have the squalling of brats about me, and all the embarrassments, cares, and troubles of their education. Nine times out of ten, a man's children are a disgrace to him, because our system of education is greatly defective; and, instead of teaching us that, with all the wisdom we can acquire, we still know nothing, it makes us proud, conceited, vain, and presumptuous;—egotists, who think, in the logical and, I must add, absurd discussions of the schools, we have discovered all the wonders of the creation; when in reality we are ignorant of the quality of the atoms we proudly tread beneath our feet as we walk the streets. My children at the foundling hospital will, at all events, be brought up simply, without refined notions and pretensions, and will go through life much better than those arrogant beings who think a college education fits them at once to become any thing they please. Men, sir, become intoxicated with vanity to a degree that places them on a footing with monkies. But such are the

inscrutable operations of Nature upon n
matter, that human prudence and hum
sight can never counteract her decr
human art or invention will ever mak
clever or fortunate, if nature has refused
of wisdom or her seal of prosperity.
ness, then, is such a lottery, I shall neve
my head about it, but commit my ch
their fate; only taking care to give the
to support them decently in whatever
life they may be thrown."

"Strange conclusion!" said I, "as
cation, which, we all allow, is second
should not possess the power of changing
impulses, and of preparing men for every
in life."

"I have seen so many men," said he,
in direct contradiction to the princi
maxims they have been taught, and pr
little by all those boasted advantages they
that I have no longer any confidence in
tems of education, and prefer leaving the
Nature herself."

"But," said I, "you were not left to
nor will your children be abandoned to
are to be brought up in the foundling hos

"At all events," said he, "there will
interference with their natural talents:
they will not be indulged and spoiled by
and sycophants — those emissaries of th
who surround the rich in every count

whose very smiles are pestilential. No, sir: in the foundling hospital, and wherever they may be sent from thence to learn the rudiments of some handicraft or profession, they will not consider themselves the favourites of fortune, puffed up with pride and conceit at being born, as the saying is, 'with a silver spoon in their mouths,' and which, being a fortuitous qualification, when not combined with good natural talents (putting accomplishments out of the question), is like fine roast beef without gravy. Now, according to my way of thinking, it is of no consequence what my children are taught in the way of a trade or profession: they may be tailors, shoemakers, blacksmiths, or what you please; but, if they have talents, they will not remain in obscurity. — Genius, sir, is like a piece of cork; you may plunge it ten fathoms deep in the water, but it will always rise to the surface: nothing, sir, can keep down the buoyant spirit of genius! nothing can quench the sacred fire that burns within the soul of him who is the favourite of Nature!"

"I regret extremely," said I, "that you have not made acquaintance with Major Semple, whose independent notions and love of Nature have carried him into the forests beyond the great river Ohio, where he has built himself a fortress. He lives midway between the civilised settlers and the barbarous aborigines, yet disdains to hold communication or connection with either the one or the other."

"By Heavens!" exclaimed Cahlman, "he's a man after my own heart. Long since, I had traced out for myself a plan of this sort; but one difficulty — an insurmountable one — presented itself, that obliged me to resign it. I am no sportsman, and understand but imperfectly the use of fire-arms — two things absolutely necessary."

"Very true," said I, "for it not only requires a man to be a sportsman, but a good shot also, or he may often go without a dinner in those wilds where there are no farms."

After jesting on the subject of living like a savage, he turned to me, and said, "Sir, I hope we shall become better acquainted; but pray permit me to inquire, are you a married man?"

"No," said I, "I am a bachelor."

"So much the better," he replied; "for I never visit married men, and I detest the society of what the world call 'ladies.' They are silly, and, generally speaking, coquettes; fond of exacting more attention than I feel disposed to bestow upon them. Then, if you should happen to meet a sensible woman, why she's a philosopher in petticoats — a learned housewife — a bookworm: in short, there is no medium. Women of this class are all in the extremes. No, sir! I thank my stars I am not to be drawn into the vortex of their eccentric motions. I prefer the smallest star of the heavens to the blazing and irregular comet. My female acquaintances are

of no higher denomination than tavern keepers' wives and daughters, who, so far from exacting attention, are full of amiability and politeness, and pay me every sort of deference for my money. To be sure, the husbands are sometimes jealous; but what do I care for that? Let them settle their family disputes as they please — it is none of my business. When I perceive the host and hostess cold and inattentive, I change my lodgings to some place more agreeable, and where I find the family condescending.

"So now, gentlemen, if there be any married men amongst you, I hope you will not, after this declaration, take it amiss that I do not visit you?"

Fortunately, the whole party were bachelors, and they all declared how happy they should be to receive him whenever he thought proper to honour them.

This conversation took place whilst we drank our coffee; and it was no sooner finished than we all sallied forth, with Cahlinan, into the streets, and, having walked about the city for two hours at least, we returned to the tavern.

Our supper was, of course, countermanded; and, when we returned, we saw a large table spread in Mr. C.'s apartments, which were thrown open for our reception.

At half-past three, the dinner was placed upon the table. As soon as we were seated, "Gentlemen," said he, "the word ceremony has long been exploded from my vocabulary; so, make

sensible as home. Recollect that you are in a tavern: call for whatever you please, and it will be forthcoming. Should the wine I drink not please you, order any other kind that you prefer."

One dinner, or rather feast I ought to name it, was superb; the wines excellent; our host facetious, courteous, and conversible; and the more I saw of him, the more was I surprised that a man of his refined education, polite manners, and sensible conversation, should be so eccentric.

It was near the o'clock before the cloth was removed; and then Cuthman's first toast was, "Success to all tavern keepers, and their wives and daughters." He next gave "The bar."

Two or three of the gentlemen present, who were lawyers, filled up their glasses, and thanked him, in the name of all their brethren, for his compliment to the legal profession.

He smiled, answered their salutation, and said he was extremely happy his toast had a double meaning, and was so well applied, as there was no profession he held in higher estimation.—"But now, gentlemen," he added, "I beg you will fill your glasses, and drink, not to the bar of justice, but the bar of good fellowship, where beauty sits in judgment, and none but the thirsty are brought to trial."

This toast was honoured with three cheers; and to recite all the puns which succeeded the word *bar* would fill a couple of pages. The bottles con-

tinued to pass round the table until between seven and eight o'clock in the morning, when coffee and cordials were served.

By this time many of the party were a little crank, as the sailors call it, and took their leave; whilst others, at the host's invitation, who appeared quite steady, remained to play a game at whist. For my own part, I should have quitted the company much sooner, but Cahlinan's wit and satire detained me.

This digression, I trust, will serve to introduce him to the acquaintance of my readers.

As we walked along the principal streets of Clonmel, I inquired where he lived.

"What a question to put to an independent gentleman!" said he. "I live every where: but if you ask me at what hotel or tavern I have put up, why I'll tell you — not far from hence, in the next street, at the sign of 'The Castle,' recommended to me by one of the passengers in the stage coach; and I am highly pleased with my quarters. The woman of the house is a very neat, pretty woman; her daughter is still handsomer; and all of them of the most attentive and obliging tempers. Come, it is but a few paces off; we will have some cheese and a glass of beer, and talk over old times."

We were not long getting to the Castle Inn, where, as Cahlinan said, I saw at the bar two very pretty women, who smiled as he entered, and called out to the waiter to attend at No. 6., and

see that the gentleman wanted for nothing.—After a while the cheese and beer were brought, and I said, "You are very well lodged here; but still I hope you will permit me to introduce you to some of my friends and relations? There's Mr. S——, a rich country gentleman, fond of hunting; Mr. B——, a respectable banker; Mr. C——, a distant relation of mine, also wealthy, and a sportsman: there's Lord S——, Sir J. T——. These gentlemen keep good tables, and see some of the best company; and, when once introduced, with them you may amuse away some of your vacant hours."

"A thousand thanks!" said he, "my good friend; but it is enough for me to know that all these gentlemen are married: and, besides, I detest what is styled genteel society. I am incorrigible; don't trouble yourself about me. I cannot listen to any one who would shackle my independence, or sacrifice it to the dull monotony of ladies' society, and the horrors of a family fireside. God keep me from falling into such dismal company! If you will sometimes allow me the happiness of cracking a bottle with you, or any jovial brace of bachelors of your acquaintance, it will suffice."

"I fear," said I, "that we shall meet but seldom if I cannot prevail upon you to become intimate with my friends and relations; for they engross nearly all my time."

"Don't let this disturb you," said he, "I am

myself to blame; but only let me see you whenever you have a moment of leisure. Freedom and Ease are my motto. Again I say, I am not to be caught in the snares of gentility and good breeding, as they are termed; or to be tangled in the gossamer threads of politeness, or the cobwebs of fashion. I seek solid, substantial, real enjoyments, free from care, trouble, and anxiety; where good will takes place of good breeding, and a glass of old wine, with a pungent jest and a hearty laugh, puts down all ceremony, and produces what I call true, natural, undisguised merriment and unadulterated pleasure."

"Come, come, sir," said I, "though there is some wit in your satire, yet I fear there is also an over-proportion of egotism, as is generally the case with those who will not cede the smallest portion of their own convenience for the benefit of society. One of the most captivating qualifications is, the facility with which some men sacrifice their personal ease to certain social duties and arrangements."

"All sophistry!" retorted Cahlinan. "Men are selfish animals in every sphere of life. When self-gratification cannot be indulged, self-love comes to its relief. Those personal sacrifices, as you are pleased to name them, are sprats thrown out to catch mackarel; and obtain, by a deceitful and circuitous method, what plain dealing cannot obtain. Modesty is said to be a proof of merit; but how often do we see the affectation of it

mistaken for the thing itself, and impudence bear off in triumph what intrinsic worth has strove in vain to win. All our social arrangements are defective, but none so horribly bad as what is called high society, where avarice, impiety, indolence, pride, vanity, and vain glory absorb all the finer feelings of the soul, and steel the heart against the admission of honour, virtue, and generosity. When I see a man, who has neither virtue, talents, or any one good substantial quality to recommend him, raised by flattery, intrigues, and gold to the heights of human greatness, I cannot help sneering at our too much vaunted civilisation; and would sooner shake hands with a highway robber, who nobly exposes his life in his calling, than drink the wines and eat the delicate viands of a base representative of the folly, ignorance, and imbecility of mankind."

"My dear Cahlinan," said I, "all your geese are swans: you always choose the worst side of the picture. Since we must admit that human nature is frail and liable to error, even under the influence of the purest principles and the best education, why fix only upon its foibles and defects? The good side, when impartially examined, overbalances the bad. You must seek out the noble and the virtuous, and compare their actions with those of the opposite description, before you have a right to declaim against all. I believe, with you, that our systems of

civilisation and education are far from being perfect; but we are, beyond all doubt, greatly removed from barbarism, and improving gradually. You must examine deeper before you decide."

"Barbarism and refinement," retorted my opponent, "I am sorry to say are so very nearly allied that their extremes always meet: as, in mathematics, the point from which I start, to describe a circle, when it is completed becomes the point of contact."

But my readers would derive little amusement from a detail of all the specious arguments and tedious discussions by which Cahlinan endeavoured to uphold the justness of his views of society, and the peculiar mode of life he had chosen for himself. Opposition only confirmed him in these absurdities; and though I occasionally silenced him by a train of reasoning which exposed the fallacy of his opinions, still nothing was gained. He ceased to argue, but remained unconverted:—

> "He that 's convinced against his will
> Is of the same opinion still,"

says Hudibras, very justly. By way of changing the conversation, I adverted to my excursion through the south-western counties, and hinted that, as a "gentleman at large," he should be my companion. The proposal appeared to delight him at first, for I really believe he had a sincere regard for me; but the charms and

blandishments of mine hostess and her pretty daughter arose to his recollection, and caused him to hesitate. He was like the ass between two bundles of hay; until, friendship gaining the ascendancy over love, he gave orders for the immediate preparation of his baggage, and declared himself ready to start at a moment's warning.

This resolution evidently excited no less surprise than chagrin in the breast of one, at least, of the fair inhabitants of the hotel.

If I spoiled the young lady's hopes of obtaining a rich husband, I regret it; and the more so, because Mr. Cahlinan did not end his career very fortunately, as will be seen in the sequel.

CHAPTER IV.

I CANNOT leave Cork, the capital of my native province, without giving my readers a slight sketch of its situation.

It covers a hill and a portion of the valley through which flows the beautiful and pellucid waters of the Lee. Above the town the scenery is highly picturesque, where the river breaks over the salmon weirs, and where its banks are ornamented with villas, gardens, and walks. Below the town, similar improvements—fine country seats, rich pastures, gardens, orchards, parks, and pleasure-grounds, again attract the eye on either hand. This scene, together with the busy tide of commerce on the surface of the river, keeps the traveller in constant admiration until he arrives at the spot where the river expands into an immense basin, surrounded and sheltered on every side by hills, called the Cove of Cork. There all the fleets of Europe might lie together at anchor, it being, perhaps, the most commodious, and, at the same time, the safest harbour in the world.

The city is a place of great commerce, its port being generally well filled with foreign shipping, independent of the coasters and vessels from Great Britain. The counties of Cork and Lime-

rick contain the richest pasturage of all Ireland
it is from thence that the navy of Great B
draws its supplies of beef and butter, inde
ently of an immense quantity exported from
county towns, where the cattle are slaugh
and salted. The river Lee abounds with s
the whole year round: a circumstance som
remarkable, for in most other rivers of E
they are caught only from March to Septe
or October.

Though, as I have just observed, the b
and fertility of this my native province is b
description, yet agriculture has been much
lected by reason of the general attention p
fattening cattle and keeping herds of cows for
The result is, that the lower classes are w
unable to procure bread, and rarely taste
although so many fine oxen are slaughtered a
them. Potatoes and milk is their ordinary
and of that they have not always an abundan

The southern provinces may be said to be
pastoral, but the plenty and felicity suppos
be attached to that sort of life, I am sorry t
is not to be found in Ireland.

Cahlinan and myself bade adieu to the
pitable city of Cork, where we had spent
very happy days, with regret. The only a
ance I experienced during my residence ther
from a very old woman, a great-aunt of
who insisted upon my calling upon her o
day at least. She was a most profound ge

gist; and at these visits I was compelled to "sit with sad civility," as Pope says, and listen to numerous anecdotes of her father's relations, the same stock from which my mother descended, and whose pedigree she loved to trace to the kings and potentates of the south.

Nothing could be more irksome than such a dry narration, which, however, at last I found means to avoid in some measure, by arriving exactly at her breakfasting hour. She was particular about the mode of serving this meal, and never felt so flattered as when any one came to partake of it. Her ideas were thus directed into another channel, and confined to things which had no relation to the Herald's College, and her time-out-of-mind chronicles of her ancient family. First, the coffee, and bread and fresh *cowslip* butter, as yellow as gold, were put upon the table; then a neat, well-dressed housekeeper prepared the tea, and immediately after six or eight eggs were brought in on a plate, just warm from under the hens. Having satisfied herself they were recently laid by feeling them, she ordered them to be boiled by a watch, and they were presented with a plate of hot toast. On their appearance, but not one moment before, the tea was poured forth; and to gratify me, because I had the grace to remember having eaten some very good brown bread in the house when quite a boy, some slices were always placed at my side on a small silver plate.

This was the routine of every morning: and the

last time I breakfasted with her she treated me with fresh Turkey eggs, observing, "Ah! Walter, you and I shall hardly meet again on this side of the grave. I shall greatly miss you at my morning's repast."

Poor old lady! I was somewhat affected; for though I endeavoured to cheer her spirits by expressing my belief that she had still the chance of living many years, I tacitly concurred in the probability of the remark, and made Colonel Donnovan, of whom she was also very fond, promise to breakfast with her every morning whilst he remained at Cork.

Another of my distant relations, a man of good estate, who lived about twenty miles from the city, and kept a pack of hounds, and a fine stud of hunters, was a real hospitable son of Ireland. He also had some amiable eccentricities, for he affected to consider the speaking with any thing like the English accent a sin, and therefore always conversed in the broadest accent of the Irish brogue. He was well acquainted with the native language of the country, and spoke it fluently, besides having received a genteel and liberal education. The first time I visited him I arrived exactly at the hour of breakfast. He was overjoyed to see me; and I was immediately seated with his wife, himself, and another visitor, at a table that groaned beneath the weight of beefsteaks, cold ham, fried soles, eggs, toast, bread and butter, &c. &c. On his wife addressing me with—

"Cousin, will you take tea or coffee?"

I answered, "tea, if you please."

"Oh," said he (mimicking my Anglicised pronunciation), "Mr. Macaroni, from London, I perceive. By Jasus, but you've forgotten your mother's tongue. What! can't you say *tay*, as a man, and not *tea*, like a little boarding-school miss?"

I replied that he must excuse one who had been so many years out of Ireland; and then, to convince him I had not entirely forgotten the native Irish, I immediately addressed some words to him in the language he knew so well.

He sprung from his chair, clasped me round the neck, and, kissing me *a la Française*, said, —

"By Jasus, but after all you're a true son of Ireland! I was afraid that smooth boyish accent of yours might bring harm upon you in travelling, if you met with any of the bands; but I see there is no fear of you. Only cross yourself, and spake as you did just now, and instead of hurting they'll go to the world's end for you."

Ever afterwards, knowing his foible, I endeavoured, before him, to speak as broad as possible. He was a truly good and worthy man, fond of his tenants, keeping them all in the best manner, paying their tithes, assisting the poorer ones, and trying all in his power to prevent those under his controul from joining the discontented. But he found it impossible; he was accused of favouring them too much, and was fired at twice by the Orangemen.

"In short," said he, "I know no longe
to act. My tenants, who have nothing t
plain of, take part with those who have, a
involved in disputes and battles without my
ledge, and for which I am blamed as being
stigator. We have a dismal prospect bef
Walter. Take care of yourself; you are
into that part of the country where the ba
in great force."

"Oh! never fear," said I, "I shall sp
them in their own tongue, and they won't
simple traveller."

"True," he replied; "I believe, in th
spect, they have more honour than thos
have been sent to quell them; but you will
danger from both."

I replied, that I was accustomed to
dangers in the face; and I was determined,
hazards, to see the lakes of Killarney be
quitted Ireland again.

But let me return from this digression
subject of our journey. As the post-chais
us rapidly along, I called the attention
companion to the rich and widely extended
pect that presented itself on every side. Th
was mild and serene; a thousand wild flo
intermixed with the grass, shed a delicious
fume through the air, "the breath of n
and her endless bloom."

" Fair handed spring unbosoms every grace,
Throws out the snow-drop and the crocus first;
The daisy, primrose, violet darkly blue,
And polyanthus of unnumber'd dyes."

The herdsmen sung their songs in concert with the soaring lark; and the whole scene was calculated to melt the hardest heart to sympathise with external nature. Cahlinan felt its mild influence steal upon him. I saw the smile of benevolence spread itself over his features, which became relaxed as he exclaimed, —

" How beautiful! how enchanting!" He called to the postilion to stop. — " Let us feast our eyes awhile, said he, " with the charms of this prospect."

On the right, the ground rose in gentle undulations, and the ascent was covered with farm-houses, cottages, and numerous gardens and orchards in full blossom. A small transparent stream murmured over its pebbly bed, and, after flowing across the road, meandered through a range of verdant meadows, extending as far as the eye could reach, and covered with large herds of cattle. The summit of the hill was adorned with a beautiful country seat, sheltered on one side by a wood, while the park and lawn extended along the declivity on the other. In the rear of the mansion rose a ruined watch tower, overshadowed by two enormous oaks, and covered with never-fading ivy.

The whole creation appeared to participate in

our enjoyment; the lowing herds, the cawing rooks, and chattering magpies intermingled their discordant notes with those of various singing birds; chanted their music from the snowy hawthorn and the bright yellow blossomed furze which crowned the hedges.

"The black bird whistled from the thorny brake,
The mellow bullfinch answer'd from the grove;
Nor were the linnets, o'er the flowery furze,
Pour'd out profusely, silent. Join'd to these
Innumerous songsters, in the freshening shade
Of new sprung leaves, their modulations mixed
Mellifluous. The jay, the rook, the daw,
And each harsh pipe, discordant heard alone,
Aid the full concert; while the stock-dove breathes
A melancholy murmur through the whole."

"Bravo!" exclaimed Cahlinan, starting from the ecstasy into which the beauties of this enchanted spot had thrown him; "here is richness and variety, a soul-entrancing prospect, such as I would defy the much vaunted and still more southern countries of the vine and the olive to surpass."

"In truth," said I, "the verdure of my native land has a freshness and luxuriance the whole year round which I have never seen equalled in any other part of the globe."

"That's the reason," rejoined Cahlinan, "why it has been styled by poets the Emerald Isle; and the bright, lively, and beautiful green with which it is constantly clothed justly entitles it to the distinction."

Continuing our route along the foot of the hill, the road presently branched off to the left through an immense valley, and the country continued flat all the way to Limerick, being principally composed of such pastures as I have just mentioned.

Limerick, situated on the deep river Shannon, possesses great facilities for commerce; but its harbour is inferior to that of Cork; nor is the surrounding country, or the site of the town, in the least to be compared to it in point of picturesque beauty. The waters of the Shannon are sluggish and discoloured, whilst those of the Lee are rapid and glisten like molten silver.

We staid there only two or three days, and then proceeded to my estate, with which Cahlinan was so much delighted that he declared he would have purchased it from me if there had been only a well-appointed tavern upon it. I told him he might establish one himself; with his means nothing was easier.

"Oh, no," he replied, "that would require time and trouble, both of which I am not disposed to sacrifice, and therefore like every thing ready prepared to my hand."

After leaving ample instructions with my agent about the sale of my property, we took the nearest road to the lakes of Kerry, only stopping once more in the county of Limerick for the purpose of examining an old abbey almost in ruins and

thickly covered with ivy. In Ireland this plant is particularly beautiful, the leaf being much larger and of a more vivid green than that of England. The mouldering walls, and the bodies of the oaks and elms that overshadowed them, were covered with it, as if nature strove to revive what the neglect and indifference of man had suffered to fall into decay. This living verdure, joined to an enormous family of rooks, that hovered about the building and the trees that environed it, in some degree enlivened the solitary and mournful aisles which returned a solemn echo to our footsteps as we paced slowly through them.

"Come," said Cahlinan, "enough of this. I am no romance writer; let us retire before our spirits become affected by the sombre aspect of these gloomy ruins. For my part, I prefer the more lively attractions of industry and improvement. A noble piece of architecture, suffering under the hand of time and mouldering to decay, only inspires me with a more intimate sense of the shortness of my own mortal career, and the vanity, folly, and presumption of man. His statues, his monuments, his pyramids, the most gigantic works of art, crumble down before the hand of time; but those of the great Architect of the universe remain for ever, unimpared by the shocks of conflicting elements. Yet this solemn truth, pointed out to man by the finger of God to warn him of his vanity and perishable nature, is disregarded, and he pushes on with the same

ardour as if he and his works were as immortal and indestructible as those of his Creator.

"I have made this remark to show you that the mode of life I have adopted is purer and better than you imagine. It does not place me beyond the sphere of charitable and benevolent actions, but it prevents me from employing the fortune I possess in all those pompous and vain-glorious pursuits which generally occupy the rich, and exalt their names at the expense of their souls."

On quitting Limerick, the country became wilder and more uncultivated, and the pastures were fewer and not so luxuriant. Occasionally, the landscape presented a succession of furze-covered heaths, extensive bogs, and vast forests. It occurred to me that one of the latter, on the right of the road, which the post-boy named the Great Forest, might be that where Tom Bryan first took shelter, and introduced himself to the outlaws. Cahlinan had heard so much about the bands and highway robbers, he could not suppress his uneasiness whenever we came to any suspicious looking spot, and several times declared his astonishment that such a professed traveller and sportsman as I was should be without fire-arms.

However, I explained to him that I had left my pistols in Dublin, by the advice of my friends, who told me it was ridiculous to carry them, and that they might be the cause of my destruction.

"If," said they, "you are attacked by a band

of a dozen fellows, it would be madness to resist them; and, should they find arms upon your person, they will immediately suspect you to be either a government agent or a policeman, and will murder you. Carry as little money as possible, and, if attacked by robbers, give up quietly what you have about you."

A little reflection convinced him of the propriety of their counsel.

We were now passing over a disagreeable road along the borders of a bog, thinly occupied by houses, which were universally composed of mud walls, and looked very wretched and uncomfortable. Children, entirely naked, or covered with only a few rags, were crawling about and playing before the doors: altogether, the prospect was dismal, and calculated to inspire such a man as Cahlinan with a fit of the blue devils.

Letting down one of the front windows, I entered into conversation with the driver, who was an honest, good-natured fellow, about the roads, and the danger of meeting with some of the marauders who roamed about this part of Ireland particularly. "Did you ever hear of Tim Lawson?" I asked.

"By my soul! your honour," said he, "and who has'nt heard of Tim? But the devil has got his own: he has been dead some years back: he was shot in a battle with the county cavalry, but not until he had killed half a dozen men at least. However, your honour, there's a fellow,

not a grain better than Tim, now heading a desperate gang on the borders of this same bog, where the soldiers have never yet dared to attack them. His name is Pat Carey. They do say, however, that he's a fellow of some honour in his dealings. When he meets with a traveller who has no more money than sufficient to pay his way, he lets him off for nothing at all at all. Besides, he's a southern man; and, if one spakes to him in his mother tongue, why he becomes as quiet as a lamb, your honour. By my soul! and I wouldn't be after betting a handful of bad coppers that he don't cross our path before we get to the station; for it grows late, and he has been on the road several times this last week."

All the time my friend Cahlinan was buried in a sullen silence, which might have lasted several hours longer, had not the name of Pat Carey pressed upon his ear. He sat upright, stretched himself out, and lent an attentive ear to our conversation.

As we rode along, I sometimes addressed the postilion in a few words of native Irish.

"By my soul, sir," said he, "when I first heard you *spake*, I thought you had been born on the other side the water."

"No, Dennis, I am an Irishman, though I have been travelling abroad for many years."

"Then, long life and success to your honour, that you hav'n't forgotten your mother's tongue, like one half of our big nobs. When they get

over the Channel, by Jasus! they think no more about ould Ireland. They 're like Peg Simmons's cat, by Jasus! that licks up all the crame herself, for fear the rats should ate it. I wouldn't be in the shoes of one of these spalpeens for all the potatoes in Jem Leader's garden, if Pat Carey was only to get a hould of him."

"Why, what would Pat do to him?"

"By my soul! your honour, but I think he'd be after skinning him alive, to make a drum-head of his hide, that he might have the pleasure of *bating* it continually."

These last observations brought a smile of good humour over Cahlinan's features, and he burst into a fit of laughing. Then, turning to me, he said, —

"Of all the original fellows I ever heard speak, I give your countrymen the preference. With what a humorous grin that fellow expressed himself, and never laughed until he saw us laughing."

It was a calm and beautiful evening: we could see that the road, after running for about another mile along the edge of the same bog, suddenly took a sharp turn over a steep hill to the left, the summit of which appeared covered with trees. Another causeway, that also seemed to issue from a forest on our right hand, crossed the one on which we were travelling about half a mile a head of us. Though neither horsemen nor carriages were in sight, a faint cloud of dust suddenly

appeared to rise from this road, and gradually became larger and more distinct. Our driver, after looking earnestly in that direction for some seconds, turned to us and said, " Don't be alarmed or make yourselves uneasy, your honours; but, by Jasus! I suspect there's a party of bad fellows yonder — Pat Carey himself, perhaps, or some of his followers. Now listen, gentlemen, and no harm shall come to either of you. Give me all your money, except the value of a few shillings; and, if they ask you for any, show what you've got, and say, 'There it is, my lads, you're welcome to it; but 'tis all we have to pay our expenses.' If Pat or his brother be with them, by my soul! but they 'll not touch a sixpence of it. Your money I'll hide so that, if they were to search for a month of Sundays, by Jasus! they'd never find it."

We accordingly put the principal part of our cash, which, in reality, was of inconsiderable amount, into one pocket book, which he concealed in the neighbouring ditch. By the time all was arranged, we distinctly saw a mounted party advancing towards us at a smart trot, headed by a broad shouldered fierce looking fellow, whom the driver immediately recognised as the redoubtable Pat himself. Cahlinan, who, at the bare mention of the outlaws, had exhibited symptoms of the utmost trepidation, now sunk back in his seat, exclaiming that we should be all robbed and murdered. " The only way of conducting yourself in an emergency of this kind is, to appear per-

fectly collected, and not to exhibit any symp
of alarm," said I.

He took the hint, and endeavoured to a
more at his ease, but still he was pale as a
By this time the gang had haulted at a litt
tance from the post chaise, and called to our
to stop, who immediately reined in his h
Their leader then rode up, and, touching h
to me, said, —

"Tell me, sir, and truly, who are you
what's your business into this part of Kerry
you come on your own account, or are
public officer? have you any arms, and ho
you off for money?"

To the last of these questions I replied
well known Irish adage, at which he smiled;
in allusion to the former part of his enqu
added, —

"My honest fellow, my name is Walter B
zon. We have neither pistols nor any other
of weapon. I am travelling with my friend
Lakes of Killarney, merely on a tour of plea
and I give you my honour we have nothing
with the government, nor, except in the w
good fellowship, with any one else. Here
the money we possess."

I concluded this brief harangue with an
phrase or two of native Irish, and he replied

"Long life to you, Mr. Brabazon! I live
far from your father's when I was a boy.
fear, your honour; by Jasus! none of my

would touch a hair of your head: we only want to lay hould of those spies and government rascals that now often dress like private gentlemen, to chate us; but, by Jasus! we keep a close look out after them."

"Come, Pat," said I, not a little reassured by this speech, "we must not part thus; here, take something to treat your comrades, and drink my health."

"Stop a minute, your honour," said he, "let me spake to the boys behind me;" and off he rode to his friends.

"Give him ten shillings, at least," said Cahlinan, who began to recover from his fright; "he's an honest sort of a fellow for a highwayman."

The driver, winking at me, said, in a voice oud enough to be heard by these gentlemen robbers, —

"If they like, let them look into the carriage and under the cushions." I opened the door and jumped out; which the band no sooner perceived than they rode up to me.

"Come, honest Pat," said I, "you know me, but your comrades do not. Send a man to examine the carriage and see that what I have told you is true."

"Why, your honour," said he, "I believe you; but, to satisfy the lads, let a couple of them look into the carriage." By this time Cahlinan had also jumped out; and two of them, one at each door, turned up the cushions, felt under the seats

and in the pockets, and then came back to
companions; the greater part of whom ha
mounted and stood around us.

"Here, Pat," I said, when they retired,
are twenty shillings for you all to drink my
I'm sorry I have no more with me, but, if
tell the driver where to meet you, I'll se
more by him, as I am known and have cr
all the taverns on the road."

"No, no, your honour," said Pat, "I
consent to take any money from your ho
all at all. I stopped you because I have
scription of two police spies, whom we w
catch and make an example of. God b
you! We know that you, and your father
you, were always kind and good to your t
Get into the chaise, your honour; and do
us keep you standing in the road."

He then jumped on his horse, his co
following his example, and in a minute mo
were on their way, in search of new adve
We reseated ourselves, and our honest
handing us back the pocket-book with a s
satisfaction, cracked his whip, and away we
not a little overjoyed to have escaped so c
from a set of fellows whose very looks, exc
captain Pat himself, would condemn them
court of justice in the kingdom. Their
was indeed a figure for a painter's penci
was a stout, middle sized, well built man,
fierce and determined, but open, express

countenance that seemed to mark a character above the common class. His dress was a loose blue frieze surtout, girt round him with a belt, in which appeared a pair of horseman's pistols, and a broad cut and thrust sword hung at his side. A slouched hat, with a short broken pipe stuck in the band, was fixed knowingly on one side of his head; and he sat upon a little smart black horse, full of fire and spirit. His saddle was of the old fashioned make, and from the holsters which covered both shoulders of his horse peeped forth the butts of another pair of pistols. Altogether he had the noble air of a man of courage and quality, and in feudal times might have passed for a gallant cavalier.

His companions were all ill looking fellows, most of them badly mounted, with hair cloths or straw pads instead of saddles.

"The devil run a hunting with the posse!" said the driver, as we turned into the road to the left. "Pat's the broth of a good fellow himself; but he's got some of these new out-of-the-way notions of liberty into his sconce which have addled his brains; so that he thinks himself a bigger man than an exciseman. Then, your honours, those comrades of his are all out-laws, for whom the devil will soon cast his net, and Pat may get caught with the rest: he'd better have lived with old Donnovan, although he hated the Catholics, than turn highway robber; for

they say the young colonel, who has g
estates, is a fine, generous, noble gentleman.

"Oh! then Pat was a tenant of old Donn
said I.

"To be sure he was, your honour," repli
driver; "and lived very comfortably, u
and his father were taken up for harbouring
and villains. In making their escape from
policeman shot the father; Pat, however, gotol
and then raised a band of his own. But now
your honour, these fellows don't last lon
we 've soldiers quartered in all the villages.
in Kerry is the only place, because it is
and full of bogs, that it would be diffi
capture them."

During this conversation, we had ad
considerably towards the station, and in
hour more found ourselves at the door of a
little inn, much better than I expected t
found in such an uncultivated district.
magnificent weeping willows hung over
pond in front, and at the back was an ex
and well stocked kitchen garden. On eith
were cherry and apple trees in full blosso
the prospect from the house was over a lar
bordered in many places by the humble
tions of the turf cutters.

"Now," said Cahlinan, "we must ma
one meal of it, for I feel heartly tired, an
repose. Therefore, let us have our dinner,
and tea all at once."

"With all my heart," I replied; "but I would advise you to take tea first, and then supper or dinner, which ever you please to call it."

One meal being over, and another about to be served, we rang for the host. "In the first place," said I to him, "pray let me know your name?"

"My name, your honour, for want of a better, is Sam Riley, at your service."

"Well then, Mr. Riley, tell us truly, are your wines good?"

"By my soul, sir," replied he, "you might as well ask me if I understood the dead languages; for I never tasted a drop of wine in all my life, and know no more about the quality of it than a cow does of handling a musket: if your honour had only asked concerning whisky, our native liquor, why it's like mother's milk to my palate, and I know all about it. But won't you be after tasting the wine your honour's self? for, to tell you God's truth, I 'd sooner ate for a dozen than taste for any man."

"You're quite right, Mr. Riley," said Cahlinan; "so give us a bottle of port, a bottle of claret, and by-and-by a jug of good whisky-punch."

"Your honours shall be served," said he, "in less than no time;" and away he went. In a few minutes after he sent us the wines, both of which we found very sound and good. The dinner being ended, we began to talk over our affair with captain Pat, just as the landlord entered with the

jug of punch, which he put upon the table
claiming, —

"Here, your honours, is the jug of p
made of the pure stuff; none of your outla
mixtures, your honours; there's not a head
in twenty hogsheads of it."

"Thank you, thank you," said Cahl
"but come, landlord, tell us all you know
this desperate fellow who stopped us just aw

"By Jasus! your honour," said he, "
know no good of him; he has frightened ha
women and children in the neighbourhood
their wits, and I wish the devil had him a
gang long ago. Those dirty rascals are no
the robbers of ancient times, your honours.
instance, the famous O'Sullivan, who frequ
the road near the Black Forest: he was a g
man, and as fine, handsome a looking man a
stood in shoe-leather. I 've heard my ould g
father tell some curious stories of him."

"Yes," said Cahlinan, "but still he
robber, and took people's property from
without saying 'by your leave.'"

"No, your honour, he'd scorn a mean a
He never took money from an unfortunate
or one who could not afford to lose it; be
he was generous to the poor, and often gave
what he took from the rich."

"Come, landlord," said I, "tell us a
about him, and we shall then be the better
to judge of his merits."

"True," observed Cahlinan; "so, my honest fellow, sit you down; and, as you never drink wine, here's a tumbler of punch for you: and now give us your story."

After drinking our healths and success to all our undertakings, mine host commenced his narrative as follows: —

"Your honours must know that O'Sullivan was born and bred a gentleman, but in his youth was too fond of gaming and drinking, and at length he lost so much money he was put to his shifts how to live. In all his games and riots he had a companion, also a young man of decent family, who never quitted him. They had been at Dublin together, where they played high, and were fortunate for a time. With a part of their gains they bought themselves two of the finest and best trained hunters they could meet with. Sullivan's horse, especially, was a famous one, and cost him a large sum of money.

"One day his friend proposed to try them at the hunt of a rich gentleman who lived not far off, and who regularly turned out a stag once a week. They went there and beat the whole field, taking leaps that astonished every body. On the evening of their return, some knowing ones got round them, and enticed them again to drink and pla high, and in that unlucky night they lost nearly all the large sums they had gained previously. However, the young man observed that they played foul, and communicated the intelligence to

his companion. O'Sullivan now watched rascals, and detected them himself. He i diately demanded the restitution of his m This being refused, a quarrel ensued, and came to blows; swords were drawn, and O' van and his friend, having killed three of four adversaries, left the house as speedily a sible. They hastened to their lodgings, co what money they had there, saddled their horses, and hastily quitted Dublin. The hard across the country all night, and arriv next day about noon at the Black Forest: ing into the thickest part of it, they tied horses to the trees, and, placing their cloaks ground, laid themselves quietly down and sl several hours. When they woke it was evening, and they felt chilled and hungry. livan then said to his companion, 'Here safe out of the way of the police for th ment; but, as it may be our ill luck to f with them hereafter, remember I solemnly never to be taken alive. I 'll never give up to justice, and suffer an O'Sullivan to be for killing such villains as those whom we de in cheating us.'

"'I am ready to join in your vow,' sai friend; 'but come, let us tarry here no lo but endeavour to get something to eat.'

"O'Sullivan then drew his sword, and h his companion kissed the hilt as they swore rible oath to fight and fall together; or, if

escaped, to live in the forest and on the highway; for, knowing they would be outlawed, they resolved to make the best of a bad bargain.

"After this solemn proceeding they mounted and rode in search of some place where they might procure food and shelter for their horses and themselves. Just on the edge of the forest was a neat looking hut, where lived a widow with her son, her two daughters, and a boy, who obtained a living by making baskets, and selling them at the neighbouring village. These poor people had a couple of cows and a horse, and managed to keep themselves just above want, but nothing more; whatever they had to spare of their fresh eggs, milk, and butter, they used likewise to sell at the village.

"On seeing two gentlemen armed and mounted stop before their door, they were frightened half out of their wits; but O'Sullivan jumped from his horse, and addressed the old woman, telling her they only wanted what food she could spare them, with a little corn for their horses, for all which he would pay her handsomely. Being an avaricious old body, as your honours will learn hereafter, she lent a ready ear to the promises of money, and, when the stranger showed her some gold, she stared her eyes almost out of their sockets, the old hag! so much was she delighted with the sight of it. I must, however, tell your honours she was the only bad-natured body of the family, for the son was a good, honest, open-hearted fellow; and

the two girls were as sweet as love and jo
make them. The boy also was a good l
he was a poor orphan, whom the ould ha
hould of by hook or by crook; and he fe
of her, and every thing she told him to
like the holy commandments upon him.

" The old woman seemed quite content
ceive O'Sullivan and his companion; s
them plenty of fresh butter, milk, and eg
fine potatoes, and clean rush beds to slee
Their horses, too, were well fed; and the
his comrade stood gaping like fools at t
in all their born days they had never see
pair of fine cattle before.

" When he came into the house, O'
asked if he had fed them well? ' By Ja
honour,' said he, ' but I'd sooner starv
than let two such noble beasts as those go
their suppers.'

" ' Then,' said O'Sullivan, ' you're a
fellow. I never knew an honest man tha
love horses.'

" As they all sat talking and laughing
the old woman put many a sly question
and they saw that the cunning old wit
not be asy until she found out who they
all about them.

" ' Listen to me, you ould devil,' said
van at last, with a voice that made her
' I see you are as full of curiosity as an

meat, and I am going to satisfy it: but remember what I tell you and your family is a secret; whoever should be bold enough to divulge it shall die the death of a dog.'

"This he repeated with a thundering voice that made them all shake in their brogues, and turn as pale as ashes. He concluded his story by saying they meant to inhabit the forest, and should often come to sleep at the cottage, always paying handsomely.

"'Should any enquiries be made,' observed O'Sullivan, 'say we are hunters who live in the forest, and that is all you know about us; and now, down on your marrow bones, all of you, and swear by the cross you will never betray us. On hearing these words the old woman and her family fell upon their knees, and swore by all that was holy and sacred never to inform against them. They passed a pleasant night, and, the next morning, after a hearty breakfast, rode off into the forest at an easy trot, marking their way by particular trees and bushes, and the rising of the sun, so as to be able to find the road back; for the forest was thick and gloomy, which is the reason, your honours, why it is called the Black Forest.

"After journeying for about a couple of hours, they came to a small acclivity covered with moss, where the trees grew thinner, and there was very little underwood, except just at the rise of the hill. The ground, too, looked soft and sounded

hollow beneath their horses' hoofs. O'Su
suddenly reined up his horse and said to hi
rade, —

" ' Here is a nice spot to construct a c
house under ground to retire to when we ar
pushed; and, as it is not far from the cotta
shall be able to procure provisions easily.'

" ' A good thought enough,' said his
' but how are we to manage to get out?
must be large enough to keep our horses
as ourselves.'

" ' Let me alone for that,' replied O'S
' I see the old woman's son is an honest
whom I can trust; we 'll pay him well, a
will buy spades, shovels, and whatever
necessary, and also assist us in the work.
devil 's in it, if, in the course of a mon
can't make ourselves a house large enou
hollowing out the side of this hill, which, y
is soft and asy. Besides, my friend, my
decided: in future I am a highwayman.
money will soon be expended, but I shall
want. I shall only rob the rich and the
hearted; and, to make up my account
Heaven, I 'll do all the good I can, and g
the poor and the wretched.'

" ' A noble decision ! ' exclaimed his
' Here 's the right hand of one who knows n
and who will never flinch from any schem
shall propose.'

" O'Sullivan gave him a friendly shak

said, 'Enough! the business is settled. Now let us ride back; this night I'll speak to the son, and to-morrow I'll send him off to purchase our implements.'

"On the way said O'Sullivan, 'When we begin to rob, we must never touch any body on this side of the forest; the scene of our operations must be at the upper end, that joins the Dublin high road: there we shall meet travellers who have something worth taking. Whenever we are pursued, let us push into the middle of the forest; here, I know, few will have the courage to seek us, thinking we belong to a gang who are dispersed through it, and ready to shoot them from behind every tree.'

"Talking over their schemes for the future, they arrived in the afternoon at the hut; and the old woman, who expected them, had a good dinner ready, and they ate and drank, and laughed and joked with the girls, and were as happy as princes. In the course of the evening O'Sullivan took an opportunity of talking with the son apart, and he agreed to assist him, and to do exactly as he should be directed.

"They lived several months in this manner, except that they occasionally took victuals with them into the forest, where they sometimes remained three or four days at a time, working at their cave, with the assistance of the old woman's son. At last they finished it, so as to make a comfortable dwelling. The door was over-

shadowed by some thick hazle bushes, and, being covered all over with sods and moss, it was impossible to distinguish it from the natural turf that clothed the side of the hill. By means of the boy, who was always sent with the old woman's horse to sell her butter and eggs at the village, they now and then procured bread and various other necessaries.

" Before the cave was well finished, O'Sullivan proposed to his friend that they should try their luck for a day or two on the Dublin side of the forest.

" ' But stay you here,' said he; ' let me go myself for the first trial; and, afterwards, we will make all our expeditions in company.'

" Knowing his companion's fierce and impatient temper, the young man assented to the proposal; and, at the expiration of about twelve or fourteen hours, the robber returned with a rich booty, out of which he made the old woman a handsome present, and all went on as smoothly as possible. The two girls loved the young men dearly, considering them as their future husbands; for O'Sullivan and his friend both swore never to desert them as long as they lived.

" It was now upwards of a year that they had resided in the forest in perfect security, when suddenly the old woman's son brought intelligence from the village that the justice of peace and the sheriff both received orders to keep a good look out for two men exactly of their descriptions

But O'Sullivan laughed at their attempts; carelessly observing, that they might look out or not, 'for all the constables in the county couldn't take him alive.'

"However, he was in greater danger than he imagined. The old hag of a mother, whom the devil, and the hopes of making her fortune, began to work upon, having overheard her son tell her guests that a large sum of money was offered for their heads, the malicious witch determined to betray them the first good opportunity. For this purpose, the next time she had eggs and butter to sell she mounted the old mare and rode off to the village by herself, a thing she never did in her life before. The girls, suspecting her of no good designs, warned their sweethearts to be on their guard. By the assistance of the old woman's son, they had their cave nicely fitted up with a couple of good beds and bedsteads, a table or two, a couple of benches and chairs, besides having purchased, by little and little, a stock of salt meat, a couple of cows that were pastured in the forest, and also a great many things for the kitchen and dairy.

"Seeing it began to grow late, and the old woman had not yet returned from the village, the two robbers thought it prudent to sleep in the forest that night, making the girls promise to watch their mother strictly, and try if they could find out what she was at. In the mean time the old devil had been to the justice of peace. Being

an artful body, she only told him that tw
people had once stopped, and ate and dra
her house; observing, as they departed, th
should probably visit her on their return.
me, your honour, what will you give if
contrive, the next time they come, to le
honour know of it, so that you may take th

" 'If,' said the justice, 'you can give m
information as will enable us to take them
here's the reward stated in the proclama
the government. Then, taking up a pa
read to her, that the value of £200
offered for both, or £1000 for taking
of them, dead or alive.'

" At the mention of such an enormou
the miserly old hag was so tickled, she
hardly conceal her joy.

" 'Very good, your honour,' said she.
your honour must say nothing about the b
to any one: leave all to me; and the ne
they come, if you will only keep ready s
eight horsemen, well armed, I'll enable
pounce upon and catch them. But hov
honour, shall I be sure of getting my rewa

" 'Oh! nothing easier,' he replied:
well as every sheriff and justice in the tw
ties, am authorised to pay the money to
former the moment they are taken. Her
few shillings for you, by way of earnest; g
a look out, and when you think there's

chance of taking them, send word, and leave the rest to me.'

"She got home just about dusk, and seemed in a very good humour, having brought with her a large stock of things to treat the 'kind gentlemen,' as she said; for she had sold her eggs that day at a higher price than the boy ever got for them, and would, in future, always go to market herself. 'But where are the lads from the forest, girls?' said she. 'I have brought home some bread for them to eat with our fresh butter.'

"The daughter replied, that O'Sullivan and his friend seemed vexed at something or other, they could not tell what; and had declared their resolution not to sleep there again, but to visit them occasionally in the day-time. Their betrayer appeared thunderstruck at this news, and exclaimed,—

"'God forbid we should do any thing to displease them! for they are generous, good young men.'

"This determination of the outlaws knocked up her original scheme altogether; which was, to desire the horsemen to come out at night, and take them whilst they were asleep. However, malice, and the love of gold, rankled in her heart, and she thought to herself, 'I shall find another chance before long; and if we can't take them by night, why we'll do it by day.' Accordingly, when O'Sullivan and his friend came from the

forest, she was kinder to them than ever. asked her, what she had heard at the villa if any one spoke to her about them?

"'Lord bless your honours!' said she would speak to a poor, miserable ould like me? My boy sells my eggs too che went myself, and got a better price for th

"Ten or twelve days passed off s still the two robbers, during all that tim once slept at the cottage, which vexed woman exceedingly. Besides, she remar each of them always carried a brace of his belt, in addition to those which wer holsters. However, they were pretty about coming to their meals: this, she would serve her purpose, and she deter let the justice of peace know the hour visits to the cottage the next time she market. She was annoyed, also, at see they appeared restless and uneasy, and the alert, whilst they were with her. and the boy were very fond of O'Sulli he had promised the former, when the finished, to give him money enough to expenses of his wedding with a poor gir cutter's daughter, with whom he was in l whom his mother always prevented hi marrying, because she had nothing at a not even a cow or a horse. Although he companion had assisted in building and p

the cave, they never told their mother and sisters a word of what they had been doing. They pretended they had been at work in the neighbourhood; and, as O'Sullivan gave them plenty of money, they used to bring the old woman the accustomed portion of their earnings. Now it was agreed between the two robbers, that whenever they were at the cottage their horses should remain saddled, ready to be off at a moment's warning; and the boy was to keep watch, and, should he see any one coming, he was to give them notice by a particular sign. However, as long as the old woman staid at home, they did not feel afraid; but O'Sullivan swore, and told the girls of his determination, that the first time she went again to the village he would take them, the cows, the horse, and every thing he could collect, into the forest. 'There,' said he, 'you shall live with me, in plenty and safety. Should your mother not prove treacherous, when she comes back I'll bring her to you; but if she has informed against us, then you shall never see her more. I'll kill her, and burn her house about her head.'

"The poor girls cried bitterly at hearing his threats about their old mother: but what could they do? Twice or thrice, when the old beldame wanted to go to the village, they talked her over, and prevented her from putting her design into execution.

" Six weeks passed away in this ma
she began to think again of the jus
peace, and his large promises; and
getting into her head, pushed her on
ruin. In spite of all the girls could
she resolved to go to the village.

CHAPTER V.

"THE love of gold, your honours," observed our host, "is as bad, they say, as the love of whisky; for both get into the head, and bewilder the brains. I don't pretend to say that O'Sullivan was not a wicked man in some respects; but, as he had never done any thing but good to the old woman and her family, and was to be her son-in-law, she was an ungrateful body, and brought down ill luck upon herself. But, to go on with my story. One morning, bright and early, before the girls were awake, and no one except the boy was moving about the hut, — and he was always in bodily fear when the old witch happened to rise before him, — he heard somebody whispering on the outside, near the window. Creeping cautiously to the casement, he saw the old devil talking to a man, who looked very like a constable.

"They spoke in so low a tone of voice, that it was impossible to gather the precise meaning of their conversation. However, by lying down upon the ground, and placing his ear close to the aperture at the bottom of the door, he managed to hear a broken sentence or two, which convinced him that mischief was afoot.

" ' Hush !' said the old woman, ' don't
so loud.'— ' I understand they sleep in the
— In two hours more I 'll come to his h
Be off speedily !'

" The lad no sooner heard these words,
stealing slyly away to his bed, he began to
very loud; and lucky it was that he did
the old woman came in the very next
She made no noise whatever, but, appro
the bed, began to shake him by the sh
At first he pretended to be fast asleep, but
his eyes after a while, when she said
softly, ' What a lazy dog you are ! do
know you were to go to the furze brake
light ? Come, be quick, or I shall be after
you a good drubbing.'

" The lad jumped up, trembling in hi
and was dressed in a minute; for, alth
stout fellow of eighteen or twenty, he was
in salutary dread of the old woman's black
stick. When he was dressed, and about
off, she said, ' I shall go milk the cows, an
I have an errand to do at the village; so,
girls ask about me, tell them where I 'm
I shall be home before night. But, mind
are not to tell O'Sullivan; and if *you* do,
the death of you !'

" The boy went off, but not to the furze
He made his way as fast as possible int
forest, and informed his friends what he had

heard, and also what the old woman said to him on parting.

" ' You 're an honest fellow,' said O'Sullivan, ' and I 'll make your fortune. Come, now 's our time, my friend,' he added, addressing his associate: ' whilst the old woman is gone, we will take the girls off to our cave; and as for the malicious old fiend of a mother, I 'll put her out of the way of harming any one in future. She has not many hours to live.'

" They now hastened to the cottage, and, addressing the girls, he said, ' I want no farther proof of your mother's baseness and treachery: so be quick; give us what you have to eat, and then pack up your shreds, and be off with us to the forest, where we have every thing comfortably prepared for you.' One of them began to cry, and beg him to wait until the old woman returned; but he told her to cease her lamentations, unless she wished to remain and be murdered; ' for,' said he, ' your old worthless mother is gone to inform against me; and I am determined to blow up this hut, and her, and all her friends, into the air.'

" They were so frightened at hearing this, that they hastened to be off as fast as possible. The son and the boy had been despatched beforehand with the cows; and, as the forest was close by, they made them fast to the trees, and returned speedily to take whatever things they wished to

carry away. This they had done so quickly, they were back again just as the two robbers mounted the girls behind them. On arr where the cows had been tied, they all mounted: then, turning to his friend, O'Sul said,—

"'You know the road to our cave, an lead these young women to it: I must sto for their brother. Besides, I have some w do ere I can join you; so don't expect me the afternoon, or perhaps not until night.'

"He had settled how he should proceed he left the forest that morning, and had b with him a good stock of gunpowder, and tarred paper, rosin, and flax. When the s the boy came back, he told the former to his baggage, which was not much, upon th and to lead them to their retreat; but h the boy with him.

"Having now despatched them all, he the boy jump up behind him, and off he r the cottage, and commenced his operatio making a hole through the eaves of the into a kind of garret, or platform of loose b where the two boys used to sleep. Throug aperture was laid a train of gunpowder, th to some combustibles placed exactly in the of a large heap of oaten straw and furze, had been previously deposited there; with long match communicated from the outside

the eaves, so that the boy could set fire to it from below with a lighted stick. He then placed another train, which led into the centre of the hut, which he also filled with straw, furze, &c. Then, carefully fastening the windows, and locking the door, he took the boy up behind him, and rode back to the cave, where he arrived about sun-down. Here he found all his friends assembled, and much better provided for than ever they were before.

" He now communicated to his comrade the manner in which he intended to proceed.

" ' About midnight,' said he, ' we will start off, each armed with two brace of pistols and our cutlasses, taking the two boys with us. When we get to the high blackthorn hedge, at the back of the house, we must all hide except the boy, who will go with his match ready lighted to the house, and wait there until our enemies approach. The moment he sees more than two men together in the road, on horseback, he will set fire to the hut, and hasten away with his companion to hide himself. At the sight of the flames the police fellows will ride up the faster; let us then leap the hedge and make for the hut also, only keeping behind it until they get near enough to allow of our charging them. This we must do like lightning, firing our pistols, and afterwards plying them with our cutlasses; then, if one mother's son of them escapes, say O'Sullivan's a baby!'

"His friend, who was also as brave as
felt delighted with the plan, and promised to
him with all his force.

"O'Sullivan then instructed the son and
to hide themselves until the hut was burn
then to come forwards, and begin to cry an
loud lamentations, saying they went out
morning to work, and left their sisters asle
they now feared they were burnt. 'Possi
policemen will seize and examine you, bu
fear; acknowledge that we came sometime
house, and asked for food for ourselves and
with which you furnished us; that we alwa
you, and generally returned into the high
where we went afterwards, you knew n
They will threaten, but don't fear; if they
in prison I 'll release you, or lose my life. As
you stick to one story they can't touch a
your head.'

"The son and the boy promised to do ex
he directed them. Night came, and the
told the girls they were going on a secret
tion, and charged them on no account to b
foot from the cave until their return. Th
off, and soon reached the scene of the in
conflagration. O'Sullivan dismounted, an
with the boy to examine the hut and sho
how to fire the matches. Finding every
exactly as they left it, he directed him to cli
thatch, at the backside of the roof, until h
see over the ridge; and, as soon as he disc

any one approaching, to slide quietly down, and proceed as he had been directed.

"They lay concealed upwards of two or three hours, with their eyes fixed on the boy, who did not attempt to move; and, just as O'Sullivan was going to him again, thinking, perhaps, he had fallen asleep, he saw him suddenly drop from the roof, and in five seconds after the house was in a blaze. The two friends lost no time in leaping the hedge and galloping up to the hut, where they remained concealed until they heard the voices of several people quite near; and then, your honours, like two eagles pouncing upon a flock of wild ducks, they dashed in among the policemen. Their attack was so unexpected and so furious, nothing could withstand them: although the enemy were five in number, not a man of them but was either shot, cut down, or unhorsed; and the two robbers were off and nearly out of sight before they had time to recover from their surprise. Only one out of the number had time to fire a pistol; but the shot was a fatal one: the bullet passed through the breast of O'Sullivan's friend, and he expired in four days after.

"When the old woman, who came with the policemen, saw her hut burning, she rushed through the door, no doubt to find her hidden bag of silver; but in her haste she slipped down, and, the flames bursting forth in a sheet, it was impossible to save her, and she was burnt to ashes. Three of the policemen were killed, and the other two badly

wounded. When the house was almost consumed, the son and the boy came running home out of breath, and, throwing themselves on the ground, began to cry most bitterly, and make terrible lamentations, so that they excited the pity of several people whom the flames had attracted from the high-road. Some endeavoured to console them; others gave them money; but one of the constables, who, fortunately for him, had arrived after the 'fray was over, said they might be innocent people, but, as they lived in the hut that O'Sullivan was known to frequent, it was his duty to take them before the magistrate, and let them answer for themselves as they knew how. They made no objection, but went with him immediately. The news of the affray with policemen soon spread far and wide, and alarmed every one. But the most extraordinary thing was, — that very same day, at about three in the afternoon, O'Sullivan stopped a gentleman, on the high road, quite at the other end of the forest, and robbed him of his watch and a considerable sum in gold. This he must have done purposely to make them think him a very devil in grain, your honours; for the distance between where the house was burnt and the Dublin road is so great, that no single horse was thought capable of performing it. However, the gentleman swore to the colour of his steed, and his accoutrements, which were exactly the

same as when he attacked the policemen. A strict search was made, two days afterwards, through the forest, but they could discover nothing. The boy and the son were detained in custody several days, and examined three times; but, always telling the same simple tale, and exclaiming against the old mother for her advice, that made her ready to do any thing to get money, the magistrate ordered them to be discharged. On the following day, about noon, they arrived at the hut, just in time to see O'Sullivan's friend expire. They buried him in the forest.

"One of the constables used to laugh at those who were frightened at this redoubtable robber; and often said, 'I wish I could only meet with him: we should soon see who's the better man.' O'Sullivan heard of this, and determined to seek the fellow who thought he had strength and courage to take him. For this purpose he disguised himself as a peasant, and frequented the village several days before an opportunity presented itself. At last, just as he was about to depart, he saw the constable walking on before him. He was overjoyed at this, and hastened to overtake him. I must inform your honours that, although disguised as a common labourer, he had a pair of pistols and a cutlass concealed beneath his clothes: indeed he always went armed. The constable was

going to the skirts of the village to serve a warrant, and had his staff in his hand: when O'Sullivan came up to him, he said, —

"'Good morrow morning to you, Mr. Constable; why you are at your business by times. Your vocation is not always an agreeable one.'

"'Oh,' said the constable, 'I don't mind it. There's very few fellows that I can't manage.'

"'How comes it then,' said the other, 'that you allowed O'Sullivan to get away from you when he burnt the old woman's hut, and killed so many of your comrades?'

"'O'Sullivan,' replied he, 'is a desperate fellow, to be sure; but I was not in the 'fray, or he might not have escaped so easily. I didn't get there until the business was over.'

"'So you think you could manage him, then?' said the robber, looking at him archly.

"'To be sure I do,' replied the constable: 'who would be afraid of an outlaw?'

"'Then,' said O'Sullivan, 'I'll lead you to a spot where you may find him, if you'll pay handsomely. What will you give me?'

"The constable looked at him, and seemed a little uneasy; but, being ashamed to confess his fears, he replied, 'What will I give you? You know the government has offered so much for his head; and, if we take him together, you must get one half, of course.'

"'Very well,' said O'Sullivan: 'come, let us go together; his hiding place is not far from this.'

"'With all my heart,' answered the constable, although his features belied his words; 'but I must first serve a writ, or the magistrate will be dissatisfied.'

"'That 's of no consequence,' said the robber; 'I'll go with you: a few minutes more or less won't spoil our sport; he will wait for my coming.'

"So, on they walked together, until they got outside the village, when, of a sudden, O'Sullivan turned to the constable, and said, —

"'Hear me, Mr. Constable, I have not time to go any farther, nor, indeed, is it necessary; I am O'Sullivan: and now let me see how you 'll go to work.'

"The constable was so thunderstruck, and so frightened withal, that the staff dropped from his hands; and, trembling like a leaf, he fell on his knees and begged his life.

"'You are a cowardly rascal!' said the robber, taking up the staff, and shaking it over his head; 'and I have a great mind to kill you for being such an impudent braggart, when you knew in your heart you dare not stand before me for a minute.'

"'Spare my life!' cried the constable; 'I confess that I talked like a fool; and command me to do whatever you please!'

"'On whom are you going to serve that warrant?' asked he: 'come, speak the truth, or I 'll split your noddle; and, if there be any brains within it, I 'll scatter them over the road!'

"'Oh! Mr. Sullivan, have mercy upon me

for the sake of my wife and children! I am going to sarve a warrant upon a poor fellow, who has also a wife and several children, at the suit of his landlord, a cruel, hard-hearted man; and it really grieves me to do it: but I am not in fault,—it is the magistrate's orders.'

"'Who is his landlord?'

"''Squire Stephens.'

"'Oh, I know the iron-hearted scoundrel. Come, let us go to the poor fellow's hut, and I'll see if I cannot settle the business for him.'

"On they went together until they came to the cottage. The constable knocked at the door, which was opened by a poor sickly looking man.

"'Here,' said the constable, 'is a warrant to take you before the justice, at the suit of 'Squire Stephens: it grieves me to sarve it upon you, but what can I do?'

"The wife and children began to cry bitterly, and the husband said, with a mournful voice, 'God forgive him for distressing the poor and the needy!' Then, addressing himself to O'Sullivan, he added, —

"'I was six months laid up with a fever, or I should have paid off this debt, which is no more than five pounds; and now I shall have to part with my last cow,—all I have left to support these poor half-starved children. What, in the name of God, will become of them!' and he began to cry also. O'Sullivan was touched to the quick; for,

although a robber, your honours, he was a man of noble and generous feelings.

"'Dry up your tears, my honest fellow,' said he, 'and tell me how much you owe that niggardly rascal. I am O'Sullivan, and I will protect you.'

"At the sound of his name the woman trembled, and the children ran to hide themselves; whilst the man fell on his knees, exclaiming, 'Long life and success to your honour! I have often heard of your noble doings; and may the great God of heaven preserve you!'

"The robber ordered him to rise. 'Here,' said he, pulling ten pieces of gold out of his pockets, 'here's double the sum you owe. Go directly to the magistrate, make him send for 'Squire Stephens, pay the money before him, and take a receipt. Afterwards, do you, constable, tell your employer that, if ever he serves a writ upon this poor man again, knowing he is not in a situation to pay, I'll give him only twenty-four hours' notice to repent of it: and warn that avaricious scoundrel, the 'squire, to be cautious how he distresses any poor man again; for, the very first time I hear of his misdoings, I shall pay him a visit when he least expects me, and give him a passport to the place where all such unfeeling monsters ought to go. And now, Mr. Constable, are you satisfied with O'Sullivan, whom you wished to deliver over to justice?'

"God be with your honour!" said the constable; "I would sooner cut my right arm off than do such an action: and I shall never forget your generosity."

"Then," replied O'Sullivan, "remember to deliver my message, word for word, to the magistrate and the 'squire."

When the constable and the husband were gone, he gave the wife a direction how to find the turf-cutter's hut, near the Black Forest; telling her, if ever matters went wrong with her husband again, to get some friend to write what she wanted done on a slip of paper, and leave it at the turf-cutter's, "when I shall take care of you." Saying these words, he returned to the forest.

O'Sullivan now lived unmolested and at his ease. He married the young lad to the betrothed wife of his deceased friend; his brother-in-law married the turf-cutter's daughter; and neither were ever suspected of having any connection with him.

He assumed many disguises: in Dublin he was sometimes a Jew; at Cork he appeared as a dealer from the north; he passed for a pedlar at the fairs; and a labourer all over the country. In this way he found out every body's business, and followed up his plan of robbing the rich and avaricious, and giving to the poor and needy. Although many people were acquainted with him personally, and had money transactions and deal-

ings with him, none ever discovered where he lived, nor did any one attempt to inform against him. As I before observed, he was always ready to assist any one whom he saw in want; but was particularly fond of setting up industrious, clever people in trade, and aiding them to gain a fortune.

"If you are not fatigued, your honours," said the host, "I'll tell you a couple of stories more about him."

"Oh, no," said I, "we can never be tired of hearing such interesting tales. Come, moisten your throat with a tumbler of punch, and then continue."

"O'Sullivan," said he, "in his frequent rambles on the high road, where he always appeared like a well-dressed gentleman, and rode a thorough-bred hunter, met with some very extraordinary adventures. In the Dublin road, near the Black Forest, he often robbed in open day-light. On certain occasions, the only disguise he practised was, making some marks with charcoal on his face, and blacking his eye-brows and mustachios, which gave him a terrible savage appearance: at other times he was without any disguise whatever.

"A young officer, of genteel family and connections, brave and honourable, but poor as a church mouse, was quartered in the capital, for some months, with his regiment. By hook and by crook, and with the assistance of a distant relation,

he bought himself up to the rank of a major, but there he stuck for many years,—he could get no higher. Whilst living in Dublin, he, by accident, became acquainted with a very wealthy and beautiful young heiress, and fell deeply in love with her. She was not insensible to his attentions, and, after awhile, became also passionately fond of the major. Her fortune was in the hands of an old avaricious uncle, whom her father had appointed her guardian at his death. He not only kept her constantly in want of money, but declared he would never consent to her marrying with any one but a certain rich nobleman whom the niece detested. Her mother, who was still living, possessed a small property in her own right, that enabled them to appear handsomely in the fashionable circles at Dublin; for oftentimes the old uncle refused the allowance prescribed by her father's will, under pretence that she was spending too much money. These circumstances, joined to her love for the young major, made her very unhappy; and she determined, since her uncle would not give his consent to her marriage, to commence a suit at law against him, and try to force him into a compliance. There was a clause in the will fixing the period at which she was to be mistress of her own fortune; but this would not happen for three or four years — a long time for impatient lovers to wait. In the mean time the young major received news of the death of a distant relation at Cork, who left him a sum of

money, which, with the mother's income, was thought sufficient to enable him to marry the daughter immediately. Delighted with the idea of soon being in possession of what would make them happy, he set off, post haste, to receive his inheritance.

" Near two months passed away before he could arrange matters at Cork so as to return to Dublin. At length the time arrived when he was able to collect the whole sum in gold, which he put in a small leathern bag and secured upon his person. One of his intimate friends told him how dangerous it was to travel with money, and that he had better try and get a letter of exchange for the amount on some banker in Dublin; but he was obstinate, and said he would trust no one.

" ' My happiness,' he observed, ' is at stake with this gold, and so shall be my life. I have a good pair of pistols in my holsters, with a trusty sword by my side, and I don't fear any man breathing.'

" In those days, your honours, there were no diligences, nor any regular posts. Gentlemen either took hired horses from town to town, or rode their own. Like the rest, our major was obliged to adopt this mode of travelling. He bade adieu to his friend with a merry heart, full of the hope of soon seeing the object of his dearest affections, and making her his own for ever. His journey was speedy and prosperous enough until he arrived within about two miles of the Black

Forest; when, suddenly, he heard a horse behind coming up to him in a gallop. Turning round his head, he saw a very genteelly dressed man, in a hunting garb, mounted on a superb jet black horse, whose silky skin glistened under the sun, and contrasted curiously with the white foam with which his impatience of the bit had covered his mouth and neck. His saddle and bridle were of elegant fashion, and the silver-mounted stocks of a pair of pistols glittered beneath the bear-skin covers of his holsters. Riding up alongside of the major, he said, 'Good morning, sir: I saw you were travelling slowly my road, and I hastened to join you,—that is, if you have no objection to a companion.'

"'A hearty welcome, sir,' rejoined the major; 'I should be sorry to refuse good company. Your horse looks fretful and sweats freely, as if you had put him to his speed lately.'

"'Oh,' said the other, 'it has only been for a mile or two; but, now I have overtaken you, I shall travel as slow as you please.'

"They jogged on, cheek by jowl, your honours, for a full hour; when the major at last asked the stranger how far he was going?

"'Not very far; only to the borders of the Black Forest, which is almost within sight of us: and you, sir, whither are you travelling?'

"'I am going all the way to town.'

"The stranger's answer alarmed the major:

he directly suspected he could be no one but O'Sullivan himself; and he was right: still he had nothing to fear. O'Sullivan knew that officers, generally, were not very rich, and seldom carried much money with them: besides, he had made a tolerable booty that day already.

"The young major watched all his companion's motions, and, when something attracted his attention to the other side of the road, he suddenly pulled his pistols out of the holsters, and stuck them in his bosom; then, thrusting his arm through the reins of the bridle, he jumped upon the ground, and throwing down his bag of gold, he put his foot upon it, exclaiming,—

"'If I am not mistaken, you are the outlaw O'Sullivan; and I tell you plainly, you shall never have my purse without fighting fairly for it. I have heard you are a gentleman and a man of honour: if so, stand off ten paces, and whoever is the better shot be master of the gold. My happiness and my best prospects in life will be sacrificed if I lose my money; therefore I shall not resign it without a hard struggle.'

"The robber, who was immediately on the alert when he saw the young major jump from his saddle, had cocked and levelled one of his pistols, ready to fire; but, on hearing this address, he checked himself, uncocked, and returned his weapon to the holster. Then, with a smile, he said, —

"'Young man, were I to consent to what you propose it would be your loss: O'Sullivan is a fatal marksman,—he never misses his aim.'

"'I have heard so,' replied the major; 'but, as an honourable man, you cannot take the first shot: therefore, if we fire together, I, being also skilful, shall have as good a chance as you.' After regarding him for a second or two with astonishment, the robber also dismounted from his horse, and said,—

"'Come sir, since you are the first man I ever met that had the courage to challenge me, here 's my hand and my friendship. Tell me your history, and how I can assist you, and you may be sure I shall not fail to do it effectually. But first pocket your money, mount your horse, and as we ride slowly along I can listen to you.'

"The young major shook hands with him, saying, 'Long life to you, O'Sullivan! I see what people say of you is true.'

"Being again on horseback, the major, in a few words, related to him his love for the young lady, and the bad conduct of the old uncle. When he had finished, O'Sullivan enquired where the latter lived?

"'In Dublin.'

"'Then all you want is his consent in writing; that is to say, a paper, with his signature, promising to deliver over her fortune, and permitting her to marry. Has her uncle any children or any near relations?'

"'None but the young lady and her mother.'

"'Good: now listen to me. The moment you reach Dublin, — which, if you ride on briskly, will be to-morrow about mid-day,—go immediately to a lawyer, and get him to draw up a legal document, in the old uncle's name, by which he consents to give his niece to you in marriage, and make her his heiress at his death. Let this paper be ready by the evening. The instant it is finished, ride out of Dublin to the fourth milestone on this road, where I will await your coming. Bring a carriage, as I shall be on foot. When the carriage stops at the spot I have mentioned, knowing it is you, I shall join you. Attend particularly to my injunctions. On arriving in Dublin, stop at a tavern; and do not attempt to visit any of your friends, or let them know of your arrival, until this affair is finished. Farewell! be expeditious, and you shall see what O'Sullivan will do for you.'

"The major attempted to express his acknowments, but the other stopped him short by saying, 'It will be time enough to thank me when the affair is happily arranged.'

"Full of joy, and curiosity, at the same time, to know how the robber chief intended to manage with the old crabbed uncle, he proceeded rapidly on his journey, racking his brains, the whole time, to imagine why O'Sullivan had ordered the document to be drawn up in legal form.

"'What,' thought he, 'has an outlaw and a highwayman to do with law — he whom justice cannot bind, and who acts independent of every form and restraint?' Full of these conjectures, the major arrived in Dublin at the time O'Sullivan had mentioned, and, without delay, entered upon the affair as he had been directed. When the paper was finished, and the attorney had received his money, he said, 'Sir, permit me to warn you of one thing: this act is drawn up in the strongest legal manner; but still it will not be binding in law unless signed before two witnesses. I mention this to you, that you may inform the gentleman for whom it has been prepared that such a precaution is absolutely necessary.'

"The major thanked him, and, hastening back to the tavern, set out with all possible speed for the fourth mile-stone. The carriage no sooner stopped than O'Sullivan made his appearance, dressed like a Jew, with a long beard, and carrying a bundle of clothes in his hand. When they drove off, 'Now, my friend,' said he 'remember my name is Moses: have you got the paper ready?'

"'All ready,' replied the major: and he then related his conversation with the lawyer.

"'Ha!' exclaimed O'Sullivan, 'that makes the matter rather more difficult; but don't fear,—I'll manage it for you. Have you a friend whom you can trust, and who, also, will not betray me?'

"'I have,—a captain in our regiment; he and I are cousins, and sworn friends: a man of honour, in whom you can confide.'

"'Does the old uncle of the lady know him personally, or by name?'

"'No.'

"'So much the better: the moment we arrive, do you go in search of him;—tell him your adventure with me, but don't say I meant to rob you, for, I give you my honour, I had no such intention: it was your own suspicions which urged you to the challenge.'

"'Forgive me; I was wrong, but I am sure that the cause of my rashness will plead my excuse.'

"'Oh, I am satisfied; and shall now shew you how much I love a brave and honest man. Away, then,—find your cousin: tell him he must be disguised as a Jew, and go with us. He will be one witness, and I'll make the old man find another when I get alongside of him. What time will you be absent?'

"'In a couple of hours, if my cousin is alive and well, he shall be here to meet you.'

"'Enough; and, in the mean time, I'll go and prepare my way: but, first, give me the address of this obstinate dotard, whom I'll quickly bring to his senses.'

"They separated, each taking a different direction; the major to find his cousin, and O'Sullivan to seek out one of his spies, who could go to the old fellow's house, and ascertain the

proper time to arrive there, when he would be alone in his library, and few people in waiting. This he was not long discovering; and, that towards the evening of the same day would be a favourable time to put the scheme in execution. He then returned speedily to the tavern, where he found his friend the major, with his cousin, awaiting him. Dinner had been ordered; but they would not dine without O'Sullivan, whom the major introduced to his cousin, and they spent the evening very happily together. They were delighted with him. He told them many wonderful adventures, and was so merry and good humoured withal, they were sorry when O'Sullivan proposed they should proceed to business.

"'Come with me,' said he to the cousin; 'and do you, major, stay here: order a good supper to be prepared, and we shall be back in due time to partake of it.'

"On reaching a by-street, he entered an ill-looking hut, very dark and extremely dirty. They were met at the door by a great stout fellow, who asked them roughly what they wanted; but, on a sign from the robber, he immediately lowered his voice, and said, 'I ax your honour's pardon: I did not know you at first. Here are the *duds** all ready. Go, your honour, into that room on the left; there they are, and there's no one to interfere with you.'

* A slang term for old clothes.

"When they had entered, 'Come,' said O'Sullivan, picking up an old Jewish garment from the floor, 'put on this over your other clothes; and these,' said he, taking a pair of pistols from a shelf, 'you must stick in your belt underneath, to use in case of necessity; though I don't imagine we shall have to perform any very desperate work.'

"When the young officer was completely disguised, his beard fitted on, and all ready, the robber said, 'Follow me; and again let me remind you my name is Moses, and yours Nathan: my way is prepared; in less than two hours you shall be in full possession of the object of your wishes.'

"Noble, generous man!' said the young officer, 'God send you may succeed! but, if any thing should occur to frustrate your design, you may count upon me as upon a brother: here's my hand.'

"'Ha!' said the robber, 'what a pleasure it is to deal with the brave: if I had only two such comrades as you and your cousin, I would soon command the kingdom.'

"Away they started for the house of the old uncle. On arriving there, O'Sullivan told his companion he should leave him in the antichamber, cautioning him not to converse with the servants; and if they put any questions to him, to pretend not to understand them. He then knocked at the door, and asked, in the

Jewish accent, if the master was at home? Being answered in the affirmative, he desired the servant to tell him that the Jew, Moses, wished to speak with him on business of importance. The old gentleman happened to be alone in his library, and, thinking it was some good transaction in stocks or money-lending which he had to propose, ordered the servant to admit him. When the disguised robber got into the entry, near the library, he turned round, and said aloud to the young officer,—

" ' Nathan, you must stop here, until I speak with the old gentleman first, and hear what he says about the matter: if he wants to see you, I 'll call you; so keep near the door.'

" On entering the library, he found the uncle seated in a large armed chair. He immediately inquired his business. O'Sullivan replied, that it was of a private nature; and the old man dismissed the servant, telling him he need not return until he heard the bell ring. The bell-rope hung near to the table where he sat, but too far for him to reach without rising from his chair. O'Sullivan also remarked that the key of the library door was in the lock on the inside. The moment the servant quitted the room, O'Sullivan drew the agreement from his pocket, and, handing it to the old man, requested him to read it. Whilst he was looking over the paper, the other went hastily to the door, locked it, and returned to the table.

" ' Ah ! why is this ? why have you locked the door ?' said the old fellow, somewhat alarmed, for he was a great coward.

" ' Oh !' replied O'Sullivan, ' only to prevent any one from coming in ; as the document I have delivered to you is of great consequence, and I don't wish you to be interrupted.' He trembled, but continued reading : at length he threw down the paper in a passion, saying, ' Tell me, fellow, who penned this ; and who has had the audacity to send it here, when every one knows I have so positively refused consent to my niece's marriage?'

" O'Sullivan now threw open his Jewish cloak, and, drawing a pistol from his belt, said, ' Attempt not to move, or cry out : I am O'Sullivan, the robber !'

" At this awful announcement, the poor old gentleman, more dead than alive, trembled all over ; and, instead of raising an alarm, seemed totally deprived of utterance, and grew pale as a ghost.

" ' Come, sir,' said O'Sullivan, ' don't be alarmed : comply exactly with my demands, and no harm will come to you ; but, if you refuse, death shall be your portion ! All my plans are well laid. Your house is surrounded by people devoted to my service : there is no escape for you or your servants ; no resource but in compliance.'

" By this time the old gentleman began to recover a little ; and said, ' Oh ! spare my life,

and I will do whatever you ask. What is it you want? How much will satisfy you?'

"'I want none of your money!' said O'Sullivan. 'Read over the paper again, and make no more objections or wry faces; for, sign it you must, and before witnesses, too, or you shall never put your name to another paper in this world. You have been cruel and unjust to your niece and her lover. He is a brave and an honourable man: so, no more delay, but sign and seal.'

"'I am ready to comply,' said the old man, trembling; 'but who will witness my signature?'

"'Have you any one in the house,' asked O'Sullivan, 'who can write?'

"'Yes,' said he, 'one of my agents, who arrived to-day from the country.'

"'Enough,' answered the robber; 'I have a friend here, also, who will do for the second witness. Let him be first called.'

"He then opened the door, and beckoned in the disguised captain. 'Now,' said he, 'let us proceed to business.'

"The old man, seeing it was impossible to oppose O'Sullivan, whose very name had frightened him almost to death, took the pen and did as he was required. The young officer witnessed it, and wrote his proper name.

"'Mr. O'Sullivan,' said the uncle, 'is this man a Jew?'

"'A Jew like myself,' replied he; 'who, on most other occasions, signs his name with powder

and ball. Now, sir, ring the bell, and tell your servant to call in the agent: but be cautious not to show, either by word or sign, or any particular movement whatever, that you are doing this against your will; but, on the contrary, appear as if nothing extraordinary had happened: and also order him to bring a bottle of wine and some tumblers, for we must drink your health when all is done.'

"The old gentleman rung the bell; O'Sullivan opened the door; the servant entered, received his commands, and then disappeared. In a few minutes, he returned with the wine and the agent. All was performed exactly as O'Sullivan directed; the agent and the servant were again dismissed, and the door locked.

"'Now, sir,' said the robber, 'do you acknowledge this writing to be legal?'

"'I do,' replied the old man.

"'Do you confess to have signed it with your own free will and consent? For I should be sorry that a gentleman of your fortune and reputation should be forced to do an act of justice.'

"'Mr. O'Sullivan,' replied he, 'you are a very extraordinary man, to undertake such a dangerous task for nothing. I consent to what you say; and confess, that what I have just written is by my own voluntary act and deed.'

"'Bravo, sir!' said the robber; 'but you have a wrong idea of me. I take pleasure in seeing

justice properly executed, and good peopl
dered happy; and am always ready to r
life for the brave and the honourable. N
oblige me by finishing this business ge
Write a handsome letter to your niece, enc
her this document, and invite her to ce
her wedding in your house.'

"The old gentleman, after a moment
tation, took pen, ink, and paper, and wr
letter to gratify O'Sullivan: the docume
then folded up, and addressed to his niece.

"'I must be the bearer of this letter
said O'Sullivan; 'but (filling up two tumbl
wine) we must first drink your health, a
you live many years to see those young
happy and contented, by your consent t
union. I now take my leave.'

"'No, no,' said the old gentleman, 'n
we have finished the bottle. You frighte
at first, but now I feel happy that you hav
me sensible of the injustice I was about t
mit; and which arose, in a great measure,
the intrigues of the nobleman who wis
marry my niece, and who persuaded me th
was a profligate, bad man. I thank you
present feelings; and, although you profes
self an outlaw, I claim your friendship.
you are in want of it, call upon me with
serve: and remember that I shall expect
you at the wedding ball.'

"O'Sullivan thanked him for his good opinion, and ready acquiescence in all his demands; and then, with his friend, bade him adieu. They hastened back to the tavern, where the major impatiently awaited their arrival. When he saw the paper signed by the old gentleman, and the letter to the niece, he embraced his benefactor in ecstasy, exclaiming, —

"'Oh! this is too much happiness! How shall I ever repay the obligations I owe you?'

"'Enough,' said O'Sullivan; 'I'll quickly put you in a way of recompensing me. I have lately discovered here, in Dublin, three poor widows, with large families, whose husbands died of the wounds they received in the service of their country. They are in great distress. I'll give you their names; and, as I understand your wife will have a very large fortune, I request that, on your wedding-day, you will send to each of them two hundred pounds: in so doing, you will confer on me a lasting obligation.'

"It is scarcely necessary to state, that the major promised the most literal fulfilment of his request.

"The next day, they paid a visit to the old uncle, who received them in the most friendly manner, and told them they must make immediate arrangements for the wedding, which was to be consummated at his dwelling. An affectionate couple, who had waited so long, were of

course not bashful in hastening it; and, in about fifteen days after, they were married. On the following evening the old uncle gave a magnificent ball, at which O'Sullivan, who had kept himself regularly informed of their proceedings, determined to make his appearance. He attired himself in his best suit, arrived at the old gentleman's dwelling in a carriage and four, and, when he made his appearance in the ball-room, he was the admiration of the whole assembly. The old gentleman received him politely, and thought he was a guest of the major's; whilst the major, equally deceived, considered him to be invited by the old gentleman. In this way he passed the greater part of the evening, playing at cards, chatting with the ladies, and making himself agreeable to every one. The bride was particularly pleased with the strange guest, and anxious to know his name. She was hastening towards her uncle to inquire of him, when O'Sullivan accosted her.

"'Madam,' said he, with a respectful air, 'having enjoyed the satisfaction of seeing you united to the man of your heart, and feeling persuaded you will make each other happy, I thank God, who has enabled me to assist at this splendid ball in honour of your nuptials; and, wishing you many years of bliss, I beg to take my leave. Though my name may not be breathed in such an assembly, I may be allowed to add, that I am

he who delivered you a letter on such a day from your uncle. God bless you!' And off he went before the lady had time to recover from her surprise.

"She hurried out of the room to overtake him, but it was too late: he had disappeared.



"Now, your honours,"
had concluded this story,
O'Sullivan." Are there
here in these our times?"
"No landlord," said
have never heard or read
highwayman; and must
was an extraordinary man,
abused for his crimes and
philanthropy. Still, I shou
as a character worthy of
good actions you have reco
performed without his being
or an outlaw. We may ad
virtues, but, certainly, we m
mode of life, and his violati
and principles which form th

how ill calculated to hold the human mind in subjection, we cannot but admire the genius that frets under such restraints, and soars above them."

The host smiled, and said, "Men in our times, your honour, who follow such examples, soar to the gallows, and there is an end to their flight."

"That is," replied the ingenious sophist, "because they have been deficient in talent; or, like your hero, they would know how to make the laws, and those who execute them, subservient to their will."

As the landlord left the room, Cahlinan observed, "That's a shrewd fellow! It is yet too early to retire; let us call him back and have another story, or at least some more conversation."

"With all my heart," said I, *ringing* the bell.

The landlord re-appeared; when Cahlinan addressed him with, "My good host, we are not tired of your company, if ours has not fatigued you."

"Long life to your honours," he replied, "I am never tired of *good company*; and, besides, your honour talks like a book."

"Come," said Cahlinan, "fill yourself some more punch; and see if you can give us one more little history about love and murder, or any thing else you please, just to keep us awake until bed-time."

"By my soul, your honour!" replied he, "but you must allow me a minute or two to recollect myself; for you have taken me all of a heap, as the devil found sixpence-worth of bad half-pence."

Then, after remaining silent a while, he suddenly burst forth with the exclamation of "By the smiles of Moll Kelly, but I have it!—a story, as auld as the north star, about a lady who lived in a castle that was built the day after God made the moon and the seven planets. Long life to the family of the Longfields! One of them owned a castle in the county of Cork, and a black looking, dismal place it was, your honours; where lived owls, rooks, and bats; and about the old walls, and over the bowers, the ivy grew so thick, that, by Jasus! you could not see a stone of them. The lord of this castle married a descendant of the O'Connels, the brave and ancient stock of our ould Ireland kings; and though her soft heart melted like butter before the fire of love, by my soul! but it was as hard as oak when her spirit was roused. In those auld times, your honours, rich ladies were always surrounded by a great many female servants; but Lady Longfield was of a different way of thinking, and only kept a couple of waiting women."

I here interrupted him, to ask why he did not moisten his throat with a tumbler of punch

before he went on with his story? He cast his eye slyly into the jug, saying, —

"By my soul, your honour, but it's like what the priest of the parish said of Tim Calander's sconce, "there's nothing in it."

"Oh, oh! I understand you," said I; "the jug is empty. Go and replenish it, my honest fellow." In a short time the jug of punch was prepared, and he brought it in with a smiling face. "Here it is, your honours," said he, "and I hope you'll find it to your tastes." Cahlinan filled a tumbler, tasted, and praised it, saying, "Success to you landlord." I followed his example, taking care to help him at the same time. The poor fellow seemed highly delighted with our attention, and thanked us with a low bow, saying, —

"By my soul! and I have not seen for many a long day two kinder-hearted gentlemen. May you never know sorrow but by hearsay; and may the blessings of other men's children rejoice your noble hearts!"

"A strange wish," said Cahlinan: "why not say our own?"

"The devil relieve the child that wouldn't bless his own father, your honour," replied the host; "but, when other men's children give you their blessings, you may be sure that you deserve them."

"Well explained," said Cahlinan: "and now continue your story."

"Well, then, as I was saying, the Lady Longfield never kept more than two servants about her at a time; but there was a bell in her chamber, that led into the servants' room, by which she could summon them at her pleasure. Once, her lord, being called to Dublin for ten or twelve days, endeavoured to persuade her to let a female attendant sleep in the room during his absence. 'I don't like your lonely habits,' he said; 'you may fall sick in the night, or some other accident may happen whhen no one is near to assist you.'

"'My love,' replied the lady, 'seek not to make a coward of me. I who have been brought up to brave every thing, — surely you would not desire to see me full of womanish fear, and frightened at my own shadow! Let me have my own way: I prefer reading and working to the stupid nonsense and scandal of prating female servants, who frequently debauch the ears of the ladies of our times with improper conversation and stories of gallantries.'

"'I congratulate myself,' said the husband, 'on having a wife superior to all those idle and criminal amusements which your sex are too apt to delight in, and shall with confidence leave you to your own way of conducting yourself.'

"But I must tell your honours that the castle was as old-fashioned on the inside as it was without; being ornamented, and wainscotted

with carved oak, and hung with tapestry. The walls of the chamber where the Lady Longfield slept represented the chase of a stag; and directly opposite to her door was the figure of a man, as large as life, in a hunting dress, which always attracted her notice on entering the room: against the middle of the wall, on the right hand, stood the bedstead, and opposite to the foot of it was an old-fashioned toilet of carved wood, richly gilt. The bedstead was covered with damask curtains, drawn up in festoons on either side, and garnished with deep gold fringe. On the inner side of this apartment, near the bed, was a large double closet, or dresssing room, where the lady kept her casket, with all her precious jewels, pearls, and gold ornaments.

"It was about the month of October: the evening was calm and serene, and the Lady Longfield had been walking some time in her favourite flower garden, which adjoined one of the entrances to the castle. When it grew dusk, instead of going round the garden again, to get to the great hall door, she passed through a wicket gate which led by a back way to the anti-chamber, where her servants always sat. Whilst slowly ascending the stairs, she imagined she observed upon the wall the shadow of a man, which apppeared to precede her with a rapid step. On reaching the anti-chamber, the door of which stood open, she anxiously enquired

of her attendants whether any stranger had visited the castle since Lord Longfield's departure? They all answered in the negative, adding that the great gates had been closed, and the guard stationed there, since sunset. The lady was startled. The shadow made a strong impression upon her mind, for she had distinctly seen the figure upon the whitened wall: it flitted before her like a ghost!

"Being a woman of strong mind and masculine resolution, she at length persuaded herself it was ridiculous to think more of a circumstance that, after all, might be the effect of imagination. Having supped, she summoned her chamber-maid to light her to her apartment: proceeding up the great stairs, they entered the bed-room together; and, as the flame of the candle fell upon the tapestry opposite the door, the Lady Longfield distinctly saw the eyes of the man in the hunting dress move; or, rather, she perceived that holes had been cut in the tapestry, and that a pair of living eyes peered through them with a keen and penetrating glance. The recollection of the shadow she had seen on the wall now darted across her mind, and assured her that this must have been the person who, taking advantage of the dusk of the evening, had entered the castle to rob and, perhaps, murder her! What was to be done? Always cool and collected, it immediately occurred to her, that, situated as they were, to discover the smallest symptoms

of fear or trepidation would be most injudicious, and, perhaps, lead to the destruction of both herself and her attendant. Appearing, therefore, not to have noticed this extraordinary and mysterious circumstance, she proceeded to undress herself, conceiving, at the same time, a plan to ensnare the robber, or whoever it was who had thus concealed himself. The chambermaid had performed her usual duties; she wished her mistress good night, and was about to retire, when it occurred to the Lady Longfield to desire her, in a whisper, to call up the men servants: but, glancing her eye towards the figure, and seeing that she was closely watched, she was afraid even to follow her to the door.

"When the chambermaid was gone, she said aloud, 'I must lock the door, and then I will look out my diamonds for to-morrow's wear.' As she went towards the door, she thought of opening it suddenly, and making her escape; but, hearing the person behind the tapestry move, and supposing he was preparing to follow her, she boldly turned the key, exclaiming, 'Since I forgot to tell my woman to do it, I must clean them myself.' Taking the candle, she entered the small dressing room, and left the door wide open. It was so situated that the robber could not see her from behind the tapestry; but, as she opened the door, she heard him change his position, and glide round the room, so as to be able to discover what she was doing. Still,

however, she betrayed no symptoms of alarm; but opened the casket, took out her diamond necklace, cross, and ear rings, as well as some bracelets, and ornaments for the head, which were of great value: after brushing and cleaning them, she put them on, examined herself in the glass, smiled, and seemed pleased with her appearance. When this was all done, she spread them out upon the table; then, rubbing her eyes and gaping, she said aloud, 'My eyes are heavy; it is time to sleep.' Having repeated her prayers, she undressed herself and went to bed; lying quite still, and breathing hard, as if fast asleep.

"Your honours must recollect that she left the dressing room door open, and the diamonds all spread out upon the table. Half an hour had passed away; and, hearing nothing move, she began to think her eyes and ears must have deceived her. However, this state of suspense was not of much longer duration. Suddenly she heard the sound of a light footstep slowly creeping towards the bed: it stopped, and again all was silent. As she lay in a state of indescribable alarm, the apartment all at once became illuminated by a strong light; and she saw a man standing in the centre of the room with a lantern in his hand! The bright side being turned towards himself, it exposed his face, and, at the same time, the naked blade of a very large knife with which he was armed. The Lady

Longfield closed her eyes, and, putting up an inward prayer to heaven, feigned to be in a profound sleep. When the robber came to the bed-side, he turned the lantern so as to shine upon her face; and, raising the knife, he drew the back of it gently across her throat. She did not move or even shudder! He repeated the trial. Although, as she afterwards confessed, she then felt all the horrors of death, yet had she so much command of herself as to suppress her feelings, and not even to shrink or move a muscle, during this terrific visitation. The ruffian now retired a few steps, but, as if not altogether satisfied, he returned; and, passing the back of the knife, for the third time, across her throat, said, in a low voice, 'No, there's no fear of her hearing me; she sleeps sound: I 'll not murder her.'

"'If the robber had returned to the bed at that instant,' said the lady, 'he would have discovered that I was awake; for the declaration of his intention to spare my life made my heart audibly palpitate with joy.'

"The man then went round the bedstead into the dressing room, and, having spread a cloth on the table, he began to collect all the valuables deposited there. Whilst thus engaged she glided softly from her bed, sprung across the floor, closed the dressing room door, and double-locked it, before he had time to make the smallest effort to prevent her.

She then rung the bell violently, unlocked her door, and rushed into the corridor; and, in a few seconds, the servants came to her assistance. Lights were brought, and all the men, to the number of ten or twelve, armed with muskets, pistols, and clubs, entered the chamber, and seized the robber, who, of course, did not attempt to make any resistance.

"And now, your honours," said the landlord, "what do you think of the courage of Lady Longfield? By my soul! and I fancy there's many a man who would have trembled with a robber's knife at his throat. The back of a cold blade, passing over one's windpipe, is a ticklish sort of a thing, your honours: I would sooner have a dozen glasses of warm punch pass inside of my gullet than have the outside skin offended with cold steel."

"Your lady, good host," said Cahlinan, laughing, "was a heroine of the first water; a woman of mind, and firmness of soul, such as is rarely found. Thank you for the interesting story: and now allow me to replenish your glass, that you may wash the inside of your gullet, as you call it."

"Yes," said I, "but we must accompany him;" and, filling our tumblers at the same time, I said, "Here's to the glorious memory of the courageous Lady Longfield."

The landlord was much pleased, and thanked us with a low bow; and then bade us good night.

When he presented his bill, as we were about to depart, we were struck with its moderation, and mentioned it to him.

"By my soul! your honours," said he, "but I would sooner entertain you for nothing at all at all, than some men for their money."

We thanked him for his good-will, and pursued our journey towards the famous race-course or curragh of Kildare, where we stopped to examine the turf, said to be among the smoothest and finest in the world. From thence we continued our route direct for Kilkenny, celebrated in the natural history of Ireland for its coals; and where the fire is said to burn without smoke, and the little pigs run about the spacious marble-paved streets, ready roasted, with a knife and fork sticking in their backs, and squeaking out, "Come, eat me!" At least, this was the character given of the town by our last facetious landlord, who, in point of humour and nationality, ceded to none of the innkeepers we had met on our journey. We arrived in the evening: it was cool, and the landlord had ordered a coal fire to be lighted, which certainly burnt with great brilliancy. This house had been particularly recommended by our story-telling landlord; and no sooner had we arrived than Cahlinan disappeared, as he said, "to reconnoitre the family." In the course of a few minutes, he returned in ecstasy.

"By heavens!" said he, "I have fallen upon

my legs! Our landlord was right. A devilish handsome woman is the mistress of the house; and the daughter and niece are both smiling, rosy-faced girls: so I am anchored for some days, at least; and probably I may moor my ship here for a month."

"Allow me to clap a stopper upon your nautical simile," said I, "by reminding you of your promise to accompany me on a visit to my friend St. George, whose estate lies on the borders of this county."

"By all that's lovely!" cried Cahlinan, "I would not quit this house for millions! Your friend will not be disappointed, since I am not acquainted with him. Go, and remain as long as you like; for my part, I shall be perfectly contented where I am." Knowing it was useless to attempt to persuade him, when a tavern keeper's niece and daughter were in the question, I left him to amuse himself after his own fashion; and, early the next morning, I set off on my intended visit.

I arrived about an hour or two before dinner. My friend was delighted to see me, and introduced me to two or three of his neighbours, observing, they must endeavour not to let me want for amusement during the time I was with them.

The following morning, I was mounted on a beautiful bay hunter belonging to St. George, and accompanied him to meet the hounds. After trying several coverts, a fox was found, which

broke gallantly away in the face of the field. The chase was a very severe one: it lasted upwards of three hours, during which I made some very hazardous leaps. When the hounds ran into their game, owing to the speed of my horse, I was near taking the *brush*, and, being a stranger, received, in consequence, the congratulations of the most experienced huntsmen. The sport being ended, we all proceeded to dine at Mr. Neville's, a gentleman of very fine manners, strong judgment, and an improved mind; but I was most pleased with the eloquent manner in which he explained the causes of the misery and wretchedness that oppress the population of Ireland. His arguments were founded on striking facts, and carried conviction upon the face of them. Indeed, his experience as a proprietor living on his own estate, and his travels through various parts of the country, furnished him with the means of exposing, in strong colours, the false and pernicious policy adopted by the government of Great Britain.

The following day, we dined in a large party at an old nobleman's, the uncle of my friend, who entertained us in a most magnificent style. I was much struck with the appearance of the ancient family mansion, which, although of a black and frowning aspect, was a fine specimen of pure Gothic architecture. The floor and wainscot of the principal apartments were formed of Irish oak, dark and discoloured with age; and, being

rubbed and polished with wax, they reflected every object like a mirror, and it required some caution to walk over the boards without slipping. In this ancient castle, the native hospitality reigned in all its pristine splendour; and I partook of it several times.

The counties of Tipperary and Kilkenny joining each other not far from my friend's residence, we made excursions to various gentlemen's seats in both of them; and my time passed so gaily, that ten days glided by almost imperceptibly. It was then time to return to Cahlinan; though I had some difficulty in escaping from my hospitable entertainers.

I found him, as usual, much enamoured of his new acquaintances, whom he praised extravagantly for their beauty and good sense. The family were equally pleased with him: nor was this to be wondered at; for, besides being an amiable companion, he was generous to a fault, and treated them with the best the tavern could afford.

Notwithstanding his wish to remain, I was determined to proceed with all haste to the capital, and, therefore, proposed that he should follow me; but he seemed not to relish the idea of travelling alone, and reluctantly yielded to my solicitations. I was the more anxious because I knew I should be unavoidably detained some days in Dublin; and, having been so long absent from my guardian, I felt the strongest desire to join him as speedily as possible.

Accordingly, the following morning we bade adieu to the enchanted tavern; where, to judge from his enthusiastic encomiums on its fair occupants, Cahlinan seemed to have left his heart. The ladies, on their part, seemed extremely sorry to part with him; whilst the host declared he was the most generous and noble-hearted gentleman he ever had the honour of entertaining.

The journey from Kilkenny to Dublin was not altogether devoid of incident, though our progress was very slow, both horses and equipage being worse than on any previous portion of the road. Some of them afforded ample subject for the pencil of a caricaturist. I remember, on one occasion, having started very early after a sleepless night, we both became drowsy and fell fast asleep, while the chaise went jogging on at a slow rate. Our sleep, I imagine, lasted more than an hour, and then I was suddenly roused by a loud noise; and, on looking through the glass, I saw several large carts, &c. passing by, while our chaise was standing before the door of a dram-shop. No driver was to be seen; and, concluding very naturally that he had gone in to regale himself, I called aloud for him. This woke Cahlinan, who, when he saw where we were, fell into a violent passion.

"What an impudent rascal!" said he, "to plant us in the road and go drink at a dram-shop!" After exerting our lungs to their utmost, at length the fellow came running up to the chaise

window with his hat in his hand, and begged to be after knowing what their honours would please to have?

"You scoundrel!" said Cahlinan, with a terrible look, "how dare you quit your horses, and leave us in the road, while you are getting drunk?"

"Och!" replied the driver, "I beg your honours a thousand millions of pardons; but, the morning was so cold and damp, I was obliged to swallow a noggin of whisky, to keep the fog off my stomach. By Jasus! your honours, I had a shivering all over me like a man with the ague."

"How dare you," continued Cahlinan, "stop at a dram-shop without asking our permission? I'll have you punished when we arrive at the post-house."

"Now, your honour," said the driver, in a beseeching tone, "only be after listening to reason. How could I ask permission of your honours, when you were both as fast asleep as the babes in the wood? By Jasus! and I would not have broke your sweet slumbers for all the world. Then, your honours, see what a cold foggy morning it is, for a poor devil that went to bed supperless, and ate nothing at all at all the whole night. God be with ould mother Morgan! Until she gave me a drop of the *cratur*, and a cold potatoe, I felt such a wind in my inside, I thought it would have blown my heart out. I'd scorn to keep your honours,— such good-natured, kind-

hearted gentlemen,—a minute too long upon the road; and you shall see how I 'll make my ponies trot off the distance in dacent style to the station. Then I 'm sure you 'll be after tipping me a nate silver sixpence."

Before this speech was brought to a conclusion, Cahlinan had burst into a hearty laugh; on perceiving which, the driver sprang into his seat, cracked his whip, and whistled sharply to his horses, whom he apostrophised in the following style: —

"Come, cheer up, my little nags! Put out your strength, you dirty spalpeens! don't you see their honours are in a hurry? and you widdle waddle like old mother Mullan's ducks. I 'll sweat down your hide-bound carcases, or I 'll know what you 're made of!"

This only increased Cahlinan's mirth and good humour. The horses were small and miserable, yet the fellow contrived to make them go on at a round pace, and in a short time we reached the station. The first thing Cahlinan did, after our arrival, was to give the driver a piece of silver; and I followed his example. The poor fellow pulled off his hat, and said, he hoped the best of good luck would attend us; adding, "God be with the mothers that bore ye, for their milk must have been rich and generous!"

"There 's an eloquent blessing for you!" said Cahlinan: "I could find in my heart to give the fellow another half crown for speaking so

well of my mother, who, peace be to her soul! was a poor, thin, lank, native of South America. He must have intended the compliment for the father who begot me. It was only a little mistake in the sex: for he was an Ireland man, of fine complexion, stout, and well made."

We continued our journey as rapidly as lean horses, broken-down carriages, rotten rope-harness, and their attendant mishaps, would permit; but, in spite of all these disagreements, we were kept in good temper by the genuine humour of the postillions. We were amused to hear them exclaim, when the poor animals could hardly be made to raise a trot, "Och! that ever I was born to drive such bastes of burthen, that hav'n't ate oats for a month of Sundays. May the devil run a hunting with the master and the nags together!"

As we ascended a steep hill, a part of the harness suddenly gave way, and the poor animal to which it belonged was almost thrown upon his knees. Nothing daunted by this untoward accident, the postillion exclaimed, with affected indignation, "There, your honours, who's to blame now? By Jasus! here 's not two ends of a rope that hang together; and the leather thongs are like the skin of a rotten apple."

"Well," said I, "and what is to be done?"

"God be with your honours!" replied the fellow: "only be after taking half an hour's patience, and I 'll be off again in a minute."

"But what is the matter?" asked Cahlinan. "Tell us what has happened?"

"Nothing at all at all, your honour! No very big misfortune: only the traces of the off horse have snapped short off, and one of the spokes has fallen out of the hind wheel. I'll soon put all to rights again!"

"Zounds!" cried Cahlinan, in a fright, "we shall have our necks broke! If one spoke has fallen out, the rest will soon follow."

"Make yourself asy, your honour," said the driver; "I'll cobble them all up in less than no time. By Jasus! but I'll make them all as tight, and as fast, with these old rotten ropes, as if they were new. I wish my poor brother James's neck was in as little danger as your honour's."

"Why?" said I, "what has happened to your brother?"

"Och! nothing, your honour; only he had an awkward way of skinning other men's sheep: and they talk of making his neck an inch or two longer, to keep him quiet."

"Pray," said Cahlinan, "don't talk with him now about his brother. Don't you hear him say that the ropes are all old and rotten? How the devil, then, will he keep this tottering machine together?"

"Be asy, your honour," replied the driver; "that's only a way we have of spaking. To be sure, and the ropes are a little ould and the

worse for wear, but I 'll pick out the sound ends, and tie them as fast as rock thunder."

In less than a quarter of an hour all was mended: the driver took his seat again, whistling, and speaking to his "high-boned nags," as he called them.

"Look, your honour," said he, turning himself round in the saddle, and peeping in at the chaise window with an air of ludicrous self-satisfaction, "see how nately they handle their feet: by Jasus! you might take them for dancing-masters."

Altogether, we certainly cut a very laughable figure. But the appearance of the driver was unique; and, like the equipage he drove, certainly bore little resemblance to those neat and well-appointed brethren of the whip who conduct travellers from stage to stage on the roads of merry England. He wore a loose, blue surtout, full of holes and patches, the sound-made parts being threadbare; and it seemed to have been originally made for a person of at least twice his bulk. An old rusty wig covered his head, over which a ragged crownless hat, with a broken pipe stuck in the band, was fixed knowingly on one side. His breeches, unlike those of Hudibras, were not of "ragged woollen," but of leather, well lackered with grease; and his black yarn stockings, unconscious of garters, hung in folds upon his legs; whilst his toes peeped forth from a pair of worn-out brogues, the upper leathers and soles of which seemed destined soon to part company. In a

word, judging from his exterior, he seemed the personification of misery and wretchedness: yet he was a merry devil, full of life and humour; and possessed such a sly look, and answered so readily and wittily to every question, that we were constantly in a roar of laughter. The fellow seemed perfectly to understand the impression his wit and appearance had produced upon us, and he omitted no opportunity of exciting our mirth. Indeed, I was not sorry when we separated; for he kept me laughing so incessantly, that my sides ached. However, it was impossible not to compassionate his miserable plight; and I felt much gratification in following the example of Cahlinan, who made him a very liberal present. It was then the native Irish character exhibited itself. Astonished by this unexpected good fortune, his eyes overflowed with tears; and, in the fullness of his gratitude, he prayed to God to pour down his choicest blessings on our heads. My companion clapped him on the shoulder, saying,—

"Thank you, my honest fellow, for your good wishes; and may your genuine wit and humour always serve you as it has done to-day."

After remaining a week in the Irish capital, we embarked on board an English packet, and were pleased to find ourselves, in the course of a few hours, safely arrived at Holyhead, on the other side of the channel. We travelled on what is called the great north road, through several manufacturing towns, whose flourishing condition

made them objects of the deepest interest. Cahlinan, in spite of his affected indifference, paid great attention to all those objects which are worthy of attracting a man of sense and observation. He eulogised, in eloquent terms, the industry, activity, frugality, good faith, and moral excellence of the people of Great Britain; whose government and national institutions he declared were incomparable, and unequalled in any other kingdom of Europe. Every step we advanced offered some new subject for admiration.

In my turn, I also dwelt with ardour upon the solidity of the government, the national wealth and lofty public spirit by which her power was upheld. He had formerly disputed these points with me; but, now we were on the spot, he confessed his error, and cheerfully yielded certain points which he had obstinately contested whilst in America. When I reminded him of his former opposition, he said: "I confess my error. The only true method of forming a correct judgment of a government, and a nation, is to visit and observe them nearly; to contemplate the moral character of the people, and the administration of the laws when in full operation. Those who, like me, may have adopted notions from hearsay or prejudiced travellers, will also, like me, be obliged to retract their opinions."

After this confession, which was a proof of Cahlinan's good sense and judgment, I praised his candour, and cautiously forbore to remind

him of those democratic notions which I was happy to see vanish before the influence of sounder principles. But his reformation was not permanent; it lasted only whilst he was conversing with you: for he was a man of unsettled principles, who, although not inclined to do evil, yet hated all moral and political restraint, which he pretended was an infringement of his natural rights. But my intercourse with this eccentric and, in some respects, amiable character was shortly to have an end. He had been in London when a boy, and, imagining that he recollected all the principal streets, hotels, &c., recommended me to put up at the Guildhall coffee-house, as a place of fashionable resort; and to this, being an entire novice, I assented. When we arrived, I was vexed to find we were in the crowded, commercial part of the city; and the house was so full of guests that there were but two small rooms, on the third story, vacant; to which we mounted by a narrow, dirty, back stair-case. Cahlinan, however, said he had a letter of introduction to the landlord, and seemed delighted with its very obscurity. I was therefore obliged to tell him that, though sorry to lose his society, yet, having also letters of introduction to genteel people, residing in a different quarter of the town, as well as my guardian's taste to consult, I could not consent to remain there. Here our intimacy ended: I never met him again, but heard that he had returned to America, where he died a year

or two after his marriage with the widow of an innkeeper, who had three or four children.

Thus terminated the career of a man whom nature had endowed with excellent talents, and whose acquirements were far above mediocrity; but whose habits, principles, and opinions were altogether in opposition to those of civilised society. He had acquired an unconquerable disgust for the best rules of social order and decorum; and, having in his youth read the productions of those philosophers who, in their enmity to a certain sect, attacked the sacred principles of our religion, he was in reality a free-thinker, notwithstanding the fine speeches he sometimes uttered on moral subjects: and he closed his wild, independent life where he began it, — in a tavern. "Sic transit gloria mundi!"

My meeting with my guardian was like that of an affectionate son with a father. I gave him a succinct account of my journey and adventures since we separated; which had been all faithfully recorded in my note-book.

"My object," said I, "is to sketch my own life and travels; — to praise without flattery, and blame without malice: introducing any stories or anecdotes having a moral tendency, and recording the opinions of persons in every situation of life, for the amusement and instruction of my readers."

Being unsuccessful in my endeavours to obtain a cadetship in the East India Company's service,

my guardian proposed that we should return to America, and proceed from thence to China; there being a brisk trade maintained between Philadelphia and Canton, the great commercial sea-port of the latter country. It was fortunate that we engaged our passage at an early period, as, for several days before the time fixed for her departure, every hole and corner of the ship were occupied. Several ladies took the cabin, and the steerage was as full as possible; besides a sort of double forecastle, for passengers of the lower class, near where the sailors lived: so that we were literally crowded with all sorts and descriptions of people. The vessel being what is called a packet, sailing constantly with passengers between London and Philadelphia, the captain was, of course, well prepared for their reception. He also carried merchandise on freight; and, what appeared to me extraordinary, a quantity of nitric and vitriolic acid, in demijohns and bottles packed in cases. The former were stowed in the launch, and the latter were secured upon the deck with cleats: this, I afterwards found, was the place allotted for such dangerous articles; for, if they had been put under deck, the underwriters would have refused to insure the ship.

Our cabin passengers amounted to thirty souls, men, women and children; in the steerage there were seventy or eighty; and in the double forecastle about twenty men.

We joined the vessel in the Thames, and de-

scended the river with a fine fair wind. From a wish to improve myself in practical sailing, in which I had still much to learn, it was agreed that I should do the duty of mate; of course reserving to myself all the privileges of a passenger. On the third day after our departure, the captain hastily came to me on the quarter deck, saying,—

"The wind has changed suddenly, and come right in our teeth. See how the ship begins to pitch! all the passengers are sea sick, and so is my second officer, who is a young sailor; I must therefore beg you will take the watch upon deck, whilst the chief mate sees every thing well secured below. My third officer will be in the waist: as to myself, I must be every where; for, in a passenger ship, we have many things to look after beside the duty of a seaman." I said, nothing could be more agreeable; as I was never sea sick, and loved to be actively employed. In an instant I was at my post. The wind blew violently in opposition to the ebb tide, and we were beating down the channel against a short, heavy, head sea, which made the ship so uneasy, that every land lubber on board was as sick as a dog. In less than an hour, not a passenger was to be seen upon deck; and, at dinner time, the captain, my guardian, and myself, were the only persons who came to table. This abominable weather continued three days, until we got well down the channel, and found Falmouth harbour within a few miles under our lee. As the wind still con-

tinued steady against us, with a probability of its remaining so for some days longer, and the ship laboured severely, the captain determined to run into port, and await the return of better weather and a fair wind. In two hours after this decision, it being my watch upon deck, I had the ship safely anchored in still water; where she laid land-locked, and as motionless as if she had been in the river. Nothing could exceed the joy and surprise of the passengers, particularly the ladies, when they found themselves, all of a sudden, so much at their ease; and, in an hour after the vessel was at anchor, they came forth like butterflies on a sunny day.

We remained at Falmouth three days before the wind changed, which gave the passengers an opportunity of visiting the shore, where, indeed, they spent the greater part of their time; the country round being beautiful,—and there was a good hotel to accommodate them. However, the fourth day, about ten o'clock, A. M., the *blue Peter* was hoisted at the fore-top-mast head, and a signal fired for sailing. This brought our scattered flock together, and in another hour we were again pursuing our foaming course upon the wide cerulean ocean; with a fresh and fair breeze, that made our good ship wind six to seven knots per hour off the reel, without disturbing the stomachs of her guests.

At dinner time the whole party made their appearance at the table, and they all seemed gay

and good-humoured, except a pompous old lady, with a daughter about seventeen years of age, and a young foppish acquaintance, who affected the airs of a man of fashion and fortune. His attentions were evidently disagreeable to the young lady, but the mother encouraged them; in hopes, perhaps, of exciting competitors.

The amazing appetites of the whole party really surprised me, for they partook of breakfast, dinner, tea, and supper, with undiminished keenness; while my guardian and myself excited universal surprise because we only ate at breakfast and dinner. I kept my watch regularly in turn, and slept sound when off duty. In the dog watches, I amused myself by conversing with two very pretty, well-behaved women, steerage passengers, the wives of two mechanics; who, having been particularly recommended to the captain, were allowed a place on the break of the quarter-deck. I found one of them exceedingly well informed; and she interested me the more from having a beautiful child at the breast, whose smiling features were truly angelic. The old lady, who was putting forward her daughter on all occasions, remarked to the other passengers "that she was surprised to see a young man of my rank and fashion stoop to pay attention to vulgar mechanics' wives, when there were so many genteel, well-bred ladies on board."

This was faithfully reported to me by the other female passengers; but I took no notice of it, and continued my usual habits. At length I remarked

the infant, which attracted the attention of every one, began to grow pale and thin, and seemed to languish without any apparent cause. I also frequently surprised the husband and wife weeping bitterly. The mother would press her child fondly to her bosom, whilst the tear drops rolled in streams down her cheeks. I was moved to see persons so dejected who had hitherto been among the gayest and liveliest on board; and, without farther ceremony, insisted upon knowing the cause. They were both too much affected to speak; but their female friend soon put me in possession of the source of their grief.

"Alas, sir," said she, "these poor people have nothing to live on but salt meat and biscuit. The woman's milk, in consequence, is so reduced, that her child, too young to be weaned, is half starved. Take compassion and assist them, or that poor infant will not survive another week!"

Shocked at this recital, I could not help severely reprimanding the father for his false delicacy in endangering the life of his child, sooner than explain his wants to me, who had always treated him in a very friendly manner. I immediately went to the captain, whom I knew to be a humane, charitable man, and told him what I had discovered.

"My God!" he exclaimed, "that little seraph! Why, if it was the last bit of fresh meat I had in the ship, and a thousand pounds beside, I would give all sooner than lose such a sweet, engaging

infant. 'Tis true, we have not made more than half our passage yet, and the cabin passengers may grumble; but we must manage, some how or other, to feed this poor woman with fresh food."

"Will you consent," said I, "that I should send her my portion every day?—for I can live on salt meat; indeed, I prefer it."

"By all means," he replied; "and I shall always add something; besides, as I see you never drink porter, though my passengers are allowed a bottle each per day, I'll order your allowance to be sent to her, and God grant the lovely child may soon recruit its strength." He smiled as he added, "But, remember, the ladies will talk scandal of you and the mechanic's wife."

"That will give me no uneasiness," I rejoined, "as long as my conscience is free, and you approve of my conduct. No doubt, both you and I will be attacked by the old dowager. However, let the women prate and say what they like,—they cannot offend me; but, if any of the gentlemen interfere, I shall then show my teeth."

"Well said, honest brother tar," cried the old captain; "here's my hand: you shall find me stand by you on all occasions."

This point settled, I felt strong in my position, and made arrangements to feed the poor woman every day with fresh food. My soup, &c. was sent to her from the cabin table, and almost all the passengers contributed occasionally, except the old dowager and her foppish friend. Their

dissatisfaction was evident, but they said nothing openly. The next time I saw the young woman and her husband they both burst into tears, and the latter pressed my hand to his heart. Every one was delighted to witness the mother's improving health, and the rose's bloom again upon the cheeks of her infant, except that envious old witch, who detested me from the commencement, as I learned from the other ladies, because I did not pay attention to her daughter. At length, one day, when my plate was about to be despatched, as usual, the young man told the servant, with a commanding air, to bring it to him, for that it was high time to put a stop to the practice of sending things from the cabin table to hussies in the steerage."

I immediately rose, and, after desiring the man to do as he was ordered, I told the young gentleman that, if ever he dared to intercept my plate again, I should treat him as such impertinence deserved.

"Do you mean to insult me, sir?" he exclaimed.

"I do, sir," said I; "and now tell you, without farther ceremony, that, if ever you interfere with me in any way, I'll pull your ears before the whole company."

"You shall hear from me," he replied, in considerable agitation.

I coolly observed that I was ready to hear every thing except his impertinence; and for that I should chastise him.

The captain now interposed, saying, "Gentlemen, I cannot allow quarrelling at table, or, indeed, on board my ship; nor shall I permit any gentleman to be insulted with impunity."

"Then, sir," retorted the young man, "why have you permitted me to be insulted?"

"Because," replied the captain, "you have been the aggressor. First, by attempting to stop Mr. Brabazon's servant, and next by miscalling a virtuous woman. So, sir, if you have any more to say or do, wait until you get on shore. Here, I alone am master."

All this time I stood by his chair with a look of defiance, scarcely able to resist the impulse of seizing him by the collar and putting him out of the cabin. My guardian, who observed the gathering storm, now rose, and, taking me by the arm, led me away; and, at a sign from the captain, I returned to my seat, — my enemy all the time muttering something about revenge and satisfaction.

The old dowager now took up the cudgels for her friend: she was really surprised to hear the captain take part with those who infringed the rules of politeness in the first place. "This is the third time," continued she, "that I have crossed the ocean, and I never before saw viands sent from the cabin table until dinner was over."

"Madam," replied the captain, "I need no one's advice respecting the manner of conducting myself, nor do I care who is pleased or displeased

with it, because I always act so as to endeavour to do justice to all and to offend none. This gentleman (pointing to me) had my permission to send his allowance to a poor woman in the steerage, whose health, and that of her infant, were suffering from want of fresh food. As he pays for his passage, as well as you, he has a right to give his food to whom he pleases. His conduct, therefore, has my sanction, and I shall support him against any one who attempts to interfere."

This decided speech put an end to the business for the present; but the moment the young gentleman came upon deck I went up to him, and whispered in his ear, — "Reflect seriously, my friend, on your imprudent conduct; for unless you beg my pardon at dinner to-morrow, before all the passengers, I promise you a good horsewhipping the first time I meet you on shore: and I am sure that the mechanic, who is a man of spirit, will also give you a thrashing for insulting his wife." Then, turning on my heel, I left him, to attend to the duty of the ship.

Just before supper was ready he came to me and said, as it was the opinion of several of the passengers that he was decidedly in the wrong, he intended to apologise to me at supper. This he performed, adding, that he hoped the harmony which had previously existed would be now perfectly restored.

CHAPTER VII.

For many days after this incident we had extremely fine weather, with light winds; and, although we went on slowly, every one seemed gay and contented. I mentioned before that there were several demijohns of vitriolic acid in the launch, where our sheep, with some bundles of hay, were also kept. One morning, about daylight, the man who attended the live stock accidentally broke one of these vessels, the contents of which, communicating to the hay, immediately set it on fire. The unfortunate fellow had only time to throw out the sheep and crawl away himself, when another demijohn burst, and instantly the whole boat, with its contents, was wrapped in flame! Fortunately, the wind being light, the mainsail flapped against the mast, and did not catch fire. It was my watch below; but, I know not why, I could not sleep, and, putting on my trousers, I reached the deck just as the flame burst forth. Running forward with the first officer and a sailor, who also came to assist, we put our shoulders to the cutter, which was turned over on the launch, and hove her aside, so as to leave free room for exertion. I then jumped into the launch and called aloud for water, which the

sailors instantly handed to me in buckets. The contents of the first fell upon the hay, and seemed to produce some effect; but the second made the flame burst forth again in huge volumes, intermingled with smoke, which encompassed me, burnt my shirt from my shoulders, and almost smothered me.

I scrambled with difficulty over the side of the launch, and fell upon the deck. My agony was so great that, jumping up, I should have rushed over the waist into the sea, had not the sailors caught me in their arms. By this time the voice of the captain was heard ordering the helm down, to bring the ship to the wind. The main-sheet being hauled up, the other sails were prevented from catching fire; for the wind had increased, and the flame that now burst forth again, by luffing the vessel in the wind, made a curve over the side of the launch, instead of rising perpendicularly, as it would have done but for the presence of mind displayed by the captain.

As soon as I was a little recovered, I went to work again, throwing the cases containing the nitric acid into the sea, and then, jumping on the stern of the launch, threw water into her as fast as the sailors could hand it up; the first officer vigorously seconding me at the head of the boat. After about an hour's hard labour we got the fire completely extinguished: but it had burnt through the bottom of the launch and the coamings of the hatches; and, if the rest of the dangerous liquid

had taken fire, it would have gone through the deck. The coolness and intrepidity of our brave old captain saved us.

It would be difficult to paint the horrors of the scene. Men, women, and children, in their shirts and shifts, ran wildly about the decks; others cried bitterly, and many fell on their knees, implacing the protection of Heaven. Amidst these lamentations, through the hoarse speaking trumpet were heard the thundering commands of our noble captain, which were obeyed with coolness and rapidity, to the great astonishment of most of the landsmen, who were struck motionless with terror at the dreadful fate that seemed to await them. Certainly, the prospect of being burnt or obliged to plunge into the ocean (for, when the launch was destroyed, there was no hope of being saved,) must have been a rather unpleasant reflection to those who had time to think about it: but we who were engaged quenching the flames only thought of our duty and obeying the captain's orders. Several of the ladies fainted, and particularly the old dowager and her daughter, who were dragged upon deck half dead with fright. The mechanics' wives clasped their children to their breasts, and sent their husbands to assist us; they were, indeed, amongst the foremost of the very few passengers who appeared to have their senses about them. As the first mate and myself went aft to report to the captain that the fire was completely extinguished, he rushed for-

ward to meet us, shaking us by the hands, and thanking us aloud for our steady conduct and perseverance in the hour of danger. The ladies screamed as we passed them; for we were frightful figures, our hair being singed, and our shirts burnt from our backs, exposing the red blotches and blisters with which our shoulders were covered.

On returning to the crew, with the captain's thanks and a dram for each, they gave three thundering cheers that made the good ship tremble to her lower futtocks. Indeed, nothing could exceed the courage and activity of the sailors from the commencment: but, cool and intrepid amidst dangers, they never think of perishing until the very last moment, or ever give up whilst a timber of the ship holds together. The orders of their officers they obey with alacrity and good will, and the more so when they see them courageous and undaunted. Few men possess so much real valour and firmness, and such a perfect resignation to the dispensations of heaven. "The will of God be done," say they: and "when our time comes we must go." Generous, brave, candid, and hating duplicity, the sailor is open and honest in his dealings: though he sometimes runs in debt to his landlord, it is not done intentionally to deceive him, but from a miscalculation of his resources, or rather from no calculation at all. It must be acknowledged they are an unthinking class of men, — I mean as regards wealth,—and seldom make any provision for sickness or old age. Conceiving themselves exposed

to the risk of perishing at every instant, they say, "we will live while we may," and take no note of the morrow, or any thing else that can disturb the enjoyment of the present. Perhaps, after all, they are right: for we see many much less exposed, and living peaceably on shore, who, as Jack says, "are constantly taking trouble at interest," and dousing their top-gallants to every trifling squall, for fear of carrying away a spar; whilst a true sailor watches his flying kites, and sees the masts, spars, and booms bend again before he flinches or takes a single reef! Thus he sails through life, until, grim death giving him a shot between wind and water, he founders in the ocean of eternity.

I shall here present my readers with some verses called "The Mariner's Dream," as being highly descriptive of the vicissitudes of a seaman's life. The melody of the versification, added to the truth and richness of the painting, must plead my excuse for its insertion: —

THE MARINER'S DREAM.

"In the slumbers of midnight, the sailor boy lay,
His hammock swung loose to the sport of the wind;
But, watch-worn and weary, his cares sped away,
And visions of happiness danced o'er his mind.

He thought of his home and his dear native bowers,
And pleasures that wait on life's merry morn;
Whilst Memory stood sideways, half cover'd with flowers,
And displayed every rose, but secreted each thorn.

Now Fancy her magical pinions spread wide,
And bade the young dreamer in ecstasy rise:
Now, far, far behind him the green waters glide,
And the cot of his forefathers blesses his eyes!

The jessamine clambers in flowers o'er the thatch,
And the swallow sings sweet from his nest in the wall:
All trembling with transport he raises the latch,
And the voices of lov'd ones reply to his call.

A father bend's o'er him with looks of delight,
His cheek is impearled by a mother's warm tear;
And the lips of the boy in a love kiss unite
With the lips of the maid that his bosom holds dear!

The heart of the dreamer beats high in his breast,
Joy quickens his pulse, — all his hardships seem o'er,
And a murmur of happiness steals through his rest —
"Oh! God, thou hast blest me, I ask for no more!"

Ah! what is that sight which now bursts on his eye?
Oh! what is that sound which now 'larums his ear?
'Tis the lightning's red glare painting hell on the sky!
'Tis the crashing of thunder — the groans of the sphere!

He leaps from his hammock, he springs to the deck,
Amazement confounds him with images dire:
Wild winds and mad waves drive his vessel a wreck —
Her masts are in splinters, her shrouds are on fire!

Like mountains the billows tremendously swell;
In vain the lost wretch calls on Mercy to save!
Unseen hands of spirits are ringing his knell,
And the death-angel flaps his broad wing o'er the wave!

Ah! sailor boy, woe to thy dream of delight!
In darkness dissolves the gay frost-work of bliss:
Where now is the picture thy fancy touch'd bright?
Thy parents' fond pressure and love's honied kiss?

Ah! sailor boy, sailor boy! never again
Shall home, love, or kindred thy wishes repay:
Unblest and unhonoured, down deep in the main,
Full many a score fathom thy fame shall decay.

No tomb shall e'er plead to remembrance of thee,
Nor redeem form nor fame from the merciless surge;
But the white foam of ocean thy winding sheet be,
And the winds in the midnight of winter thy dirge!

Days, months, years, and ages shall circle away,
And still the vast waters above thee shall roll:
Earth loses thy pattern for ever and aye —
Oh! sailor boy, sailor boy, peace to thy soul!"

It was not until the fire had been some time extinguished that the passengers, and particularly the ladies, became sensible of the curious figures they presented in their night-caps and night-gowns, and some of them with merely a loose dress thrown over their shoulders. No sooner did we come aft, to descend to our berths, than they dispersed like a flight of scared doves; but, on the whole party again assembling at breakfast, they expressed, in grateful and animated terms, their admiration of the courage and coolness we had displayed during the whole of this terrible emergency.

The accident formed the subject of conversation for several days, and many anecdotes were related, which, now the danger was past, caused a good deal of mirth. Perhaps one of the most laughable arose out of the terror of a steerage psssenger, who became so frightened

that, drawing on his breeches with the wrong side foremost, he ran thus upon deck! and his ludicrous figure, as he scampered to and fro, with the seat of honour bare, made the old captain laugh in the midst of the danger. It would take a volume to recount all the mistakes and mishaps that occurred, but which were excused in consequence of the imminent danger to which the ship was exposed.

After the fire, we had two or three days of very calm weather, followed by a fine fair breeze, that quickly wafted us to the coast of America. One of the pilot schooners of that country, famed for the fearless manner in which they go to sea in all weathers, met us just after we got within the stream of the Gulf of Mexico. On comparing our reckoning with theirs, we found ourselves not far from the capes of the River Delaware indeed, all along the southern coast, the mariner gets soundings a great distance from shore, which, being extremely regular, enable him, by a reference to his chart, to ascertain his true position immediately.

In the evening of the second day, after taking the pilot, we saw land; and, the next morning early, ran into the bay of Delaware, where we anchored for an hour or two, the wind being light, and the tide running out. Then, proceeding on our voyage, in a few hours more we were safely moored alongside the quay of Philadelphia. After bidding a cordial adieu to our worthy old

captain, we proceeded to the house of Mr. Fisher, whom we found at home, but very busily occupied with a number of west country waggoners, just arrived. He smiled at me, and said, "Sit thee down, good friend; I have letters for thee, but thee must excuse me for a few minutes." This was pleasing news; for I was very sure there was, at least, one among them from my cousin. On receiving the packet, we immediately returned to our lodgings, to examine its contents. As I had suspected, there was a letter from Donovan, dated only a few weeks back. Before he said a word of himself or family, he thanked me for sending him such a treasure, as he called them: I mean poor Martin's family.

"The father and mother," said he, "live in one of my cottages: they are in good health and spirits, and, with the son and old Matthew, keep a large herd of cattle, and make the best cheese and butter I have ever tasted in this country. A young farmer, of good family and rich connections, fell in love with Jane, and married her: and, as they are settled only three miles off, she sees her parents almost every day. The husband wished the whole family to live with him, but they refused to leave me; and I have since given them the little farm, with the herd on the shares, as it is called in this country. They are getting rich, and are, certainly, the most grateful beings I ever beheld.

"Of yourself and your friend they speak in

terms of the warmest gratitude, and offer up their prayers to Heaven, for your health and prosperity, every night and morning. My Ellen and her husband are as attached as man and wife can be; and they have increased my happiness by making me a grandfather. Mrs. Donovan's health is better than ever it was in Ireland: so that I am really as contented as it is possible for any one to be out of his native land. My son has resigned his commission, and given himself up entirely to the care of his estates; and, in order to ameliorating the situation of his tenants, he has reduced his income considerably. As might be anticipated, his presence has been productive of the happiest effects; it has thrown open to him a number of hidden abuses which our agent, who always resided at the town of Clonmel, would never have discovered. From what your friend writes me, I am not without the hope of seeing you once more at Legonier valley, where you will find many improvements; and I could wish you to feel so much pleased with our rural enjoyments as to be tempted to purchase land near me, and leave off ploughing the ocean, to plough a more fertile element, and fix yourself for life."

The conclusion of this letter depressed my spirits: I reflected with melancholy dissatisfaction on the resolution I made, when I might, as Donovan proposed, find in his neighbourhood a placid haven, where I could moor myself for life, free

from the storms of care which perplex the busy world: then, with a sigh, I said, "But, alas! I was born to brave the tempests of life; to seek pleasure on the mountain waves; and purchase fortitude and experience amidst storms, difficulties, and dangers.

"But why should I repine?" I exclaimed aloud: "God is every where. His protecting arm will be my shield; and, perhaps, I may return in safety to my native land, where all my hopes and wishes are concentrated. Away with melancholy! — It is impious. May God forgive, and guide me through the rugged path I have chosen."

I had read the letter aloud, and remained for some minutes afterwards absorbed in thought, unconscious that my guardian was present. As I sprung from my chair to leave the room, he exclaimed, as he caught me by the hand, "Bravo! Walter: I congratulate you on your firmness; for I have marked your mental struggle between the fascinating impressions produced by your cousin's representation of the charms of a country life, and the one you have so nobly and resolutely determined to pursue. At Legonier you would be lulled in the downy lap of ease and retirement: not altogether uselessly, because a man of your ardent mind could never endure a mere empty existence. But, where we are going, all the energies of soul and body will be developed. Courage, fortitude, prudence, activity, diligence,

order, religion, and morality are necessary to form a good seaman; and, if you are deficient in any one of these qualities, you will acquire it by practice and experience."

I embraced him with tears in my eyes. "Oh!" said I, "how penetrating is your regard! you have read the inmost sentiments of my soul! I owe these feelings and sentiments to your paternal advice and instruction, and, above all, to your noble example: they shall continue to be my guide through life."

"Thank God!" said he, returning myembrace, "Fate will not separate us: on the contrary, I trust this determination will prove the means of uniting us still more strongly to each other. Your courage, like that of all your countrymen, is a little too ardent; but a sea-faring life will supply the requisite mixture of coolness and deliberation. One thing which I must press upon you, the importance of keeping a regular journal, by sea and land, and inserting every incident. Trifling as they appear to you, they may prove interesting to your friends: what seems in no wise extraordinary to a traveller, might astonish him who has never quitted the land which gave him birth. I was once told a ludicrous anecdote, by an American, a native of one of the northern provinces, highly illustrative of what I have now told you. A countryman, arriving at Boston, a large commercial town, was so charmed with the appear-

ance of a vessel, which he saw lying in the port, that he determined to make a voyage in her to the West Indies. On his return home, he went to visit his old mother, who lived many a long mile from the sea, and never saw a ship in her life. She asked him a great many questions; and was struck dumb with astonishment at the wonderful things he related. At last recovering from her reverie, the old dame said, 'Now, my son, you have really seen wonders; but, of all the wonderful things you met with, tell me which was the most wonderful?'

"'Mother,' he replied, 'I thought you would ask me again, so I kept the best for the last; and now I tell you I have seen mountains of sugar, rivers flowing with rum, and flying fish!'

"'No, no, son! none of your jests upon us poor ignorant people. Your mountains of sugar and rivers of rum are very possible: but that fishes fly, son, I never will credit, though the parson himself were to swear it.'

"Thus you see, that, though the old woman thought what was really found in nature to be a jest upon her credulity, she readily believed what never existed."

I was much amused with this story, and ever after paid particular attention to my journal.

The spring now began to advance rapidly; and we hastened the necessary preparations for our voyage to China. My guardian's influence with a wealthy merchant procured me the situation of

passenger and officer on board a fine ship, commanded by an active seaman, who promised me the same freedom I enjoyed on board the packet; and my guardian paid them a handsome sum, to insure us all the conveniences, &c. of which we might stand in need during so long a passage. All things being arranged, we proceeded in a carriage to a small town at the head of the bay of Delaware, opposite to which the ship was moored. On introducing ourselves to the captain, he informed us all was ready; and we embarked the following morning. Our voyage commenced prosperously, with a fine fair wind, that carried us in two days into the stream flowing out of the Gulf of Mexico, in a north-east direction, and for several degrees almost parallel with the coast of North America. It then begins to diffuse itself, and mingles with the waters of the Atlantic about the grand bank of Newfoundland. Just as we got into the strength of the stream, a violent gale of wind set in from the north-east, right against it, and raised a terribly high sea — what we sailors call a short *chopping* one, which tossed about our ship, of 800 tons burthen, like a jolly boat!

The storm lasted until near midnight, when it was my turn upon deck; and on my taking charge of the watch the weather became quite calm, but the terrible high-rolling waves continued, and the ship laboured worse than ever. The rain began to pour down in torrents, succeeded by incessant flashes of lightning, and the most awful thunder,

immediately over our heads, that I ever heard. During the calm, the waves broke violently over the vessel's decks; and sometimes she fell into the trough of the sea and shipped the water at both waists, as she rolled gunwales to: while the noise of wet sails flapping to the masts, united with the crashing thunder and roaring waves, created a wild uproar more terrific than langurge can describe. At intervals the lightning, in forked branches resembling serpents, struck the ocean close by us; at other times, broad flashes so illumined the decks and shrouds that the smallest object was rendered distinctly visible. To this succeeded the most perfect darkness; and we all felt as if we had been suddenly deprived of our eyesight. Two immense balls of electric fire, played rapidly up and down the fore-stay for for a considerable length of time; striking terror into the hearts of several of our young men, who were at sea for the first time in their lives. My greatest care was to secure our guns. I knew the rigging to be new, strong, well stretched, and just set up when we left port; but our gun breechings were old, particularly in the waist. One of them burst with a heavy roll; and, before I could get it secured again, it had wounded several men, and damaged our upper works. I had the presence of mind to spring forward into the waist myself, and, clapping a bowline over the muzzle, I led the end of the rope to the nearest iron pin about the mainmast; and made the sailors bowse upon it,

while I lashed it there until the morning. To this severe storm succeeded puffs and squalls, that obliged me to set sail and take it in again at every instant; so that the men had not a moment's repose during the whole of the middle watch. The thunder and lightning having ceased, it became a little lighter; but the streaks which marked the sky to windward shewed black, threatening, windy clouds.

I ordered the main-topsail to be clewed down, to take a reef; and, considering what work we had already done, and the rough, wet state of the sail, it could not have been a very agreeable task to my watch, of whom five or six were quite young lads, on their first voyage. However, they ran up the shrouds, cheerfully talking and laughing as they went; the yard being clewed down upon the top, and the running rigging all cast loose ready for reefing. Our captain, who had had a tiresome watch previously, and slept sound, awoke suddenly and came upon deck. The moment I saw him, I went and reported the occurrences of the watch.

"And what are you doing now? the weather looks threatening."

"We are taking a reef in the main-topsail."

"Why, so I imagined when I heard the coils of running rigging thrown upon deck; but those fellows take their own time about it,—they ought to have finished their work some minutes back."

"Sir, there are half a dozen young land lubbers

amongst them; but now, since you are on deck, I 'll run up the shrouds myself to see what they are about."

With that I jumped into the rigging, and in a few seconds was at the futtock shrouds and then in the top; where I overheard all the conversation of the men on the yard without being noticed, for the night was still dark. They were talking and jesting with each other — I mean the old sailors — as if nothing extraordinary had happened. "If we had some of those good long flashes of lightning now," said one of them to the man on the weather yard arm, "they would help us to gather in the bunt of the wet sail."

"Why I wouldn't give a damn for a seaman that couldn't gather it in with his eyes shut," said another.

"We are as good as blind," rejoined his messmate; "for we can't see our hands before us: but is the weather earing hauled home?"

"Chock a block! and belay'd so fast that the old devil himself couldn't untie it with his teeth. But I say, messmate, tell me what are all them young lubbers doing under the lee of the top?"

The other replied, with a laugh, "Why they're tying grannies' knots in the points and gaskets, and holding fast to the wind by their teeth for fear they should fall off the yard."

On hearing this, and knowing the work was nearly done, I slipped down upon deck, seized the trumpet, and cried out, —

"Come, men! enough of your *long yarns* there: tumble down off the yard, and man the halyards."

Down they came as quick as lightning over the shrouds, or glided by the running rigging upon deck; and, with a merry "Oh-he-yo!" in a few seconds up went the reefed sail to the topmast head: the yard was braced up, the bowlines hauled out taught, and every man at his station again; until another change took place, and he received a fresh summons.

As I walked about the break of the quarter deck, I also overheard the conversation of those who were stationed in the waist, under the lee of the launch.

Said an old sailor to one of the landsmen, —

"What do you think of this, my boy, for a beginning? How do you like old Davy Jones' vagaries?"

"Tough enough, by my faith!" replied the lad; "but, in spite of all his capers, I hope one of these days to be able to lay out upon the weather yard arm alongside of you."

"By my soul! you young milksop," said another old fellow, "but you'll have to eat some more salt junk and pudding before you can keep way with Tom."

I returned aft, and found the wind had changed several points in our favour; of which I informed the captain, who told me to take advantage of it. The watch was, in consequence, ordered aft to round in the weather braces; after which the

main-top-sail yard was clewed down and manned again, and the reefs shook out: this the sailors performed as merry as grasshoppers, congratulating each other on the arrival of a fair wind.

I have mentioned these matters to show how busily a poor seaman may be kept in his four hours watch; and how cheerfully he performs his duty, —"blow high, blow low," as the song says. Besides the disagreements I have mentioned, if the ship is close hauled to the wind, the spray flies over him and gives him a wet jacket: this he calls the "dust of the road."

We now got a fine, fair breeze, which carried us out of the Gulf stream into the north-east trade winds, but not so near the coast of Africa as we could have wished; and, in consequence, we did not see the Cape de Verde Islands. The trade wind blew very fresh, and often headed us off, so that, at last, we saw the island Ferdinando da Noronha; getting so far to leeward that we were in danger of approaching the coast of Brazil. Luckily, towards the last, the wind favoured us again, and continued fair until we ran into the variable winds, when we crossed the line and got into the south-east trades; though, before this was accomplished, we had some tiresome calms under a broiling sun.

I ought to have mentioned, that, during the terrible night in the Gulf stream, than which I have never seen one more awful, my guardian

kept the deck the whole time. Once, when a flash of lightning exposed him at my side, he said to me in a low voice, — "How pleased I am to find you cool and collected in this tremendous shock of the elements. Who would live on shore all his life, and never experience what we now feel within our souls?" I replied, that, if there was anything calculated to give man a competent idea of the power of God and his divine protection at the same time, it was this sublime conflict of the elements, where our ship, now become their sport, was like a small speck on the face of the immense ocean.

"But," said I, "is it not truly remarkable that, with eighteen large guns upon our deck, and a quantity of iron work every where the lightning has not struck us?"

"Oh! this very rarely happens in the open sea," said he: "it is one of those wise and inscrutable ordinances of our great Creator, of which there are so many, which exhibit his unexampled benignity and love for mankind."

The day we crossed the line the wind was very light, and the sun shone forth with more than ordinary brilliancy. At the hour for taking the sun, every one on board, who had a quadrant or a sextant, was seen measuring his height: and, wonderful to relate, precisely at twelve o'clock we found ourselves exactly under the equator; so that none of the young men could discover the

latitude. The captain, however, who was an experienced navigator, showed us that the declination was our latitude. The arrival of a vessel immediately under the equator, whilst the sun was in the zenith, being a curious and very rare occurrence, it furnished a subject for several interesting astronomical discussions. On the same day, also, the ship's decks exhibited a spectacle of the gayest and most amusing kind to old sailors, but a terrible one to the poor youths who crossed the line for the first time. An officer or passenger can buy himself off with a bottle of rum or brandy; but the common seamen are obliged to go through the initiation. This consists in being lathered with slush and tar mixed, and then shaved with a piece of old iron hoop. When this operation, which sometimes carries off a portion of the skin, is finished, the noviciate is plunged into a large tub of salt water, over which he has been seated on a board. However, let me not anticipate my subject. The moment the captain's orders were given to make it twelve o'clock, or, as the sailors say, to strike eight bells, two figures rose above majestically the head railings, and came in upon the forecastle over the bows. They were dressed in green robes; and their heads, shoulders, and the greater part of their bodies, appeared hung with sea-weed, still dripping with "ocean's briny tears."

I could see the landsmen all start back in terror at this unwelcome apparition. The male

figure, who was very tall and stout, held a trident* in one hand, and a trumpet in the other; and the female carried a piece of iron hoop, and a pot containing a delicate lather composed of slush and tar mixed. The god of the ocean, or Davy Jones, as he is styled by sailors, before he came over the bows upon deck, hailed the ship with a thundering voice. The captain, who loved to see the astonishment of the novices, immediately took his trumpet and duly answered his questions of from whence he came? where bound? &c. After this formality, he advanced towards the break of the quarter-deck, and desired the captain, who came to meet and treat him and his wife with a glass of grog, to show him his papers, and particularly the *rolled equipage*. After looking them over, he observed they were all correct; but added, "I see you have a number of landsmen, who never crossed the line before: let the boatswain pipe all hands, and bring the lubbers to the gangway; they must be initiated."

In an instant he piped all hands, and the novices were selected and assembled at the gangway, where the tub of salt water had been previously got in readiness, covered with a sail. Old father Neptune now ordered the boatswain's mates to take all forward, and bring them aft one by one, blindfolded, as they should be summoned by name.

* The ship's harpoon.

"Now," said he, "we shall initiate these young men into the mysteries of a seafaring life, after which they may cross the line as often as they please; for I shall never interfere with them again."

Our boatswain himself performed the part of the ocean god, and a magnificent fellow he was: an Irishman, about six feet two inches high, and stout in proportion. Thetis, his wife, was acted by a sailor, who was clever at his part; and, having been at sea for more than thirty years, knew exactly what questions to put to the novices.

Before the ceremony began, the captain came again to Neptune, reported that all was well on board ship, and treated him with another glass of grog, and some white cabin biscuit; when the god of the waves ordered his victims to be brought forward. The moment a young man was seated on the board, over the tub of water, Thetis lathered and shaved him: an ordeal that not one of them could support without crying out loudly, and they would have jumped from their seats had not four stout fellows held them fast; whilst many a young heart beat high with trepidation, unable to imagine what that trial was which made those who preceded them roar like bulls.

The shaving over, both Neptune and Thetis put several questions to their victim — such as, how to splice a rope; clap on a stopper; haul out the weather earing; gather in the bunt of a sail, in a squall; make fast the points and gaskets;

send down a top-gallant mast; sheep-shank the standing rigging, in case of its being stranded; run out a studding-sail boom, &c. &c. These questions are asked in such a thundering voice, that no landsman, however bold, can keep his recollection about him, even though he may have made great progress in seamanship, so as to answer all without falling into some blunder. The moment he commits an error, Neptune exclaims, "Christen him!" when the board is instantly snatched away, and he sinks into the tub over head and ears, and emerges at length, with the assistance of the laughing bystanders, like a half-drowned rat. The moment he is placed upon his legs, his eyes are uncovered, and he makes a bow to Neptune and his wife, who, on their parts, congratulate him on his being now a regular seaman, and installed in all the rights and privileges belonging to a mariner of the great ocean. Thus ends the ceremony; and the captain and officers generally send the crew rum or brandy as a present.

A few days after passing the line, we got good strong winds, which soon wafted us beyond the meridian of the pitch of the Cape of Good Hope, when a constant continuance of south-west and north-west winds, for about six weeks, enabled us to run down almost all our easting; and, passing between the islands of St. Peter and St. Paul, we made the land on the coast of New Holland, in about thirty-four degrees of south latitude. We

then stood to northward, and found the coast so thickly garnished with shoals, rocks, and sand-banks, many of which were not marked on our charts, that we were forced to be constantly on the look-out for fear of running foul of them. It was on this coast that, for the first time in my life, I beheld the mighty struggles of a whale endeavouring to beat off his enemies, a sword-fish, and three or four thrashers, by which he was attacked. The battle took place in a small bay, before which our ship passed with so light a breeze that she was almost becalmed; and we were, for three quarters of an hour, within less than half a mile of them. All this time the thrashers beat the whale with their tails in the most violent manner, raising them, at every blow, apparently ten to twelve feet above the surface of the sea. The sword-fish we could not see, but our captain, who was an old whale catcher, told us he always kept beneath his enemy, goring him with his sword, whilst the thrashers beat him. Now and then we saw the gigantic fish rear his head and shoulders above the waves, and then plunge again with violence, as if about to annihilate his enemies at a blow; at other times, his broad and monstrous tail, after being raised perpendicularly out of the sea at least some twenty feet, descended with a terrific crash, like the roaring and splashing of an immense waterfall. The captain, who had witnessed several such combats in his life-time, assured us that the whale was then at his

last gasp, and would soon have his tongue devoured by his voracious enemies. It seems the thrashers and sword-fish are great epicures, and hunt and kill the whale merely for the pleasure of eating that portion of the animal. I have heard, that almost all the whales thrown ashore on the coasts of the Aleutian Islands, and the Peninsula of Kamschatka, have been found to have had their tongues devoured. The inhabitants are always delighted when they find one with his tongue uninjured, as it produces a large quantity of very good oil.

We pursued our voyage along the coast of New Holland, until we got round the north-west point, when we steered for the islands of Bally and Cumbava; and then, sailing through the Straits of Allass, left the island of Macassar to the north-east, and ran down through the Java Sea. This sea is interspersed with numerous islands, so beautifully clothed with verdure and trees, growing down to the water's edge, that they are picturesque and enchanting beyond description. Some of them, however, were inhabited at that time by pirates of the most desperate character. Indeed, our captain, before we got into the straits, appointed me commander of the marines; and placed under my command twelve men and a corporal, whom I exercised every day, to prepare them in case of necessity. Our boarding-nettings were also got ready, and lashed all round ship, with the halyards reeved to them, and

prepared to bowse them up at a moment's warning; for these desperate fellows are sometimes known to creep upon vessels at night, when they are becalmed, or moving slowly with a light breeze through the water. However, we were in complete preparation to resist any sudden attack; besides, all the great guns were drawn, squibbed off, cleaned, and re-charged with grape and round. Lucky it was that we had been so prudent. Three days after these arrangements were completed, when opposite a beautiful island, which we passed very slowly with a light air on the quarter, just as I had got my men upon deck and was preparing to exercise them, my guardian suddenly exclaimed, "Walter! here's a vessel on our starboard quarter, that seems to have come from the island, and is fast bearing down upon us with sails and sweeps; what do you think of her?"

I looked, and plainly discovered she was endeavouring to overtake us; and, as she had all the appearance of a pirate, I went below and reported my suspicions to the captain, as was my duty. He immediately ordered the stern ports, where we had no guns, to be closed, the boarding-nettings to be trised up all round the ship, the swivels on the taffrail to be loaded, and every precaution taken to resist them. While the vessel was a long way off, employing her sweeps, she appeared, to have a great many men; yet, as she drew nearer, but a very few, say about twelve or fifteen, showed themselves on the decks. The

wind was light; yet, without their sweeps, which had been now all laid snug in board, she came up with us very fast. A small Malay flag was hoisted at her mast head, and we discovered with our glasses that the crew were also Malays; but could see neither guns nor small arms of any description. The fact is, these fellows seldom have any other weapon than a crise, or dagger, which they wear concealed in their belts: the blade is made in a serpentine form, and is usually poisoned. When the vessel got sufficiently near, a man made signs that he had fruit to dispose of, and exhibited a large bunch of fine plantains, some cocoa-nuts, pine-apples, &c. We invited him to approach nearer, the captain at the same time ordering a party of sailors, armed with pikes and cutlasses, to be ready on the forecastle; whilst I had my marines, with their muskets loaded and bayonets fixed, prepared to act at a moment's warning.

The Malay vessel had now sheered close alongside of us, and the sailors upon deck proceeded to make her fast to the fore chains: this was no sooner done, than, in an instant, seventy or eighty men arose from their concealment, and clambered up the side of our ship like monkies; but the boarding-nettings, and our cautious conduct, saved us. We had near fifty men, all well armed; and the slaughter we made amongst them was truly dreadful. For my own part, the instant I saw them in the nettings, without waiting the cap-

tain's orders, I gave the word to my marines, and, after firing two rounds, they charged with their bayonets. Although we thus checked them, and killed numbers, still they came on with undiminished fury over the nettings; and many were piked there, and fell back into their own vessel or into the sea. However, in spite of our best endeavours, several of these barbarians got upon our decks, and wounded three or four of the men before we could kill them. Two, who let themselves drop from the nettings close to where I stood, immediately commenced an attack upon me. I severed the head of one with my cutlass; and my guardian, who had only a handspike to defend himself with, knocked the other down at the moment he raised his dagger to stab me, and a marine, who was near, pinned him through the breast with his bayonet. The few who were left in the boat, seeing their comrades either killed or wounded, cut their fasts and sheered off: but the captain did not let them escape so easily; for he luffed the vessel up in the wind, ordered the great guns to be manned, and gave them a whole broadside. The effect was awful. Both their masts went by the board, the upper works were rent in splinters, one half of the few men that remained were laid dead upon the decks, and the rest ran below and hid themselves. Our captain, who was extremely exasperated at their treacherous conduct, ordered the helm hard up again, raised the tacks and sheets, and wore ship as

speedily as possible, to bring her to the wind upon the other tack, it being too light to stay her. The moment he got his other broadside to bear upon the pirate vessel, he gave her a second volley, scarcely less destructive than the first; and, several holes being made in her side near the water's edge, we concluded she would soon sink. Indeed, the captain, who had again ordered the guns to be loaded, swore he would send her to the bottom; but my guardian persuaded him to bear up and leave her, saying, "You have given them a severe lesson; and it is better to let the few who remain reach home, to relate the dreadful fate of their companions, as it may, perhaps, deter them from attempting again to board European ships." Of those who came upon our decks, not a man could be made prisoner; they were so ferocious, we were obliged to kill them in our own defence.

When the business was over, the captain came to me, and said,—

"Sir, you have this day been guilty of disobedience of orders, or rather, I should say, you commenced the action with the pirates without awaiting my commands; for which, instead of bringing you to a court martial, I must request you publicly to accept my thanks." Then, turning to my guardian, he added, "I must also make my hearty acknowledgments to you, sir, for using your handspike with as much courage and skill as an Ireland man does a cudgel."

"We are equally indebted to you, captain," replied my guardian, "for the cool intrepidity with which you commanded us; and to your early precautions, on first entering the straits, do we owe our lives, and the preservation of the valuable ship and cargo."

This incident will give my readers some idea of the desperate courage of the Malays, who generally intoxicate themselves, by chewing opium, before they commence an attack where the issue is doubtful.

The battle was the subject of conversation for several days, and many anecdotes were related of individual courage and presence of mind. A man had been in the main-top with his marling-spike to splice a rope, but, seeing the pirates about to board us, he ran down the shrouds to the edge of the nettings, where he made a stand, and, with his marling-spike, knocked every Malay overboard that attempted to pass over the shrouds; and, notwithstanding he was severely wounded in the thigh with a dagger, he kept at his post until the combat was finished. The boatswain, a tall, powerful man, struck three of the pirates down with his fist, whilst his comrades despatched them with their pikes and pistols. He received a slight wound with a crise. Our cook, who was a very stout fellow, a native of Africa, dealt death and destruction amongst his enemies with a long iron bar belonging to the cabouse, and killed more of them than any five men in the ship.

We now continued our route, with a fair wind and fine weather, down through the Java Sea, until we made the island of Borneo, which the Malays call the King of Islands, from its size and elevation above the surface of the ocean, as well as for the richness and abundance of its mineral productions. It abounds with gold, ivory, tin, diamonds, &c., with all the fruits and vegetables common to tropical climates. The inhabitants have the character of being fierce and inhospitable, but, I suspect, unjustly; for all we know of the island is a small portion of its coast, where Europeans trade with men who use a *lingua franca* well known throughout the eastern islands: but some of the traders have remarked, that the people from the interior speak a language entirely distinct from these.

We coasted round the western part of Borneo; and then, directing our course across the China Sea, made the land of China, near the famous rock of Pedrobnarac, or "White Rock." We then proceeded along the shore; and, passing through a group of islands called the Ladrones, anchored safely in Macao Roads. This island, called Omoon by the natives, has a small port and town, where there is a brisk trade carried on with India, Manilla, Java, and, in fact, with all the islands of the China Sea. Here we were obliged to stop to report our ship, and get a pilot to take us up the river, through the Bocco Tigris, to the roads of Whampoa, about twelve miles from Canton,

where all foreign vessels are moored during their stay.

In features, manners, and customs, the Chinese are so entirely different from the people of Europe, that they greatly excited our surprise and curiosity. We were particularly struck with their effeminate dress, composed of a long gown with large sleeves, which gave them the appearance of women. We afterwards saw many of the women of the lower classes, and found them clothed almost exactly like the men, except that their hair was plaited differently, and turned up upon the crown of the head.

In this, my first, voyage I will not attempt to describe the manners and customs of the nation from what I saw during a residence of only a few weeks at Canton; but shall postpone what I have to say on the subject until I bring my readers a second time into the East. From the very first, however, I was astonished at its prodigious population, and the amazing industry and activity which seemed to animate all classes.

Although none of us could speak the Chinese language, we found so many of the natives who understood English perfectly, that we had no difficulty in making ourselves understood, and procuring whatever we wanted. Indeed, it seems to be the policy of the government to incite their subjects to acquire all the foreign languages, in order to prevent foreigners from making themselves acquainted with theirs. The visitors from

Europe being generally engaged in commerce, they are glad to find interpreters; as they have neither leisure nor disposition to seek to instruct themselves in a tongue extremely difficult to pronounce, and still more so to write.

Our captain was very active and persevering, and pressed his agent and the Chinese merchant to have his cargo prepared in time for the commencement of the north-east wind, which, in those seas, blows for six months, when it changes to south-west, and blows six months from the latter point: that is to say, with some variations; for the north-east makes a range from north-north-east to east, and the south-west from south-south-west to west.

At the expiration of about seven weeks, our cargo was on board and the ship ready for sea. Taking advantage of the north-east, which then blew fresh, we ran out of the river through Macao roads, and, in a few hours, were again in the China Sea, directing our course for the Straits of Sunda. These straits are formed by the islands of Java and Sumatra, and lead into what is called the Great Southern, or Indian, Ocean. Though our passage down the China Sea was, upon the whole, extremely rapid, we were becalmed for two days in the Straits of Banga, where we saw several vessels manned by Malays, similar to that which had attacked us; but, although many of them plied about the shores, none attempted to approach us.

CHAPTER VIII.

The ship made a prosperous passage to the Isle of France, and, taking advantage of the delay caused by waiting for a cargo of coffee and sugar, we resolved to travel into the interior; and, in the course of several pedestrian excursions, performed the tour of the whole island. Wherever we went, the colonists received us with the greatest hospitality, and we were constantly invited into all the best families. In these rambles some interesting object continually presented itself to enchant our senses; and we had a faithful servant, the slave of one of my acquaintances, who knew every corner of the island, and served us as a guide. Besides being perfectly honest and faithful, his nimbleness and activity were most extraordinary. On one occasion, when we were clambering with difficulty over a rugged path up the steep side of a mountain, he capered on before us, to the summit, with all the agility of a chamois. Then, squatting himself on a rock with his elbows on his knees, and holding his head between his hands, he grinned like a monkey, and shewed his ivory teeth, which were conspicuous at a great distance; seemingly much amused at our laborious efforts to effect what he had so easily accomplished.

When we came up to him, he exclaimed, in his broken lingo, "Ha! massa very tire; hard work: never mind, top now very near; there you see fine plain, fine trees, fine water, fine plantains, all very beautiful: come, now must set down a little; you very hot."

We then seated ourselves on a rock overhanging a terrible precipice, whilst Cæsar lit his pipe and smoked with great seeming satisfaction; for he swallowed the smoke, and retained it at least a minute before he blew it out gently at three or four whiffs. His pipe was then carefully replaced in its leathern pouch, and in a few seconds after he fell fast asleep. The slaves on this island, mostly brought from the coast of the Mozambique channel, are rather a stupid race, and certainly the most indolent and careless beings in the world. If, at any hour of the day, one of them happens to be seated without work, he invariably falls asleep. They are, however, considered honest, good-natured, and faithful; indeed, my man Cæsar was a proof of this, though, in point of intelligence, he was very little superior to a dog. Yet, whenever I cautioned him not to mention any circumstance which occurred during our walks, and which I have often done purposely, to prove him, even his own master could not tempt him, with bribes, to disclose it.

But to return to our excursion. Whilst my coal-black guide, whose skin shone in the sunbeams like polished ebony, snored profoundly, we were

gazing at the precipice beneath our feet, and the rude amphitheatre of gigantic rocks surrounding us. On our right, a towering peak called the Thumb, from its peculiar shape, reared its craggy summit above the clouds; its sides being chequered with stunted forests, broken rocks, precipices, and deep ravines, covered with trees and plants of the most delightful verdure. On the other hand, a roaring torrent rushed through winding chasms, and, bursting into cataracts at various points, as it fell over the steep declivities of the mountain, at length became a beautiful stream meandering quietly through the small, but exquisitely cultivated, plain below. After continuing its course for a couple of miles, it reached the sea shore; where, leaping over a lofty perpendicular cliff, it mingled its waters with the ocean in one vast sheet of foam.

I sat for some minutes on the rock in silent contemplation of this magnificent panorama; nor do I ever remember to have experienced so complete a fascination of the senses as at that moment. My guardian, who had been equally delighted with it, first broke silence.

"Walter," said he, "how sublime, how wonderful, how enchanting are the works of God!"

Just as I was about to reply, I turned towards my black guide, who, perched upon a stone in the posture before described, resembled a large baboon; and his snoring was so loud, that, at the first glance, I could not avoid bursting into a fit

of laughter. My guardian, who had not until then discovered Cæsar, joined me; observing, at the same time, "How indifferent to the sublime works of nature must be the feelings of that poor fellow, when he can fall asleep with such a prospect before his eyes! Come, let us rouse him and make our way to the summit."

I shook him twice by the shoulders before he awoke, when, springing upon his feet, he exclaimed, with a loud laugh —

"That you, massa? you look long time; very fine sight: ha! ha! massa: but this is nothing at all; when we get up yonder, then you see more fine! more fine! too much fine!"

We had now to climb the steepest part of the ascent, but which our sable friend scampered over, as usual, in a few minutes; and, resuming his accustomed posture at the top, remained to watch our progress and await our arrival. Our march was slow and fatiguing, the day being very hot, and we perspired freely; but at length we found ourselves again at the side of Cæsar. The plain beneath appeared about six or eight miles in extent, highly cultivated with sugar, coffee, cotton, cloves, &c. all beautifully verdant. Another small river, bursting in cataracts from the mountain side and falling over the rocks at its base, intersected it, and wound its silvery current in a serpentine course through the most beautiful and best cultivated parts; until, at length, it rushed in a torrent down the steep slope that bounded the opposite

side of the valley. Several farms, or habitations, as they are styled in the language of the colony, helped to vary and beautify this superb landscape; being all surrounded by walks and gardens embellished by art. The rocks and hills encompassing the plain were covered with trees and shrubs; and, amongst them, a great number and variety of vines entwined their thick and verdant foliage. These, contrasted with the craggy precipices, the foaming cataracts, and the rich and varied efforts of industry and cultivation, formed at a single glance one of the most enchanting prospects I ever beheld.

Whilst we were absorbed in wonder and admiration, my black guide said to me, "Now, massa, you look enough that side; turn round and look down the road you come up." I obeyed, and beheld, with a feeling of terror, the narrow path, which now appeared as diminutive as a line drawn upon a chart. Below, apparently no larger than the palm of my hand, we could distinguish the small plain we had passed in order to reach the base of the mountain; and beyond it, stretching far and wide, the boundless ocean, where I discovered three large British men of war cruising off the island, and which, at this distance, looked like jolly boats under sail.

It would be difficult to find, on any other part of the globe, a spot offering two such magnificent views at the same instant; and, whilst I contemplated the wide expanse of waters, and the enor-

mous rock on which I stood perched like a bird, I could not help reflecting on my own nothingness in comparison with those sublime and awful works of nature. I felt pensive; and an unusual sadness came over me. "I perceive," said my guardian, "the effect produced on your mind by the objects before you. It is because you have had your mind's eye overstrained by the vastness of what is here displayed, and which it has been unable to embrace."

On turning to ask my black friend a question about the signal house and staff, I perceived he was again wrapt in a profound slumber, seated as he had been before.

"Hold!" said my guardian; "don't wake the happy fellow! Let him enjoy his nap, whilst we look awhile longer at the objects which surround us, and which, certainly, one would suppose, are capable of producing any thing but sleep. However, this only proves, in some men, the ascendency of matter over mind, where the latter has never been called forth: such is the case with our poor black friend, whose happy temperament is not to be disturbed by what would render us miserable."

After resting on this spot about twenty minutes, Cæsar opened his eyes, drew forth his tobacco pouch and pipe, and began to smoke. When he had finished his puffs, I said to him, "Come, Cæsar, you have enjoyed a good nap, and have smoked your pipe at your leisure: lead us now

towards the habitation of Mr. Malherbes, to whom we have a letter of introduction."

"Oh! massa," said he, "I always ready;" and, bouncing up, he descended towards the plain by a narrow path that, at first, led through some woods and over rough rocks, but which, as we advanced, grew smoother and wider, until at length it entered a large field planted with sugar canes. After passing a mill, where a great number of slaves were grinding canes to make sugar, we arrived at the mansion. It was a building of two stories, constructed regularly and with great taste, according to the best rules of architecture. Verandahs ran along the sides most exposed to the morning and evening's sun; and the whole was surrounded with walks, alleys, and gardens, where shrubs and flowers embalmed the air with the most delicious odours. Our attention was particularly attracted by the alleys of clove trees, which, entwining their rich foliage and long shady branches, formed a canopy impenetrable to the rays of the sun. The owner of this delightful spot had a large family of children,—some of them young ladies already marriageable; and he received us with great kindness and hospitality. Although the climate at the bottom of the mountain is exceedingly sultry, we experienced a very perceptible change on reaching the table land at its summit. In the evenings, too, the air was sufficiently cool to render a fire agreeable; and we slept comfortably under a blanket. However, during the day,

the sun on the high lands was also exceedingly scorching; but in the shade there was a delicious coolness produced by the constant sea breeze. Nothing can be purer than the air; — indeed the atmosphere is said to be too pure for persons of weak lungs, and a long residence in the island produces incurable consumption: the moment, therefore, any symptons of that disorder are discovered, the patient is immediately embarked for Europe.

The Isle of France abounds with all the finest productions of the tropics; such as pine apples, plantains, bananas, grapes, figs, oranges, cocoa nuts, shaddocks or pamplemouses, vegetable marrow, mangoes, jacks, &c. The whole of these fruits are very fine, except the pine apples and the mangoes, which are sweeter and better flavoured at the Philippines, and other islands of the China Sea situated near the equator.

After Mocha, on the borders of the Red Sea, this island has the character of producing the best flavoured coffee in the world; and its sugar is said to be very strong, sweet, and the most profitable for refining. As there is such a small proportion of flat land, and that being employed for the cultivation of coffee, cotton, sugar, and spices, they have not much space for feeding cattle, or growing grain; and beef, flour, and rice are imported in considerable quantities. Their flour they get from America, and their bullocks and rice from the island of Madagascar,

which, with the coast of Africa, forms what is called the Mozambique channel. There is, however, an animal found there in abundance whose flesh is a good substitute for beef, and said to be very wholesome — I mean the large species of the land tortoise. The first time I dined abroad it was at the table of a wealthy merchant, where I saw what I imagined to be a rump of beef, larded, served round as a *bouilli*. On the host asking me how I liked their beef, I replied, that, though it was less fat than that of Europe, it was extremely tender and well flavoured. He then told me it was the flesh of the tortoise: and, if he had said nothing about it, I certainly should not have discovered it by the taste.

"When I first arrived here from France," said he, "I had an aversion to the flesh of the tortoise, on account of its ugly and disgusting appearance. A friend, however, who always had, as I thought, a nice piece of beef on his table, smiled one day when I praised it, and replied, 'This is not the first time you have spoken favourably of my beef; I am really happy to find it is to your taste, as it proves the fallacy of suffering ourselves to be prejudiced by appearances. I have often heard you say, you wondered how any one who had ever seen a tortoise could think of eating it. Now, let me tell you that you have never eaten beef at my table: what you commended so highly is neither more nor less than tortoise.'

"This completely removed my former prejudices, and I have ever since eaten tortoise flesh instead of beef: the latter being not always to be had, besides being frequently both tough and dry."

Fish is not very plentiful at this island, and many species are poisonous.

Our stay at this habitation was only for a day or two, when we pursued our route, on foot, to some more distant one; and in this manner we made the tour of the island. To paint all the picturesque and enchanting scenes we met with on our journey would fatigue my readers: suffice to say, the romantic beauties of the interior, where the richness of the vegetation is beyond the power of words to delineate, can only be compared to Paradise; and one sometimes meets spots so truly enchanting, that I have spent half a day in admiring what I could have traversed in half an hour.

Having finished our excursion, we returned to the port, so charmed with everything we had seen that we determined to visit the interior again before we left the island.

We were now, as before, frequently invited to the governor's, and, indeed, into all the best families resident at the port. They seemed pleased to hear us speak in raptures of the country, and, more particularly, of the friendship and hospitality we experienced throughout.

At a house where we often dined there was a young French lady, of about eighteen years

age, very pretty, and fond of conversation; but, as I understood she was betrothed to the captain of a frigate then on a cruise, I, of course, was cautious not to pay too much attention to an affianced lady, and whose uncle and aunt (for she was the niece of the host and hostess) seemed to watch her narrowly. However, by a certain unaccountable fatality, it constantly fell to my lot to lead her to dinner, and sit beside her; and our intimacy, in consequence, increased imperceptibly, though she had the art not to appear to be more engaged with me than any one else. She spoke the English language fluently, which she had learned from her nurse, who was a Londoner; and thus we were enabled to converse aloud on many subjects without attracting the attention of the rest of the company. She gave me frequent hints of her attachment to our language, customs, &c.; and, at length, went so far as to say how much she regretted not being allowed to receive the visits of those she liked in the absence of her uncle and aunt.

"But," said I, innocently, "where's the harm in their being present? You see now how much we are at our ease even before this company, who are ignorant of the language we employ; and we say whatever we please without the smallest embarrassment."

She smiled, and replied, "This is all true; but still they have eyes, and they watch our motions. Surely you understand me."

"I think I do: but what do you wish of me farther?"

"That you would visit me in private; I won't say alone, for my faithful Laura, the negress you see standing behind my chair, is always with me: but, nevertheless, it would be much more agreeable than to meet, as we now do, only at dinner, before a large society."

"But how is this to be managed? You have often told me you are always in the presence of your aunt until about eleven o'clock at night, when you retire to your chamber."

"True; but it is then, or rather at midnight, that I desire to receive you. Come to the large gate: alongside of it there is a wicket door, which remains open all night; on the right hand of this entrance is the back staircase, leading to my chamber. My faithful girl shall watch your arrival, and conduct you to me; she will also lead you back again when you wish to depart."

This proposal, coming from a virtuous woman, somewhat startled me; and, had any of the company been looking at me with attention, I am persuaded they could not have failed to perceive my embarrassment. Seeing that I was silent, she added, "Oh! I see you are afraid to pay me a private visit: or, perhaps, a certain lady"—and she threw a glance towards a beautiful and very lively married woman present—"engrosses all your leisure moments."

"Excuse me, madam," I rejoined; "yc"

really mistaken. I confess, however, there is something alarming in the idea of approaching your chamber at such an hour; not in reference to myself, for I am a stranger to fear: but lest I might be detected by some one of the family or your servants, and the injury to your reputation in consequence."

"How conscientious and innocent you are," said she, rather sarcastically: "but don't be alarmed,—my reputation is in my own keeping; and, since you visit me at this extraordinary and untimely hour by my invitation, be assured I shall take precautions that no one shall ever know it, unless you are base enough to reveal the secret."

My honour and gallantry thus called in question, there was no receding; and I consented to come the following night, at twelve o'clock, disguised in a sailor's jacket and trowsers, with a good stick in my hand.

"This seems all well arranged," said I, resuming the conversation; "but now there is another difficulty: how am I to absent myself from home without the knowledge of my companion, and, what is still more difficult, without your uncle's slave, Cæsar, who sleeps in an antichamber between my room and the street door, knowing it? My guardian, who sleeps on the other side of the hall, may be kept in ignorance of my movements; but the black cannot be deceived."

"Oh!" she rejoined, smiling, "Cæsar loves me better than any one else in the world. You may trust our secret to him; he will never disclose it, for he is true and faithful; so you have nothing to fear: but, recollect, you must only come on the nights you do not dine at my uncle's, for there is then always an evening society, as you must remark; and, although *you* go home at an early hour, many of our visitors sit until one or two in the morning, playing cards."

Matters thus arranged, she began to laugh and talk in her native language, in order to dissipate any suspicions that our long conversation might have excited; and, addressing herself to the lady opposite, she said, — "Only imagine! Mr. Brabazon has the effrontery to tell me he thinks you the loveliest and most amiable lady of the island."

"I admire his effrontery," said the other, giving me an arch look; "for I have long since remarked that he is enamoured of me. So you see I anticipated his compliment; and now beg to know whether he has not some new homage to offer to my beauty?"

This smart repartee disconcerted the young lady, and seemed to check her gaiety; whilst the other, with a triumphant look, continued: "Remember, Mr. Brabazon, you are my sworn knight whilst you remain on this island; and I shall not readily permit you to bear the device of any other damsel."

I bowed assent. My fair neighbour was silent

and thoughtful; but, after the lapse of a few seconds, she suddenly exclaimed, "Oh! then the business is thus arranged: the married ladies in this country engross all the single gentlemen; and we poor spinsters, on entering a saloon, find no one to speak to but old bachelors who are out of the list of candidates for marriage, or jealous husbands, who by an affected gaiety are trying to convince their wives that they are indifferent to the attentions paid them by the young cavaliers."

"Well, my dear," retorted her witty opponent, "and is not all this extremely natural? Get married as quick as possible, and do as we do."

"Excellent advice," I exclaimed; "pray do you not mean to follow it?"

"I'll answer that question," said she, softly, "when you come to me to-morrow evening."

"A broad hint," thought I, "but you will find yourself mistaken if you suppose I am so easily ensnared in the trammels of a person who, notwithstanding she is known to be engaged to another, has the imprudence to invite me to her chamber at midnight."

The dinner being ended, we passed into the saloon, where I was rallied by the charming woman who had chosen me to be her knight, on my new conquest; at the same time she whispered in my ear, "Beware of the captain; but more so of her, for she is a cunning, artful girl."

"Oh," replied I, "the captain is absent on a cruise; and, according to a proverb in your own

language, 'the absent are always in fault.' Then, as it regards the young lady herself, I should be a sorry knight, and unworthy of the honour of bearing the device of the loveliest of her sex, if I did not know how to parry the attacks of a maiden assailant."

"Admirable gallantry!" said she: "you have replied like a true and faithful cavalier; so here's my hand,—kiss it, and let your lips be the seal of your fidelity."

I saluted it respectfully, saying, "On this angelic hand, then, I swear to be true to my device, '*Love and Honour.*'"

"I am much pleased with your motto," she said, "because the last word of it is a pledge for the good conduct of the first: but enough of this nonsense,—let us talk of something more reasonable. You know I am wild and flighty, and you take advantage of it. See that you conduct yourself very differently with yonder prude, who never speaks without calculating the weight and quality of every word that escapes her."

I replied, "You certainly would not have me act otherwise than like a man of the world, who should always endeavour to conform to the characters of those with whom he associates. The young lady is pretty; and those deep black eyes and long silken eye lashes sometimes emit glances which a man, who is not altogether an icicle, cannot behold with indifference: and when she pleases she can be both sprightly and witty."

"I confess," rejoined the lady, "that she is pretty, and can be very entertaining; but there is oftentimes a double meaning both in her looks and expressions. This, in a married lady, might lead gentlemen to form an unfavourable opinion of her virtue; but, perhaps, what is in us deemed unpardonable may be thought becoming in a virgin of eighteen."

I smiled, and said, "Excuse me,—I think quite the contrary; but you know men, as the song says, generally like 'strength in wine, and weakness in women.' However, your remark is just, and I perceive you have penetrated her character; but, pardon your knight if he is sometimes led away, and courts the smiles of the niece, in gratitude for the kindness and hospitality of the uncle and aunt."

"An honourable motive," said she; "gratitude is the first of virtues: but let it not carry you too far."

We were now interrupted by the uncle and the niece themselves, who approached us: the latter observing, "Look, uncle, here is Mr. Brabazon by the side of his lady fair, as usual. Do, my dear madam, have the kindness to tell us what he has been saying to you; for I am told he is very satirical?"

"So much, my dear," said the lady, "that I dare not repeat his conversation: but there he is—let him answer for himself, whilst I run and say a

few words in the ear of my husband, who, I see, is sitting alone yonder like a poor forsaken wight."

And off she tripped, giving me an arch look, and leaving me to settle the matter in my own way.

A few seconds of silence ensued, for her sudden departure disconcerted me, until at length I observed, "The flighty and thoughtless character of that lady is too well known to require that I should reply seriously to such an accusation."

"Oh!" said the uncle, "we know her. She is a beautiful and amiable woman, but wild and unthinking to a degree that is really out of all bounds: and, what is the more extraordinary, her husband is delighted at it, and, instead of checking these ebullitions, he allows her to act as she pleases. Just now, when she gave her hand to kiss, one of his friends near him said, 'Look, colonel, your wife gives her hand to Mr. Brabazon to kiss.'

"'What's that to me,' said he, 'if she likes him? I should not be offended if she gave him her lips to kiss; because I am perfectly sure of her virtue.'"

I now approached my guardian, and asked him to take a walk with me into the garden. Finding ourselves in a walk unfrequented by company, I related to him the incident which had occurred at dinner, and the awkward situation in which I was placed: namely, either to make the visit, or

offend the young lady for ever, and, perhaps, cause her to influence her uncle to treat us coldly, and induce many of our acquaintances to imagine we had merited his resentment.

"I have remarked for some time past," said my guardian, "the attention paid you by the niece; and meant, this very night, to speak to you on the subject. You have anticipated me; and I feel highly gratified at the undisguised manner in which you have explained the whole affair. There is now no receding; you must be true to your appointment: but recollect the young lady is engaged; and, no matter what may be her motives for inviting you, your honour, I hope, will remain untarnished, as it always has been. Any advantage that might be taken of her passion or weakness in your favour would be iniquitous. I tell you this, since you have asked my advice; but I am persuaded your conscience would have dictated it to you, without any interference. She is an artful girl: therefore, beware how you make your advances; and endeavour, as soon as you can retire with credit, to get rid of the connection."

I declared that I had none but the most honourable intentions, and thanked him for his good counsel.

The greater part of the company having entered the garden, to enjoy the freshness of the evening and the fragrance of the flowers and shrubs, we joined them. Tea was served in the pavilion, and sent to those who preferred being in the open

air. All the time I remained, the niece seemed to watch my motions; but I scrupulously avoided both her and the married lady before mentioned, until we separated for the night. When I went to take leave of the uncle and aunt she was near at hand, and omitted not to remind me softly, in my native tongue, how anxiously she should ex-expect me the following night.

The next day I communicated my intention to the faithful Cæsar, who grinned and smiled, and promised secresy; declaring at the same time that the young lady was a great friend of his, and that he loved her sincerely. Knowing his predisposition to somnolency, I made him promise to sleep at the threshold of the door, on the outside, that when I came home I could awaken him without alarming the family. To this he very readily agreed, saying,—

"Ha! massa very cunning; he know Cæsar sleep very strong."

My costume was already prepared; for, as a sea-faring man, I never was without a pair of trousers and a jacket. The night came; and, the moment the clock struck twelve, off I started, grasping a good stick in my hand in case of necessity, and, in less than a quarter of an hour, found myself at the entrance of the court-yard to which I had been directed. Although the night was dark, yet one could see any moving object at a few yards distance. I had no sooner entered the gate and turned to the right, than I perceived

the white garment of the negress, who was standing at the door: she said, softly,—

"Come here, massa, this is the way;" and I followed her cautiously up the staircase. When we got to the top, she quietly opened a door which led into a small antichamber, and from thence I was ushered into the apartment of her mistress, whom I found in an elegant dishabille. She smiled, and stretched forth her hand with a languishing expression of pleasure: after kissing it, of course I seated myself at her side; I pressed her hand in mine, and examined her pretty, soft, tapering fingers, whilst she exclaimed, with a sigh, "How happy you have made me by this visit!"

"The happiness," said I, "is all on my side, to be admitted into your confidence and friendship, and to obtain permission to enjoy your charming company at a time when half the world are wrapped in slumber."

"You, no doubt, think me imprudent," she rejoined, "notwithstanding this compliment: but I will tell you, without disguise, I am now so accustomed to your society, that, when not with you, I am unhappy. As you dine only twice or thrice a week at my uncle's, I have purposely invited you here at night; for, situated as I am, I could not receive you by day."

We now talked on various subjects; but, during the whole time, the negress never quitted her post: and the conversation of the young lady was frequently interrupted by sighs, that seemed to

come from the bottom of her heart, and the glances of her coal-black eyes beamed with love; to which, however, I was most cruelly indifferent.

At length the negress said,—

"Missee, it is most two o'clock." She put her hand in mine, and, with a melancholy tone of voice, and a look of soft attachment, said,—

"Alas! we must separate. But I beg you to come, the day after to-morrow, a little earlier; we shall then have more time to converse, and I have something particular to communicate."

On leaving the room, the swarthy abigail conducted me down stairs with great caution, and stood at the inner door until she saw me fairly off the premises. When in the street I felt secure, and walked slowly home, reflecting on what had passed, and racking my imagination to anticipate the "something particular" which she had to tell me. Indeed, knowing her to be positively affianced to the captain of a frigate, then on a cruise, but hourly expected home, I was at a loss to conceive why she endeavoured to captivate me, and expose herself so far as to invite me to her chamber by night! However, thought I, since I have gone so far, I will pay her at least one more visit, and hear what she has to impart. On arriving home, I found Cæsar stretched at full length on a mat placed across the threshold of the door, in full enjoyment of what Shakspeare styles "great nature's second course;" and it took half a dozen good shakes and thumps to rouse

and make him open his eyes. Indeed, he got up at first with them shut, and reeled to and fro so that I thought he was drunk; until, catching him by the arm, and giving him a pull that made him tremble all over, he unclosed the sable lids of his still more sable eyes, exclaiming,—

"Ha! that you, massa? Very good: I very glad. Come, massa, time for you go sleep now."

Indeed, I felt drowsy enough without his invitation; and was so perfectly cool, and so little agitated by my adventure, that I soon fell asleep, and did not awake until late the following morning.

This was the day on which I generally visited the uncle; but, very fortunately, I had received an invitation to dine with the governor that could not be refused, and it saved me the embarrassment of another meeting until I should see the damsel once again in her chamber.

When I mentioned the matter to my guardian, he said it was easy to conjecture her secret: she disliked the captain, and wished me to relieve her by marrying her myself. I said, I should be happy when she made me the proposition, as it would afford me at once an opportunity of breaking up our intimacy; which, under all circumstances, was not very creditable to her, and might draw me into a quarrel with her lover.

Determined to settle the business as speedily as possible, and having no sort of liking for her beyond the pleasure of conversing with a pretty

girl, I prepared myself full half an hour sooner than on the first visit. About thirty minutes before midnight I set out upon my expedition; and, not having patience to wait in the neighbourhood until the hour of twelve, I went immediately to the large gate. The night was cloudy, and unusually dark; but, knowing the premises, I found no difficulty in groping my way to the wicket, which, to my astonishment, I found open. I entered boldly; but, scarcely had I put my foot on the stairs, when I heard a man cough outside, close to the entrance. What was to be done? Run up stairs as quick as possible into the young lady's room? She would be frightened, and would alarm the family by her screams. Run out of the door with all my force, knock the fellow down, whoever he was, and then make off as fast as my legs could carry me? This appeared the best plan; and, as I was about to adopt it, I recollected that, as the negress lighted me down stairs, I observed a sort of arched recess or closet, under the staircase, large enough to conceal a man: in an instant, with a step as light as a panther, I gained the spot, and stood there, holding in my breath and remaining silent and stiff as a log of wood. The man now came in, muttering to himself that the devil, or his likeness, had passed him. After a pause of a second or two, he added, "No, it cannot be; if any one had gone up stairs, I should have heard his steps: unless it be really the devil, and he has flown up them. Curse upon

that stupid negress, who always leaves the door open! I 'll make her come down and lock it herself."

And he ran up stairs, to my great joy; for, if he had approached me, I must have knocked him down in order to make my escape. He grumbled all the way; and, presently, I heard him call the negress, and abuse her in very gross language, demanding how she dared to leave the door open?"

"Oh!" said she, "I have to go to the washing-room, and I meant to lock it as soon as I got the linen that I left there."

In a minute afterwards I heard her descending the staircase, and, when she approached the door, I moved from my hiding place to speak to her; but, before I had time to utter a word, she screamed, and, letting the candle fall, it went out: I hurried towards her, and said, in a low voice, "It is I,— don't you know me?"

Before she had time to reply, the man from the head of the stairs cried out to her,—

"What! has the old devil got hold of you at last? why do you scream and alarm the house?"

"Oh!" said the cunning wench, "just as I opened the door, a dog ran from under the staircase and almost frightened me out of my wits!"

"I wish it had been old nick, and that he had taken you with him!" retorted the man. "Go, get your linen, lock the door and go to bed:— there! your young mistress calls for you."

"I must go for the linen," said she; "young mistress knows I am gone for it, so don't trouble yourself about my mistress."

"Go to the devil, if you like!" said the fellow, whom I now discovered to be one of the household slaves; "only lock the door after you, or I'll tell our master to-morrow, and your black back shall pay for your negligence."

So saying, he shut the door at the head of the stairs, and retired.

"Thank God!" said the negress; "that troublesome fellow is gone: he is worse, ten thousand times, than old master himself." I now ventured to approach her again, saying, "Well, here I am; but I shall not go to your mistress this time, as it is not yet midnight, and all your folks are stirring. There's a piece of money for you: the next time I come, keep a better look out."

"Thank you, massa," said she; "you are more generous than other gentlemen: one young officer come five, six times, and never give poor negress a penny!"

"The captain I suppose you mean?"

"No! not the captain: another fine handsome young officer."

Oh, oh! thought I, then I am not the only one who has been making nocturnal assignations with the fair damsel! — "Good night; tell your mistress I hope she will excuse me, but I came too early, and do not like to run the risk of being

seen by the family: I shall see her to-morrow at dinner."

Without waiting for an answer, I darted out of the gate; and, the moment I reached the street, began to retrace my footsteps towards my lodgings with a quick pace. As I passed by the principal door of the mansion, where there was a lamp, I saw a person in a naval uniform approach and ring the bell. This appeared rather extraordinary, as the family, on those intermediate evenings, did not receive company; and I racked my imagination to guess who this visitor, at such an untimely hour, could be. Thinking of this incident and my narrow escape, I quickened my pace; but, on turning the corner of the next street, ran bump against a fellow, who was coming in an opposite direction, with such force that we both fell sprawling on the ground! Being the more active of the two, I instantly sprung upon my legs, and, brandishing my cudgel above his head, asked, with a threatening voice, what he meant? The fellow, raising himself on his knees, cried out for mercy, saying,—

"Oh! master, excuse me,—it was an accident. Hearing the town clock strike twelve, I was hastening home as fast as possible, lest I should be locked out."

I found he was a stout negro slave; and I felt not a little pleased at settling the business so easily, for he was an athletic fellow, who if he had been inclined for mischief, might have given me

some trouble before I could have got rid of him. In a few minutes after, I reached my lodgings, and, seeing a light still burning in my guardian's chamber, I went to him and related the incidents of the evening. He smiled, and said 'he was very happy the affair had thus ended; for he was now fully persuaded of what he always suspected—that she was an artful girl, and not very correct in her morals. I then went to bed, extremely rejoiced at having got rid of the appointed interview, and still more so at having discovered the real character of a young person who, in company, put on the airs of a prude of the first water. I determined, notwithstanding, to dine at her uncle's the following day, where I was sure of meeting her, and probably the gay lady to whom I had sworn allegiance.

The next morning, we heard a salute fired from a vessel in the harbour, which was immediately answered by the fort. Cæsar being at hand, I sent him off to enquire the cause. He returned shortly, grinning and smiling;—

"Oh! massa," said he, "great news! Last night the frigate come in; captain go see young mistress — this morning ship fire salute!"

Zounds! thought I, what a narrow escape! The officer I saw at the front door, by the light of the lamp, must have been no other than the captain himself!

The hour of dinner came, and off we went to the old uncle's, where we found a large party assem-

bled. The old gentleman received us with his usual polite attention, and immediately introduced us to the captain, who appeared to be a coarse, vulgar person, yet who thought himself so irresistible, that the woman he had chosen ought never dare to cast a glance at any one else. In short, he hovered about his beloved like a butterfly round a tulip; kissing her hand and caressing her at every moment. When I bowed to her, she changed colour; but, recovering her composure almost immediately, enquired after my health, &c., as if she had not seen me for a month. All this time the captain's eyes were fixed upon us with an anxious stare, as if suspicious of some secret understanding; but the young lady was too adroit to be disconcerted, and schooled her manners and her features with such consummate innocence and diffidence, that a much cleverer man than the captain might have taken her for purity itself. She contrived, towards the last, to give me a soft glance from under her long dark eyelashes, which, however, I pretended not to notice; and, perceiving that her lover's uneasiness was evidently on the increase, I retired to pay my respects to the colonel's lady, who, as usual, seemed prepared for some giddy adventure.

I drew near in the most respectful manner, saying, "Behold, madam, your true and loyal knight, who begs permission to lay his homage at the feet of his incomparable mistress."

"Admirably expressed!" said she "but badly

executed: retire a few paces, approach me again, and I 'll instruct you how to perform your duty."

She continued: "Now advance; and, when you get near to me sink one knee and repeat the same, words." When I did as she required she stretched forth her beautiful soft hand to me, which I kissed, and then rose and bowed to her.

"There!" said she, "you have performed yor task like a gallant chevalier, and have received your reward."

I took a seat by her; when she observed, in an under voice, "What a smile of satisfaction beams upon your features to day! To what am I to attribute it?"

"To the felicity," said I, "of beholding you."

"A truce with your nonsense; Mr. Brabazon! you know I hate such fulsome stuff: tell me, candidly, are you not pleased at the arrival of a certain gentleman?"

"Since you possess such deep penetration, I will confess to you that I am pleased; but it is entirely on account of my good friends, the uncle and aunt, who will have the happiness of seeing their niece soon settled for life."

"How much I admire your philanthropy! But come, let us now walk in the garden; dinner will will not be ready for some time, as several of the guests have not arrived. See, too, the loving captain and his fair one have already anticipated us. He is a jealous fellow, who acts the husband already; and I love to annoy him."

So saying, she put her arm within mine, and we strolled into the garden. In a little time we overtook them, and walked on together. A short conversation ensued, which was spirited while it lasted; but it was soon interrupted by the captain, who began to play with his fair companion's hand, and raised it to his lips at every instant. At length the colonel's lady, who was vexed at having the conversation broken in upon by this billing and cooing, exclaimed, as she pressed the back of her hand to my lips,—

"Come, young gentleman, I see no reason why the captain should have all the kissing to himself; here's my hand,—if it pleases you, salute it as much as you like."

I pressed it several times to my lips, and remarked how soft, how sweet, it was; whilst the captain frowned, bit his lips, and looked embarrassed. She now drew her hand back again, and said,—

"Captain, don't look so glum: do you suppose that no one has a right to kiss a lady's hand but yourself?"

"Madam," he replied, "I am engaged to this lady; and some allowance ought to be made for one who has been absent from his mistress several months."

"None whatever," said she; "I recollect you were just as bad before you went away. I have scarcely been married two months; but I should like to see if my husband would dare to fondle

me in company. Depend upon it, sir, this cooing and billing beforehand is the sure way of being soon cloyed: after marriage, you will think no more of your wife's pretty hand than if it was a piece of inanimate wood."

At this instant, the colonel came down the walk. Said the captain, "I shall address myself to your husband, madam, on the subject."

"As you please sir," retorted the lady: "I know very well his opinions on these matters."

When the husband drew near, the captain continued: "Colonel I have a complaint to make to you; your lady declares that I have no right to monopolise the kissing of a lady's hand in company: but recollect it was the hand of my intended bride; and, to disconcert me, she made Mr. Brabazon kiss her hand in the same manner. Do you allow your wife thus to bestow her hand to young gentlemen?"

"What a strange question!" said the colonel, laughing. "All I can say is, that I never kissed my wife's hand in company, before or after marriage, unless to salute her or bid her good-bye; and, as to her giving her hand to gentlemen, she is perfect mistress of that and of herself. I should be very sorry if the back of her hand was the road to her heart."

"Bravo! my dear husband," said my lovely companion; "I promise you half a dozen kisses for that speech."

The colonel bowed, and passed on; while the captain looked exceedingly foolish.

We were now summoned to dinner; and I took my seat along side of the colonel's lady, whom I found a very sensible, entertaining woman.

"You must think me very wild and very giddy," said she, "to take so many liberties with you on so short an acquaintance; but I rely upon you as a man of honour, and that you will not take advantage of my levity. My husband was right when he said my hand was not the road to my heart. That passage has long been occupied by his image alone, for I love him sincerely; and he is so perfectly sure of my attachment, that he indulges me in all my giddy flights. You see, now, I have given you a confidential account of myself; and as I hear you are a traveller, and are taking notes, dine with us to-morrow, and I will tell you the romantic history of my attachment and marriage with the colonel. It is a story that may serve to embellish your journal."

I accepted the invitation, and expressed my acknowledgments in the warmest terms for the confidence she had reposed in me. During the intimacy that existed between us afterwards, when I was admitted into the family as a friend, I had reason to be perfectly convinced of the firmness of her character, as well as of the sensible and judicious conduct of the husband, who, assured of her virtue and innocence, smiled at her levity.

CHAPTER IX.

THE following day, at the hour of dinner, we repaired to the colonel's, where we found only one more gentleman, and no ladies.

"You see," said the lady hostess, "I mean to keep my promise, having invited no females. After dinner my husband will entertain his two guests, and I shall relate to you my life and adventures." I again thanked her, and assured her of the gratification it afforded me to be allowed the honour of recording the history of a lady I so highly esteemed.

"You do me honour," said she, "in accepting the task; and I have the vanity to hope that, with the aid of your pen, I shall make a tolerably good figure in print. But, remember, I wish to appear neither better nor worse than I really am."

I promised a faithful recital of what she should communicate; and, dinner being announced, we repaired to the dining room to partake of it. It was no sooner finished than we retired to the garden, and, coffee being served, in a few minutes afterwards she began her story, as follows: —

"My father is a native of France, who served in the army until he obtained the rank of general;

but, being a man of warm temper and obstinate withal, he was frequently on the point of quitting the service in disgust. At length this took place, in consequence of an intrigue of some junior officers, who disliked him. He resigned in a fit of passion; vowing never again to have any friendship or connection with military men as long as he lived.

"In early youth, his imagination was excited by the accounts he had perused relative to the Isle of France; and he now determined to purchase an estate there, where he could amuse himself with agricultural pursuits, far from the bustle of the great world, which he detested. He accordingly sold his patrimony, and, placing his money in the hands of rich and respectable bankers, from whom he took letters of credit, he immediately sailed for this island. On arriving, he purchased himself an estate in the interior, on what is called the plain of Vilem, part of which extends amongst the mountains; from whence a torrent, or small river, flows, and intersects a large portion of his land.

"Nothing could have been better suited to my father's purposes; for the estate was not only in a high state of cultivation, but furnished with a noble mansion, mills, and magazines, besides a number of slaves, cattle, horses, &c. As soon as he was installed in his new possessions, all the neighbouring proprietors visited him, and endeavoured to draw him into their social meetings; but in vain: his temper was soured, and he kept

aloof from every one except one old gentlemen, his next neighbour. This individual had a wife and two beautiful and well educated daughters. My father was so much pleased with the eldest, that, after an intimacy in the family of eighteen months, he asked her hand in marriage. The old gentleman, who esteemed my father highly, immediately consented, and the more readily as he perceived the attachment to be mutual. On this occasion my father was obliged to accede to the wishes of her parents to celebrate the wedding with balls, dinners, and festivals, as was the custom amongst the inhabitants of the island. No sooner, however, were these festivities at an end, and the newly married couple fixed on their own estate, than he returned to his former retired way of living. This, however, was by no means disagreeable to my mother, whose love of a country life, and the rational, solid pleasures which accompany it, made her enter into his plans with the most cheerful approbation. Her lively disposition, added to this placid submission to his wishes, endeared her still more to him; and it is impossible that any two beings could live, and still continue to live, in greater love and harmony.

"The first year produced a son, my brother, now nineteen years of age, who is gone to Paris to finish his education; but with a positive command from my father never to enter into the military service. I was born near two years after him; and my father was so delighted at having a

daughter, that he took all possible pains, and spared no expense to make me mistress of all the acquirements possessed in France by women of the first rank: and, as he is a great musician himself, I have to thank his assiduity for the improvement of my native talents for that science.

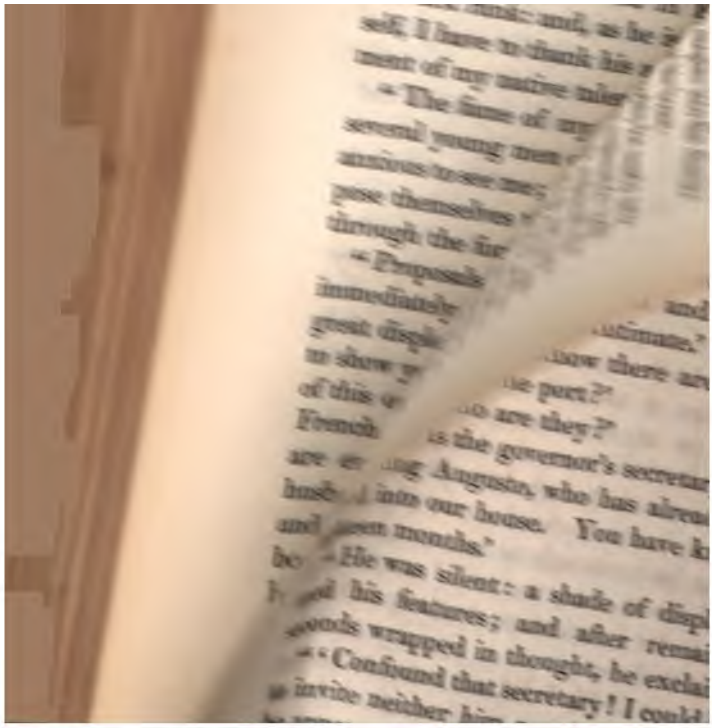
"The fame of my accomplishments, &c., made several young men of good families in the island anxious to see me; and many went so far as to propose themselves to my father, without even going through the formality of an introduction.

"Proposals of this sort disgusted me, and were immediately rejected by my father with marks of great displeasure. I mention these circumstances to show you how much the manners of the people of this once blessed island have changed since the French Revolution, and the introduction of what are erroneously styled 'liberal principles.' My husband, who was then only a captain, had seen and fell violently in love with me at our neighbour's: whilst, I confess, I was scarcely behindhand; his appearance, manners, and conversation, from the first moment, having made a deep impression upon my heart. As he never appeared in uniform, and my father had only seen him once or twice before he was introduced into the family, he knew nothing of his real profession: not having any suspicions of his attachment to me, he made no enquiries concerning him. Living a retired life, constantly occupied with agricultural pursuits, music, or study, he seldom went abroad;

and, when he did visit his favourite neighbour, which was only three or four times a-year, he never troubled himself to enquire into the characters of the persons he met at his house.

"Matters went on thus smoothly for nearly two years; and, although no positive explanation took place, yet our eyes had long since explained the secrets of our hearts, and our meetings and conversations were always of that confidential and endearing kind which can only exist between beings whose souls are moved by a mutual passion. I was then sixteen years of age. The anniversary of my birth-day arrived, and I understood that my father proposed giving a dinner and a musical party in a pavilion to be erected for the purpose near the cataracts of the small river, where, in quitting the side of the mountain, it bursts over a bed of craggy rocks to wind its silvery and placid stream through our lovely valley. I heard my lover was to arrive at our neighbour's, and that the family would also be invited; but how to manage so as to have him invited also? My mother was so timid on all these matters, that she never even proposed the reception of a visitor to her husband; so much did she love him, and respect his determination of living in perfect retirement.

"What was to be done? Women are fertile in expedients, and love gives courage to the weakest. Two days before the time fixed for inviting the guests, my father thus addressed me:—'My



el check to all my hopes, that I
ortunately the steward came in
alled his attention to some
could not have failed to
s painted on my fea-
rembling that suc-

am undone for ever.
so cruelly malignant as to
he might otherwise have long
ant?'
time he had finished with the steward,
ered sufficiently to avoid his remarking that
at he had said affected me so nearly: however, there was a tinge of melancholy, mixed with resentment, left on my countenance. The former arose from the death-blow my fond hopes of seeing Auguste had received; and the latter from the idea that there were, in our confined circle of acquaintances, persons base enough to labour to destroy the felicity of others, from motives of envy. After looking at me for a second or two, my father all at once exclaimed,—

"'Really, my child, I did not mean to distress you! You look vexed; but, cheer up, girl! I shall put my determination in force only as it regards my general arrangements: for this time we will make an exception. My neighbour may bring with him any visiters who have arrived from the port; but I most solemnly declare it is the

child, the festival of your birth-day draws near; and, as you will be then sixteen years of age, I have thought of relaxing a little from my rigid sequestered way of life, and of giving a fête on the occasion. Perhaps your mother has informed you of it?'

"I replied that she had, and expressed my gratitude for this instance of his paternal kindness and attention.

"'But, papa, who are you going to invite?'

"'Oh! our neighbours, of course; particularly Monsieur de la Plombières and his family, with whom we are the most intimate.'

"'But do you know there are two visitors at his house from the port?'

"'No; who are they?'

"'One is the governor's secretary: the other is the young Auguste, who has already been introduced into our house. You have known him full eighteen months.'

"He was silent: a shade of displeasure darkened his features; and after remaining a few seconds wrapped in thought, he exclaimed,—

"'Confound that secretary! I could have wished to invite neither him nor Auguste: for, although he appears a modest, gentlemanly young man, I have heard, within these three days past, that he is a captain in the army,—and you know my unalterable determination.'

"This speech, which revealed my father's discovery of my lover's profession, was such an unex-

pected and cruel check to all my hopes, that I almost fainted. Fortunately the steward came in at the moment, and called his attention to some pressing business, or he could not have failed to remark the despair that was painted on my features, and the paleness and trembling that succeeded.

"'Alas!' thought I, 'I am undone for ever. Who could have been so cruelly malignant as to inform him of what he might otherwise have long remained ignorant?'

"By the time he had finished with the steward, I recovered sufficiently to avoid his remarking that what he had said affected me so nearly: however, there was a tinge of melancholy, mixed with resentment, left on my countenance. The former arose from the death-blow my fond hopes of seeing Auguste had received; and the latter from the idea that there were, in our confined circle of acquaintances, persons base enough to labour to destroy the felicity of others, from motives of envy. After looking at me for a second or two, my father all at once exclaimed,—

"'Really, my child, I did not mean to distress you! You look vexed; but, cheer up, girl! I shall put my determination in force only as it regards my general arrangements: for this time we will make an exception. My neighbour may bring with him any visiters who have arrived from the port; but I most solemnly declare it is the

last time Auguste, or any other military man, shall enter my doors.'

"I kissed, and thanked him for his condescension: but little did he know the passion that had taken possession of my heart, and which now became consoled by the reflection that it would, at least, be gratified once more by the presence of him whom it adored.

"Full of this delightful anticipation, I ran to my mother, and related the conversation and my father's promise. I know not whether I discovered more than usual vivacity in pronouncing the name of Auguste, or from what other cause; but, suddenly fixing her eyes upon me, with a penetrating look, she said,—

"'Maria, you are in love! Tell me truly, do you not feel a much greater interest in the arrival of Auguste than our good neighbour's daughter? Be candid, my dear child. Do not attempt to conceal from a tender mother a secret that your countenance and manner have already revealed. I know, my dear child, you are above using deceit with your parent, and I await your confession as a matter of course.'

"At first, a cold chill ran through my veins; I became pale, and trembled: but, as my dear and best-beloved mother continued speaking, my cheeks were suffused with crimson; and, at the close of her affectionate appeal to my confidence, I threw myself upon her neck and burst into a flood of tears. She endeavoured to soothe me by

the most endearing expressions, and wiped away my tears, entreating me to be calm and composed.

"'To be in love, my child,' said she, 'is not criminal. The passion in itself is natural and legitimate: it is only the illicit and unrestrained indulgence of it that is interdicted.'

"'Alas! my dearest mother,' said I, recovering myself a little; 'I know, that to love is not a fault; but I have committed a crime, by becoming attached to one whose profession will draw upon me the resentment of my beloved father. You know in what manner my acquaintance with Auguste commenced; and that we were several months intimate, before either you or I were aware that he was in the military service."

"'True, my dear child,' replied my mother; 'it is an untoward circumstance I greatly regret, and which could only have occurred in this distant colony, where officers are not bound to wear their uniforms at all times, added to our sequestered mode of life and disinclination to meddle with the affairs of others. However, the die is cast. It is too late to speak of preventatives when the disease is at its height. Let us rather consult on the best mode of remedying the evil, and rendering as light as possible the many crosses, cares, and anxieties to which this unfortunate passion will inevitably expose you. I have much influence over my husband, except on this one particular point: however, the longer we can

keep him ignorant of your attachment the better; or, at least, until I can find a suitable occasion to impart to him what, if suddenly pressed upon his notice, might be productive of unpleasant consequences. Your lover's family is noble and respectable, his own conduct honourable, his reputation unsullied, and, though not very rich, he is by no means poor. These circumstances, added to his modesty and good sense, are powerful arguments in his favour; and may, in time, enable me to combat, successfully, a prejudice engendered in your father's mind by disgust and disappointment. You are both, as yet, young, and the delay of a year or two more, ere you become united, will be rather advantageous than otherwise.'

"I again threw myself on my dear mother's bosom, which I bathed with tears of filial gratitude. We then talked freely of my passion, which I detailed to her in the most undisguised manner, and did not fail to lay a stress upon my lover's delicate attentions and honourable conduct; for, though he had given me every possible proof of the ardour of his attachment, he had never formally explained it, or sought from me a confession in words.

"Anticipating the delight of seeing him again, I visited the pavilion almost every day, and the time glided rapidly away. It was erected on a small island, about a quarter of a mile in length, formed by the separation of the river into two

branches, a short distance from the spot where it bursts over the rocks. It commands a view, not only of the cataracts, but of the course of the stream for two or three miles, as it forces its foaming waters through the ravines of the mountains, which, as well as the craggy rocks bounding it, are covered with tall evergreen trees and shrubs.

"How often have I gazed with rapture on those delicious, and never to be forgotten, haunts of my youth! Before you leave the island, you must accompany my husband and myself on a visit to this my enchanted island."

"I have been there already," said I, and immediately gave her the detail of a number of interesting objects with which she was well acquainted; but added, "I shall be happy to revisit this paradise again, in company with the presiding goddess of the place." She smilingly replied,—

"My pretensions to that celestial appellation are extremely slender; yet I must confess that, if ever I feel a sentiment of exaltation above the common lot of humanity, it is when I find myself at a spot where

"'Nature seems to sit alone
Majestic on her craggy throne.'

"But to proceed with my story. You have, no doubt, heard how, for some years, the mountains on our side of the island were the almost impregnable retreat of a runaway slave and his band of desperate associates — himself the most deter-

mined of all, and who went by the name of 'Nimble Caton,' or 'The Mountain Cat.' For upwards of ten years, during which he infested the country round, most singular to relate, he had never once made an inroad upon our little valley, although it is immediately in the vicinity of his haunts. Whether this arose from any particular respect he felt towards the inhabitants, or purposely to lull them into security, is what I cannot exactly say; but certain it is, that, until he had been provoked by one of our planters and his slaves, who fired at a small party of the band passing peaceably through the part of his habitation that skirted the mountains, he never once attempted to depredate upon us. This wanton attack urged him to revenge; and, with that vindictive spirit so characteristic of the natives of Africa when once roused, they came down in a body upon his plantation, murdered several people, and ravaged his fields of all their productions. A retribution so dreadful struck terror into our hearts. Several families quitted the valley altogether, and those who remained took care to erect small earth forts near their dwellings, and furnished themselves with arms and ammunition for their defence.

"The Mountain Cat had several times laid in wait for the women, and carried five or six of them off to his retreat. Amongst the number were two planters' daughters, who had the imprudence to walk out alone, some distance from their homes, along the borders of the valley. Indeed,

I used often to stroll about unaccompanied, only except by one woman slave, until I heard of these mishaps, and my parents interdicted my moving beyond the precints of the garden. This was a cruel disappointment to one who loved to ramble as I did; for, when my lover happened to arrive at our neighbour's, he knew my haunts, and sometimes contrived to meet me with the ladies of the family. However, the Mountain Cat having been wounded, and closely pursued by Auguste himself, at the head of a party of soldiers, he had not attempted to molest our happy valley for several months. This by no means operated to make my father less cautious in his preparations; for, on the celebration of the anniversary of my birth, he ordered a stock of arms and ammunition to be deposited near the pavilion, ready to be used at a moment's warning.

"On these occasions, it is the custom of the island to assemble at an early hour of the evening, or, if the fête is by day, at eleven o'clock in the morning, when the guests partake of a breakfast; after which, the party amuse themselves in various ways until dinner, and a ball concludes the festivity.

"The happy moment at length arrived, and I saw, with delight, our guests gradually filling the pavilion. Amongst the first who arrived was our neighbour's family, with young Auguste in full uniform. On inquiring into the cause, he told me had been despatched, with about thirty sol-

diers, with orders to find out the retreat of the Mountain Cat, and bring him and his band to the port, either dead or alive. 'This,' he observed, 'was a ridiculous order with such a handful of men, since it was well known that Caton himself had double that number under his command, all active, smart fellows, accustomed to scamper over the rocks and precipices like goats.'

"His recital greatly damped the pleasure and delight I first experienced at the sight of my beloved. I could almost have wished him at the port again, so much did I feel alarmed at the idea of his having a rencontre with the ferocious savage, whose courage was known to be undaunted, and whose artifices had hitherto enabled him to elude, or to cut off, the bravest and most experienced troops who had been sent against him. Knowing my lover's courage and ardour, I shuddered for his safety, and already fancied I beheld him engaged in combat with the terrible and desperate outlaw, who had sworn never to be taken alive.

"Our interview was interrupted by the approach of a group of ladies and gentlemen, whom we immediately joined, and entered the pavilion, where a splendid breakfast was prepared. A band of musicians were placed at the distance of about two hundred yards, on the banks of the stream, in a tent erected for them; and the melodious notes, floating on the breeze, and repeated by the

murmuring echoes of the neighbouring precipices, were truly enchanting. During the repast I sat opposite my lover, who often bent his eyes upon me with the most passionate regard; but it was only for an instant: he seemed to gaze almost constantly at the rocks and precipices, which bounded the opposite side of the river, with an anxiety and an impatience for which I could not account; and thrice, during the breakfast, his servant came and whispered to him. The last time I observed his features with great attention, and as the man departed, I overheard him say,—

"'That's well—go to your station.'

"One of his friends, who sat near him, inquired if any thing was the matter?

"'Nothing,' he carelessly replied, 'merely some orders for my lieutenant.' Then, turning towards me with an expression of satisfaction that I had not noticed before, his countenance seemed to assume its wonted composure, and his dark brilliant eye beamed with love and fondness. The heat of the day was such that we were obliged to confine ourselves to the pavilion and the tents around it, where card and billiard tables were placed for those who loved play. In short, every amusement was provided to wile away the hours until the afternoon; when the sun, sinking behind the mountains, permits us to walk abroad and inhale the freshness of the evening breeze, filled with the fragrance of the aromatic shrubs and

flowers, which, in our climate, do not emit their odours until the heat of the day is passed.

"Auguste, who had been with the ladies all the early part of the morning, now suddenly quitted us, excusing himself by saying he must be absent for a short period on business concerning the service, but that he would be back in time for dinner. I therefore felt no longer uneasy, concluding he had received some orders from the commander at the port. However, five o'clock came, and he did not return. Our neighbour's daughter, who, like myself, was extremely fond of walking along the banks of the river, in the direction of the cataracts, seeing all the ladies engaged in various pursuits, proposed that we should take a stroll there. It was a delightful evening: the music commenced a sweet and pensive air just as we reached the banks of the river, and, at that moment, could I only have had Auguste at my side, I should have been the happiest of mortals. But there was something unaccountable in his lengthened absence; and this reflection produced so much anxiety in my bosom, that the music and all the romantic beauties of nature lost their interest, and I became pensive, almost to melancholy. As we approached what is called the lower cataract, where a number of flat rocks traverse the bed of the river, and form a sort of natural bridge, the young lady who accompanied me suddenly seized my arm, and exclaimed, — 'Look,

Maria ! on the other side of the river, among the rocks, are some of Auguste's party.'

" Turning in the direction to which she pointed, I saw two men, apparently soldiers. It immediately occurred to me that Auguste had purposely placed them there to prevent our party from being surprised, and I involuntarily exclaimed,—

" ' Ah, how kind and prudent it was in him to think of us !'

" Scarcely had I uttered these words, when, suddenly, we heard a wild uproar at the pavilion. The firing of guns, and the screaming of women, were followed by a number of confused noises, but too plainly indicating that some dreadful occurrence had taken place. Pale and trembling, our hearts sunk within us, and we hastily turned round to retrace our footsteps. Hardly had we advanced a dozen paces, ere I felt myself grasped round the waist by a powerful arm. I immediately fainted, and had not the slightest feeling or recollection of what happened to me afterwards, until I awoke, as if from a troubled dream; and, dreadful to relate! beheld my lover in close combat with two athletic negroes, from whom he had received a wound in the arm, and his blood trickled down upon my face and bosom! This horrible sight froze the vital current of my heart, and again I swooned away."

Here the lovely narrator paused. Deeply affected at the recollection of that dreadful moment, she sighed heavily, until tears came to her relief.

"Excuse a woman's weakness," said she, after a few minutes' silence; "but the bare remembrance of that day is painful. Judge, then, of what the reality must have been. It is but seldom I can prevail upon myself to refer to it; and you must receive it as an instance of a very particular friendship that I am induced to give you these details."

I expressed my gratitude in the warmest terms, and begged her to proceed, if she felt equal to the task.

"I cannot tell how long my swoon continued," said the amiable narrator, "but, on recovering, I found myself in bed at my father's house. Feeling my hands pressed on either side, I looked up, and beheld my father.

"'Oh, my beloved, my long-lost parent!' I exclaimed.

"'Compose yourself, my child,' said he, clasping me to his heart; 'see, yonder is your mother.'

I turned my head towards her, and said, as she embraced me,—

"'Ah, my dearest mother! where have I been so long from you?' and I pressed her to my bosom. She replied in gentle accents, telling me to be calm,—that all was well.

"'Don't talk any more, my child,' said she, 'at least for an hour. Take some of this nourishing drink, and then the doctor will permit you to converse.'

"'What do you mean?' said I. 'Have I then been ill?'

"'Yes, my dear child,' replied my father, 'very ill, and you are still weak; repose yourself awhile, therefore, and we will relate every thing, and suffer you to question us.'

"This injunction was sufficient; I took the nourishing drink that was offered to me: it seemed delicious. I then lay quite still for a few minutes, and fell asleep. When I awoke, I felt strong and refreshed. Whether I had dreamt of my beloved or not, I do not remember; but the first thing I said to my mother was, 'Where is Auguste? what has become of him? I thought I saw him murdered!'

"'Compose yourself, my beloved child,' said she; 'he is well. He has received orders to return to the port, but he will be here in the course of a week.'

"Three days passed away, and I had acquired strength enough to walk about my room, before my father would permit me to listen to the dreadful occurrences at the pavilion. At length my impatience and anxiety rose to such a height, that, fearing they might produce a fever, he confided the task to the tender and prudent care of my mother. She began by informing me that, three days before my birth-day, my lover had discovered, by means of a faithful negro spy, who knew all the haunts and manœuvres of the Mountain Cat, that he was in our neighbourhood.

'Alarmed lest he should attack us in the midst of our festival, when we should be taken in a defenceless state, he spoke to our neighbour to advise your father to prepare guns and ammunition, in a tent set apart for that purpose. In the dead of the night, previous to the anniversary of your birth, he divided his thirty men into three parties, gave them provisions and ammunition, and directed them to cross the river and conceal themselves in separate spots amongst the crags and precipieces at the foot of the mountains, close to the river. One party was stationed immediately opposite the pavilion, another a little above it, and the third just below. Auguste, after he left us, went up to the cataracts, with a very stout and courageous negro of known fidelity, to meet his spy, who was to give him certain intelligence whether the Mountain Cat intended to attack the pavilion or not. This man communicated the whole plan of attack premeditated by the band; and where the Mountain Cat, with the bravest man of his troop, had secreted himself, in the caverns of the large rocks, to watch an opportunity of carrying you off as soon as the fight should commence. This he meant to perform, in revenge for the close manner in which Auguste had pursued and wounded him on a former occasion. Your lover then hastened back, and communicated to your father all his plans and arrangements; and requested him not to lose a moment in putting himself and his friends in a

state of defence; as, in all probability, the Mountain Cat would choose the moment for attack when he supposed the company were all lulled into security, and enjoying themselves at dinner.

" 'This done, he returned hastily towards the cataracts, accompanied by his sturdy and faithful negro. They were each armed with a brace of pistols, besides a trusty cutlass; and Auguste, throwing off his uniform, dressed himself in a light thin jacket and trowsers, so as to have free use of his limbs. He had scarcely approached his place of destination, when he heard the firing at the pavilion, and in an instant after saw the ferocious bandit with you upon his shoulder, and the other negro with his friend's daughter, just about to cross the river at the flat rocks I have before described.

" 'Though they pursued them with all possible speed, the Mountain Cat and his comrade were so swift of foot, they could not overtake them until after they had crossed and began to ascend the mountain slope. Looking round, and seeing themselves followed so closely that there was no possibility of escaping, they laid their burdens upon a rock, and, turning round, prepared to meet their foes with that undaunted spirit for which they have always been celebrated.

" 'Caton had a pistol and a cutlass in his belt; his follower was armed with the latter weapon only. Auguste, who recognised the Mountain Cat the instant he saw him, and who was roused

to madness at seeing you lie on the rock, to all appearance dead, now called to his servant to attack the other negro. "But leave yon villain," said he, "to my vengeance." As he rushed forwards, the robber fired his pistol. The ball struck him on the side, but, glancing off from his ribs, it inflicted but a slight contusion. Auguste then discharged his pistol, which wounded the Mountain Cat in the left shoulder; and, after firing a second, the ball of which took place in his neck, he rushed upon him, sword in hand. Caton defended himself with great skill and bravery, giving his adversary a furious backhanded cut upon his left arm just below the shoulder, which laid it open to the bone. The violence of the blow beat down Auguste's guard; but, being a cool and skilful swordsman, he recovered himself before his enemy had time to repeat his blow, and, with a well-directed cut at his head, he split his scull and laid him dead at his feet. Almost at the same instant he had the satisfaction to see the faithful negro, who had also received two or three deep wounds, pierce his adversary to the heart. Wounded as he was, the brave youth raised you upon his shoulder, and, following the steps of his servant, attempted to recross the river; but, just as he got half way, his foot slipped, and he fell into the deep centre channel, weakened by exertion and loss of blood. The rapid current hurried him down towards the pavilion, until, fortunately, he was thrown against a flat rock that rose a little

above the surface of the water. On reaching the bank he laid you on the ground, under the sheltering branches of a large tree, and was busily engaged in endeavouring to restore animation, when he perceived two stout negroes, armed with cutlasses, wading from the mountain side of the river to attack him. He prepared to meet his assailants, firm as the rock on which he stood. On the opposite bank of the river he saw his faithful attendant, who appeared in the utmost anxiety for his master's safety; but, being unable to swim, and the channel being wide and rapid, he could render him no assistance. Just at this critical juncture two soldiers, who were sent to intercept stragglers, appeared in sight, and to them he made signs that some one wanted their assistance. They ran along the shore, and, after passing a jutting precipice, discovered their captain engaged with the two negroes. Though he had wounded one of them desperately in the neck, the other, who was more expert, had given him two deep sabre cuts, which bled profusely; and, but for this timely aid, he must inevitably have been overcome. He was now so weak, from loss of blood, that he fell down on the rock, and the soldiers conveyed you both home on a litter.'

CHAPTER X.

"When my mother had concluded her painful narrative, I exclaimed, 'Where, oh! where is my beloved? my protector! my saviour! Oh! my dear mother, let me throw myself upon his neck, and thank him for saving us all from destruction. Ah! in pity, lead me to him. Do not detain me any longer in this horrible suspense! For God's sake, my dearest mother, listen to my entreaties! Your refusal will kill me!'

"'Hold, my beloved child!' said she; 'listen to reason and prudence. Would you be the death of Auguste—of him who is the object of your tenderest affections—who has saved your life, and the lives of your parents and friends, at the risk of his own?'

"'How so, my dear mamma?' said I: 'oh! explain yourself. What do you mean?'

"She informed me that the wounds of my brave deliverer had been attended by a violent fever, and that the doctor had interdicted, in the most positive manner, the sight of any of his friends until the disorder abated.

"Though my mother's recital overwhelmed me with grief, I promised obedience to the doctor's commands, whilst my heart was a prey to the tor-

tures of disappointment and impatience. Every moment that I was deprived of seeing him seemed an age to me. I fancied him much worse than he really was, and that my dear mother, in her tenderness, had been cautious to conceal from me his real condition. This agitation and suspense affected both my health and spirits; and, the surgeon having declared my lover out of danger, my own physician advised my parents to let me see him, as the only means of calming my anxiety and restoring me to health.

"Accordingly, the following day, my father himself led me into Auguste's apartment Weak and emaciated as he was, he rose from his couch to meet me, and I fell upon his bosom in a swoon. Being unable to support me, he was obliged to reseat himself, and my parents placed me at his side. In a minute or two I returned to my senses, when I found my head on his bosom; and, gazing upon me tenderly, he exclaimed 'Oh, lovely Maria! live for him who adores you, and who promises to devote his life to you alone!'

"His words were like a healing balm to all my anxiety; I embraced him, saying, 'I am well, dearest Auguste; — God grant that you may soon recover your health!'

"'Oh!' said he immediately, 'your presence will soon cure me! — I feel already much better.'

"My father now interrupted us by presenting Auguste with a roll of parchment, saying, 'Here, my brave and noble young friend, is a colonel's

commission which the governor has begged me to hand you; and at the same time to inform you of his intention to visit and thank you, personally, to-morrow for the very essential services you have rendered to the colony.'

"Auguste rose, and was about to make his formal acknowledgments to my father; but he embraced him, and, taking my hand, he put it into his, saying, 'Now, it is my turn. — Here, receive this gift from a father whose gratitude can only end with his life, and who is proud to call so noble and generous a youth his son-in-law.'

"We both threw ourselves on his neck. The old gentleman wept aloud; and my mother, whom we also embraced tenderly, was not less affected. To explain to you the happiness I felt at that moment is not in the power of words."

My lovely friend now paused again. — She seemed touched at the recollection of this happy conclusion; and I did not wonder at it, for I felt myself affected almost to tears. After a while she added, "I have told you my history. — You have known us long enough to form some judgment of the characters of my husband and myself; and I must conclude by assuring you, we live in the most perfect harmony, and I trust we shall continue to do so for the remainder of our lives."

At the close of my friend's romantic narrative, I could perceive it had a great effect upon her spirits. She became pensive and silent; and I endeavoured

to divert her thoughts from dwelling on the story of her marriage, which although eventually fortunate, was certainly accompanied by some dreadful incidents, the recollection of which were sufficient to damp her vivacity.

"What," said I, "is the colonel's intention? Does he mean to continue in the service and return to France, or retire and lead a quiet life in the interior of this romantic island."

"My father and mother," said she, "are now growing old, and they are very desirous we should live with them. My husband, who is as much attached to them as if they were his own kindred, — his parents being dead, — has determined to resign his commission, and retire to our delightful habitation. In so doing, he will render my father and mother happy, and I shall rejoice to inhabit the spot where I was born and educated, and which is endeared to me by the tenderest of all recollections, — my first and only love."

"You are too fond of society," said I, "to think of burying yourself in the country all your life."

"Quite the reverse," she replied: "the tone I assume here at the port is not exactly natural to me. I put it on to amuse myself with those who are fond of having a character to criticise, and act so as to make them believe I am exactly what their envy and malice could wish me to be. Just as they are persuaded of the depth of their penetration, I change my colour, like a chameleon, and

throw the scandalous committee into confusion and despair. No! I detest the society of this place. We have some excellent neighbours in the country, whom we see as often as we please; and then, having leisure for music, drawing, reading, and walking, I never find time hang heavy on my hands. Here I have not a moment to myself; and the company one meets is so ill assorted, that I shall be highly pleased the moment my good husband puts his plan into execution."

The colonel and my guardian having now joined us, I thanked her, in their presence, for her very interesting story, and begged to be permitted to take my leave, that I might record it on my journal whilst the incidents were still fresh in my memory.

In returning towards our lodgings, we suddenly felt a degree of heat wafted over us by the land wind, such as we had never experienced before. It was most oppressive, and my guardian immediately said he thought it indicated some extraordinary change in the weather. On reaching the door of our dwelling, we met my negro servant, whom I questioned concerning the close, disagreeable, and heavy state of the atmosphere.

"Oh, massa," said he, "that is a bad sign; I fear we shall have 'nother strong wind." Upon further enquiry I found that, four years previously, there had been a most violent hurricane, which had done a vast deal of mischief—what Cæsar called a *strong wind.*

I slept little during the night, the heat of the room being oppressive beyond example; and, although I opened the windows, I found no relief from the admission of the external air. When day returned, there was the same heat and stillness as on the preceding evening, and about mid-day it was suffocating. Not a breath of air could be perceived, and the sensation was peculiarly disagreeable, for it seemed to check respiration. This profound and solemn calm, which affected the spirits as well as the body, was a precursor to the dreadful events which I shall here record.

We sat down to dinner, but every one appeared little inclined to eat. The conversation was broken, and was interrupted, from time to time, by reports of an unusual swelling of the ocean, and the bustle it occasioned at the port. I left the company early, and walked towards the seashore. During the greater part of the day, a rumbling, subterraneous noise had been heard, which was rendered more awful by the thundering shocks of an enormous swell, from the south-east, against the rocks and caverns of the coast. This, and the screaming of sea-fowl, that flew wildly in all directions, were the frightful and tremendous sounds which broke in upon the death-like stillness heretofore prevailing. As I walked along, I observed, in several places, the leaves, grass, and dust carried into the air by a sort of partial whirlwind. On approaching the beach these sounds became more terrific, intermixed with the shouting of the

seamen and others, actively employed in endeavouring to secure the shipping; for the waves rose mountains high, without a breath of wind, and had already dashed three or four large and valuable vessels against the rocks; whilst others sunk, never to rise again, or were thrown up, high and dry, upon the coast. The view, from the hill, of the waves beginning to roll, and at length rising in mountains to the skies, during a calm, was so extremely awful and sublime, that I was riveted to the spot, and gazed upon the spectacle before me in silent dread and astonishment. In my reverie, I pictured to myself the great difficulty there would be, even in the open ocean, to keep a vessel from foundering, in the midst of such enormous waves, without the least wind to assist her.

All at once I felt a tap upon the shoulder, and turning round, I beheld an acquaintance with whom I had dined at my friend's table, and who, also, left the company at an early hour.

"Ho!" said he, "what are you doing here all alone, and so deeply absorbed in thought?"

"I have been contemplating," said I, with emotions of awe, "this convulsion of the elements; which, I presume, is the forerunner of a hurricane. In my voyages at sea, I have experienced many violent storms; but neither before or after them did I ever behold the billows roll so tremendously as at present."

"I have lived some years upon this island,"

said he; "during which time there have been three hurricanes, all of them preceded by calms like the present, and the subterraneous murmurs you have heard to-day; but, I must say, I never saw the swell so high, or the aspect of things altogether so alarming." He then directed my attention towards the horizon, where a long black streak appeared to lie upon the sea.

"That," said he, "is the hurricane itself. It advances rapidly; and with such violence, that, in a short time, those enormous swells, which deform the surface of the ocean, will be at once subdued. It was its distant impulse that has driven them in such terrible shocks upon the coast; but now they will burst upon it in white foam. However, we must not remain in this bleak place until it strikes us, or we may be thrown upon the ground and be severely wounded. Let us await a minute to see its effects upon the waves; we will then descend, and take shelter in yonder large stone house near the port, which affords a good prospect of the sea."

As he had predicted, the wind, in an instant, smoothed the billows, and whitened their surface with foam. We hurried down the hill, and arrived just in time to take refuge under the porch of the house as the wind struck us. Several persons were thrown prostrate who attempted to brave it; and when it first assailed the building, that was only two stories high, it trembled to its foundation. For the first two hours the wind came in

sudden blasts, which unroofed many of the houses, twisted off the trunks of large trees, and tore up several by the roots.

The roaring of the waves, and the subterranean rumblings, were now drowned in the louder and more terrific whistling of the wind, and the surf that beat in one incessant murmur against the rocky shore. To this must be added, the crashing of shattered vessels and timber; the rustling of trees, whose branches were broken short off; the faint cry of human beings in distress; the screaming of birds; and, I might add, in the words of the song, "the groans of the sphere:" all in horrible confusion! Vessels were seen dashed to pieces against the pointed rocks; others sunk at their anchorage; houses rocked on their foundations; the roofs of others were borne away upon the wind; and, altogether, a more shocking and awful sight, or more terrific sounds, cannot well be imagined. As I stood for some time contemplating, in silent horror, the dreadful effects of the destructive elements, I felt a sensation of the most painful kind at the consciousness of my own nothingness, and incapacity to afford the slightest aid to those unfortunate fellow-creatures who perished before my eyes.

"Alas!" I exclaimed, "how impotent and insignificant a being is man, in the midst of such a convulsion of nature! He, who in his pride and vain glory aims at the sovereignty of the world, is here no better than the reptile beneath his feet!"

Whilst I was thus reflecting on my weakness, my faithful Cæsar came, and said he had been seeking me every where, and that it was time to go home: "for," added he, "it will soon be night, and then there will be much rain. Come, massa, let us go home." Before we started, he warned me, whenever a heavy gust of wind came, to lie down, otherwise I should be dashed to the ground and hurt. After a difficult walk of near a quarter of a mile, in which I was greatly assisted by Cæsar, who warned me when to lie down and when to walk again, we got safe to our house. My guardian was glad to see me, for he began to be alarmed for my safety. He had been, also, as far as the declivity of the hill, but returned the moment he saw the first streaks of the hurricane upon the ocean.

Our house was of wood, one story high, composed of four apartments and a kitchen. The kitchen and three of the rooms were old; but the end room to leeward, where my guardian slept, had been recently built, and, the roof being lower than that of the others, it was consequently less exposed to the gale. However, conceiving the centre one, where I lodged, to be the safest, I invited my guardian, Cæsar, and our cook, to come to me. We, accordingly, all sat huddled together, talking of the horrible sights we had witnessed, and listening to the crashing of timbers, for one or two of the houses next to us were un-

roofed whilst we were speaking of the danger of such an accident. Indeed, we foresaw that it must take place; for, when all the doors and windows were shut, the lights flared as if they had been in the open air. My guardian now remarked, that there were holes about the eaves or in the ceiling, and advised me to have my trunks, bedding, &c., removed immediately into his room, where the candle had been observed to burn steadily.

This warning alarmed me, and, with the help of Cæsar and the cook, we soon removed every thing, except a few chairs and a table, which were not wanting. Having omitted to bring some books, that were on the table in my room, Cæsar and myself lighted a candle and went for them. Just as we were about to return, a terrible gust unroofed the three rooms and the kitchen. Several large timbers, &c. fell about our ears, but fortunately none of them hit us. We returned quickly, barring and securing the door of the only remaining apartment in the best manner; and happy that the cook's lantern still preserved a light, for we should otherwise have been obliged to sit in the dark. Sleep was impossible; for the wild uproar of the elements, and the crashing noise on all sides, added to torrents of rain, which beat against the shutters, prevented us from feeling in the least disposed for slumber. Indeed, we were kept in bodily fear the whole time; for we heard the wind rush violently through the adjoining apartments, occasionally bursting

open the shutters, and tearing every thing to pieces. When we spoke to each other, we were obliged to raise our voices; for the noise of the wind and rain was so loud, it drowned the ordinary tone of conversation. In this way we were condemned to pass the night, the greater part of the time in solemn silence, gazing at each other, and expecting, every minute, to have our room also uncovered and exposed to the inclemency and rigours of the hurricane.

Becoming tired and drowsy towards morning, we sometimes dosed for a few seconds, and then started up again, on hearing some frightful disturbance. About six o'clock in the morning, although the wind still blew with great violence, it seemed steadier; the noises were less loud and frightful; and then, overpowered with sleep and fatigue, we retired to rest.

About one o'clock we awoke, and found the wind still violent; but it was easy to perceive that the great rage of the storm was past.

Whilst the servants were preparing breakfast, which they accomplished at the small low house of a neighbour, we walked through our unroofed rooms, and into the street, to behold the work of devastation. Every thing in our apartments was broken to pieces; but the scene without was truly lamentable!

Most of the houses in our neighbourhood were also of wood, and several of them had been unroofed; many of the inmates were killed or

wounded, their furniture broken, and themselves exposed, during the night, to the inclemency of the storm. A small wooden house at the corner of the street, that the hurricane struck obliquely, was turned half round upon its base; and it rocked so, at one time, the inhabitants thought it would have been overturned.

It was late in the afternoon before the gale ceased sufficiently to allow one to walk abroad conveniently. We then went to the port, when the scene of destruction that presented itself was horrible beyond description! Hardly a single ship escaped injury. Their fragments, intermingled with a number of dead bodies, floated about among the rocks. In short, wherever we turned our eyes, nothing was beheld but devastation and ruin: every one and every thing looked sad and dejected. To relate all the incidents which occurred would require a volume apart: suffice to say, that the most singular occurrence was the loss of the look-out house, which, with the sentinel who mounted guard there, was blown from a high cliff into the sea. The hurricane commenced with the rainy season, and the bad weather continued about twenty days. Bountiful and prolific as Nature is, in this beautiful spot, near six weeks elapsed before it began to reassume its former lively appearance. Then she seemed doubly reanimated, and soon effaced the traces of a dreadful scourge, which generally visits the island once in the course of four or five years.

We had been now between three and four months on the island, and my guardian was anxious that I should see a portion of India, where my countrymen hold such unbounded sway. The owner of the ship in which we intended to embark was going in her himself, and invited us to partake of his cabin and table, without any charge for our passage.

"You are both seafaring men," said he, "and have a good deal of experience. All I shall ask is your advice and assistance; for the captain I have engaged, and the chief officer, are not very expert, and, what is worse, they are fond of the bottle."

"Why did you engage them?" said my guardian.

"Because," replied the owner, "I am pressed to depart, in order not to lose the good season, and there are no others to be had on the island."

We accepted his liberal offer, and promised to afford him all the assistance in our power.

"But," said I, "we shall have fair wind and a smooth sea all the voyage, as the monsoon is in our favour. If you can only make your officers keep their reckoning correctly, and take observations of the heavenly bodies when they are in distance, they cannot fail to find their way in safety."

"This I am well aware of," he replied; "but I doubt the possibility of keeping them sober."

We bade farewell to all our good friends on

the Isle of France, and in four days more were floating on the bosom of the great Indian Ocean. The fifth or sixth day after we were at sea, the captain and officer began to drink, although they had solemnly promised positively to forbear during the passage. The genteel and generous conduct of the owner had won my good will; and the anxiety I felt for the safety of a valuable vessel and cargo, as well as the lives of all on board, made me keep a strict watch upon their actions, and I undertook the reckoning myself from the start. Although they were never absolutely intoxicated, they were almost constantly muddled, and I soon found some gross errors in their calculations, particularly in their distances in taking the stars, to find the longitude, and that they were many miles behind the ship's reckoning. The currents at that season of the year were in our favour, and the allowance they made for them was much too small. This my guardian and myself soon discovered; for we took sights, and kept a separate reckoning. We continued to watch them closely; for, as we were approaching the Maldive Islands, we heard them say they meant to go through the nine-degree channel, from whence they conceived themselves much farther distant than, by our calculation, they really were.

By the charts and directions, we knew those islands were extremely low, many of them being mere sand banks, consequently very difficult to see in misty weather; and fogs often prevail in

their neighbourhood during the south-west monsoon. Another passenger, who was also a seafaring man, an American, named Captain Tonin, occupied himself in taking sights, &c. with us, and found his reckoning correspond exactly with ours.

We communicated our remarks to the owner, who appeared alarmed, begging us to keep a good look-out; but added, that his captain had been recommended as a correct navigator, in spite of his tippling. The next morning, according to my calculation, we were in the centre of the seven-degree channel; but, by the captain's account, yet many miles from it. The weather was so thick and misty, we could not see ten yards a-head of the ship; and, with a light breeze a-beam, we went about four knots an hour, through a smooth sea. As I was standing, leaning on the quarter railing, talking with the owner, I perceived a strong smell of sea-weed. It came upon the breeze, and was the more remarkable, as there was none floating on the ocean, and we were, by my account, in the channel. When I noticed it to him, he smelt it immediately, and so did all the passengers; but the captain, who was "half seas over," and had his nose full of snuff, persisted in saying he remarked nothing particular, and that it was all the effect of imagination. This did not in the least disconcert me. I asserted that it was not only the smell of sea-weed, but of land, and, of

course, kept my journal close up with the run of the ship.

Every day increased my anxiety, and particularly one evening, when, by my calculation, we ought that night to have seen the island of Ceylon, which divides the coast of Coromandel from that of Malabar. The stars were brilliant, and high land might be discerned at a considerable distance. This was some consolation; but I determined to go to bed earlier than usual, and rise when the first watch should be half over, telling my guardian, who promised to keep the deck, to call me, should I oversleep myself. Our owner, to whom I hinted the probability of our seeing the land, though in a manner not to alarm him, thanked me, and begged of me to keep a strict watch; "for you see," said he, "what a glorious condition our noble captain, and also his assistant, are in to-day!" It would appear that these two men had been "forecastle sprights," as they are technically termed in the navy; and, as it was Saturday, they could not pass over their old custom of taking an extra glass of grog, which, in fine weather, is then always given to the sailors, and they amuse themselves with singing; though in orderly ships they are not allowed to get drunk. There are few of my readers unacquainted with Dibdin's sea songs, and I may here remind them of one entitled "Saturday Night at Sea; or, a Health to Wives and Sweethearts." It begins thus:—

"'Twas Saturday night, and the twinkling stars
Shone on the rippling sea;
No duty call'd the jovial tars, —
The helm was lash'd a-lee."

But our crew being composed principally of natives of India, who know nothing of such customs, and are a very sober people, I presume the noble captain and his officer got gloriously drunk to balance the sobriety and prudence of his sailors.

It was the chief mate's first watch upon deck; but, being totally unfit for duty, he was put to bed, and the third mate, a very young and inexperienced man, supplied his place. After supper, the owner, who was a jovial fellow, sat with the passengers, telling merry stories, and drinking his punch; but I felt very sleepy, and went to my cot. I know not how long I had been asleep, but, suddenly, I felt some one shake me. I awoke: it was my guardian.

"Walter, my son," said he, "rise quickly; the man at the helm has just sung out that he saw something like a black immoveable cloud. It appears to me to be the land; and the third mate is asleep on the hencoop!"

I sprung from my cot, and was upon the fore-yard in a few seconds afterwards, when I saw the land close by us, and the surf rolling upon a sandy beach right a-head. There was not a moment to be lost. As I descended the shrouds, I cried out to the steersman to put the helm hard down, and then gave the necessary orders to the

crew for putting the ship about; the boatswain having piped all hands the instant he heard my commands. This bustle brought the owner upon deck, to whom I explained the necessity of going about, and the imminent peril we were in of running ashore. Whilst we were talking, the half-drunken captain, who was also awoke by the noise, came upon deck, and began to swear, and ask who dared to put the ship about without his leave? I now remarked to the owner, if he suffered that drunken fellow to interfere, his ship would inevitably be lost. He instantly replied,—

"It is I who have dared to do so, to save my vessel from running ashore; and, if you presume to oppose my commands, I'll throw you into the sea, and give a supper to the sharks. You are drunk, and not fit to command."

The captain began to mutter something of mutiny, when the owner, who was a powerful man, took him by the collar, and led him to the gangway.

"Now," said he, very deliberately, "take your choice; go peaceably to bed, or be thrown into the sea."

This determined conduct alarmed the captain, and he returned below in silence. In the mean time the work went on regularly, and the ship, that was an excellent sea boat, was soon close-hauled to the wind, and beating off shore. We were, however, so near the beach, that a stone might have been thrown upon it from the deck.

I went immediately to mark up our last day's run upon the chart, and found we had, as I suspected, run into the Gulf of Manar, between two large coral shoals, on the western coast of Ceylon, fortunately without touching either of them; but, the channel being only about five miles wide, we were obliged to make short tacks, and beat to windward, to get out again, as we came in with the wind on our quarter. A few miles on either side would have sent us all to eternity!

We made but little way during the night, the wind being right against us; and when the morning came, so that we could see the land, I knew our position exactly. The owner shuddered when he saw the danger we had escaped, and expressed his gratitude to my guardian and myself, declaring he would not suffer the captain to take the command again. However, when the latter and his officer got fairly sober, they were so ashamed of their conduct, that they asked his pardon, and promised faithfully not to drink again whilst we were at sea.

We had some difficulty to beat out from between the shoals into the open ocean again, for the wind, that was right in our teeth, was light; and it cost us five days to accomplish a distance which, with a fair wind, we could have done in a few hours. At length, getting clear of the shoals, we steered our course along the coast of Ceylon, under the frowning Friar's Hood, a name given to the highest and most prominent bluff of the south-

western point of the island, and which is an excellent landmark for vessels approaching it. We then directed our course for the roads of Tranquebar; and were at least five or six leagues from the land, when we discovered something, with our spy-glasses, like a log of wood, floating, and two birds sitting upon it. As we drew near, we were surprised to perceive what we had taken for birds were two men, upon a small raft, composed of three logs, about eight feet long, lashed together. The owner told us they were two natives of India, who were probably sent to cruise for him, to show him the best anchorage in the roads; as he had written to his friends, but a few days previous to his departure, to inform them of the time he expected to arrive. This small sort of raft *, much used by the natives of the coast of Coromandel, who swim like fishes, in their sea excursions, appeared to us extremely dangerous. Indeed, we wondered how they escaped being devoured by the sharks, which abound there, and are of an enormous size. They confessed, however, that sometimes those who went on them were attacked, and that there had been instances of their having a leg or an arm bit off. On coming alongside, they fastened their raft, with a rope, to the mizen chains, and scrambled upon deck. It appeared they had left the land two days previously, and were the bearers of a letter to the owner. It was

* The natives call it a *cattamaran*.

I went immediately to mark up our last day's run upon the chart, and found we had, as I suspected, run into the Gulf of Manar, between two large coral shoals, on the western coast of Ceylon, fortunately without touching either of them; but, the channel being only about five miles wide, we were obliged to make short tacks, and beat to windward, to get out again, as we came in with the wind on our quarter. A few miles on either side would have sent us all to eternity!

We made but little way during the night, the wind being right against us; and when the morning came, so that we could see the land, I knew our position exactly. The owner shuddered when he saw the danger we had escaped, and expressed his gratitude to my guardian and myself, declaring he would not suffer the captain to take the command again. However, when the latter and his officer got fairly sober, they were so ashamed of their conduct, that they asked his pardon, and promised faithfully not to drink again whilst we were at sea.

We had some difficulty to beat out from between the shoals into the open ocean again, for the wind, that was right in our teeth, was light; and it cost us five days to accomplish a distance which, with a fair wind, we could have done in a few hours. At length, getting clear of the shoals, we steered our course along the coast of Ceylon, r the frowning Friar's Hood, a name given to ighest and most prominent bluff of the south-

during the day-time by the reflection of its rays from a sandy soil, makes this climate almost insupportable; and the nights being calm and equally sultry, renders sleep unrefreshing. It was only from four until seven in the morning, or late in the evening, that one could ride or walk out with pleasure. At those hours we amused ourselves in examining the environs; the garden-houses, as they are called there, being highly ornamented, and present, in spite of the flatness of the soil, a very picturesque appearance.

One of our usual excursions was to ride a few miles into the country, about sunrise, to a garden house, to drink the juice of the cocoa tree. It is a cooling, pleasant beverage, and esteemed very wholesome in that climate: they call it toddy. It has a sweet and an acid taste combined, resembling cider; and, being a gentle laxative, it corrects the humours which tend to the skin. It must, however, be drunk fresh from the tree, as, after an hour or two, it becomes perfectly sour.

Our intention being to go down along the coast as far as Pondicherry and Madras, we sought to obtain a passage in some vessel bound thither; but in vain. We, therefore, decided on hiring a boat of the country, to convey us to the latter settlement. Our friends told us this plan was dangerous, the coast being infested by a number of petty pirates, who concealed themselves in the many inlets with which it abounds; and, having oftentimes a connection with the crews of the coasters,

they fall upon the incautious, and rob and murder them. I replied that I had been more than once engaged with men more desperate than those; and, as my guardian had no objection, the fear of pirates would not deter me.

Our arrangements being completed, we hired a native of the country, a species of head servant, called a dubash, who takes his wages from the people with whom you deal, and furnishes you with what other servants you may require, for whose fidelity he is responsible. The custom of the country is, for those from whom he makes his purchases to allow him so much per cent.; and this enables him to serve you gratis. The servants, cooks, &c., whom he recommends, all pay him; because he answers for their conduct, and, if they rob you, he unhesitatingly pays the value of the object stolen.

Our dubash was the more necessary, as he spoke English well, and we were little versed in the dialects of Hindostan. Besides, we meant to hire a house at Madras, in which case we could not dispense with his services.

He belonged to a sect who never eat animal food; yet he was active and athletic, and proved himself a man of staunch courage, as the reader will by and by perceive. I afterwards learned that his caste are Pythagoreans, and remarkable for their coolness and bravery.

We set out on our journey in a decked boat, which had a small cabin, and was manned by seven

men, the most ill-looking fellows I ever saw. Our party consisted of my guardian and myself, with the dubash and his servant, who was also a stout well-made man. I armed myself, as was my custom on all *extra* excursions, with a brace of pistols in my belt, and my cutlass by my side. The dubash carried a cutlass also; but his servant had nothing but a stick: and my guardian, who possessed a cutlass and pair of pistols, placed them in the cabin.

We ran along the coast all day with a fair wind, without accident; and made considerable distance on our journey towards Pondicherry, a town of great commercial importance, formerly belonging to France, and lying half way between Tranquebar and Madras. During the heat of the day we sat in the little cabin; but, finding the air close and oppressive at night, I brought my blanket upon deck, and lay down there. It was a light and clear night; and, though my guardian felt no disposition to sleep, I felt extremely drowsy, and therefore proposed to him to keep the watch for me. After sleeping soundly for a couple of hours, I was suddenly awoke by my guardian's voice, calling me loudly by name; and, on looking up, I perceived five of the crew fighting with him and the dubash, while his servant lay groaning on the deck. No time was to be lost in words: I levelled my pistols at two of the assailants, and quickly laid them sprawling on the deck; and my guardian, at the same moment, brought another down with his

cutlass. Terror-struck at the fate of their companions, the remainder threw themselves on their knees, and begged for mercy. We granted them their lives, though we had much difficulty in preventing the dubash from cutting them to pieces; so exasperated was he, and so enraged, to see his servant wounded. Indeed, the man himself, who had received a severe cut in his sword arm, swore, through his groans, that he would murder them all. However, we managed to pacify their rage; and, making the surviving sailors spread all sail to a fine breeze, which sprung up in our favour, we went on in our course at the rate of five or six knots an hour.

Fortunately I had my medicine chest with me, in which there was a balsam proper for healing wounds: this, with a strong narcotic tincture, I used in the first instance; and, by the application of a plaster afterwards, soon relieved the servant. As for the boatmen, a ball had passed through and through the head of the captain, and sent him to his long home: the other was wounded in the fleshy part of his arm only; and I easily extracted the bullet with a pair of forceps. I told him, for his comfort, that he had committed what the laws of every country termed "piracy on the high seas;" and that we must deliver him over to justice on arriving at Pondicherry. The other man whom we cut down had three wounds, one on the head and two on the body; but they proved neither deep nor dangerous.

Our dubash now declared that I ought to have put all the rascals to death, except the two hired sailors, for that his countrymen never spared them when they fell into their hands.

"No, no, dubash," said my guardian; "you are too sanguinary and revengeful. We have no right to assume the power of the law. They will be punished on our arrival."

"God send they may hang them!" replied he, "for they are a great annoyance to honest traders upon this coast."

We ran all that night with a good breeze, and arrived the next day, between two and three in the afternoon, at Pondicherry, when our man went on shore to make his report to the civil authorities; and in a short time an armed bark came off, and took away our prisoners. We got into the boat also, and were rowed through a high surf, beating over the bar, as at Tranquebar; but, being slower and more regular, it was not so difficult to pass.

We were received into a very genteel hotel, kept by a Frenchman, who was extremely talkative and entertaining; for, in less than an hour, he told us all the news and scandal of the place, as well as the history of the principal families. In short, we found him a living chronicle, that kept in his head a register of all private, as well as public, events.

His talking almost amused away our appetites; for we never thought of ordering a dinner, until,

taking advantage of a short silence, he said, "Gentlemen, without being considered as exceeding the duty of a tavern keeper, may I be allowed to ask if you wish any meal to be prepared?"

I replied, that his agreeable conversation had driven all thoughts of eating and drinking out of my head; but, since he had reminded me of my physical necessities, I should leave the bill of fare entirely to his taste.

He vanished in an instant, but returned in the course of a few minutes: — "Gentlemen," said our obsequious host, "your dinner shall be served between seven and eight o'clock, the most agreeable time for eating and drinking in this burning climate. No European thinks of eating the principal meal until the sun has sunk below the horizon; though they partake of a luncheon, here called a *tiffin*, generally about two o'clock in the afternoon. This is the hottest time of the day; notwithstanding which, they will swallow half a bottle of wine and a bottle of beer each, — I presume upon the philosophical principle of heat expelling heat. At dinner the wine passes freely, which, in the burning climate of the East, may be considered imprudent; but you will hardly be surprised at the ravages which fever and other disorders commit among our white population, when I add, that in order to give a zest to their bumpers, create additional thirst, and excite their palled appetites, a "*devil*," as it is termed, composed of fish or

fowl, profusely sprinkled with red pepper, is introduced. Stimulated by this, meats are again called for; and the party retire with stomachs so burthened, that it would require the digestive powers of an ostrich to get rid of the load. Yet, gentlemen, it is astonishing how long a few of these hard livers hold out in India, especially when they get *seasoned*, as it is called. Others, in endeavouring to imitate them, are like the carter's horse, which his master imagined could be taught to live upon shavings, but the poor animal died before he was well accustomed to them."

"Sir," said I, "I perceive you are a severe satirist; and this philippic of yours against my countrymen, the lords and masters of India, will apply to their manners some thirty years back. The 'liver,' as it is called, and other chronic complaints, joined to a terrible mortality amongst the high feeders, have made moderation and temperance more fashionable at the present day."

"Sir," said he, "allow me to say you have mistaken me, if you consider I am influenced by any hostile feelings to the natives of Great Britain: but you are going to Madras in a few days, and can then judge whether I have spoken the truth or not. Nay, in this very town, amongst my own countrymen, you may see the same excesses, only in a different way."

After dinner, our host introduced us to his daughters, two very handsome, well-bred girls; whose manners were far above their situation in

life, and whom, in conversation, we found extremely well informed. They exhibited a knowledge of the world unusual in their sex, and were gay and sprightly without the least forwardness or vulgarity. I immediately thought of Cahlinan: but they would not, perhaps, have suited his taste, as he disliked in women every thing approaching to reserve, which he termed prudery. I heard, afterwards, these pretty lasses were very well dowered and married, for the father was rich. Indeed, India is a sure market for fine women. The men who have lived there several years become tired of the constant sameness of olive complexions; and, when they meet with a young lady from Europe, with the roses and lilies glowing on her cheeks, they are caught immediately, and tumble into the trap of matrimony, as the poor fluttering bird falls into the mouth of the charmer serpent.

The morning after our arrival, we rode out to enjoy the cool and invigorating breeze, and passed through some groves of teak and betel trees, the thick foliage of which formed a shade impenetrable by the rays of the sun. The latter tree produces a nut which the natives chew, and also makes a coarse red paint when ground. In the neighbourhood of the place where we stopped to drink the juice of the cocoa tree, there was a garden house of a rich Indian. It was built according to the taste of the country, with turrets, platforms, and balconies, commanding a view of

a piece of water, which almost deserved the appellation of a lake. Trees and flowering shrubs grew around its margin, and the garden was laid out in walks, alleys, and pavilions. Several of the latter were richly gilt, and decorated with carved work of a very fantastic form.

This specimen of native taste and architecture greatly pleased us; and the owner was so polite as to suffer us to enter, and examine all the interior of the building, except the rooms set apart for the women. The apartments were lofty, spacious, and richly ornamented with carving in ebony, sandal, and other valuable woods. Refreshments were offered us, but we declined them, having only just drank our toddy; and, with many acknowledgments, took leave of this delightful spot, with its fairy palace and enchanted gardens.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

LONDON:
Printed by A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-Street-Square.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

VOL. III.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

" Wand'ring from clime to clime observant stray'd,
Their manners noted, and their states survey'd."

HOMER.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR
LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, GREEN, & LONGMAN,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.
1835.



AUTOBIOGRAPHY

OF

AN IRISH TRAVELLER.

CHAPTER I.

Our dubash procured us a very comfortable vessel, manned with natives of the coast of Coromandel, who are remarkable for their fine features and black glossy skins. The wind was fair, and, on the afternoon of the third day, we anchored in Madras roads, immediately opposite the town and fort of St. George. The surrounding country, being a perfect sand bank, has, of course, an arid appearance: behind it is a large plain, of a similar character, lying between what is called Black Town, the fort, and the sea.

Black Town is a kind of city apart, and is almost entirely occupied by the natives, among whom there are a number of rich foreign merchants, dealers in gold, diamonds, pearls, and other precious objects. It is a medley of all sorts and de-

scriptions of buildings, composed of stone, wood, and mud. Though not at all desirable as a residence, the stranger will be greatly amused by the appearance of the motley crowd that inhabit it. In one morning's walk may be seen every variety of costume peculiar to the East. I was particularly struck with the appearance of a rich Gentoo merchant, dressed in his loose flowing costume, and wearing a high turban. He rode in a carriage, which resembled a triumphal car, painted of various gaudy colours, richly gilt, and drawn by a pair of milk-white oxen. An attendant, who walked by the side of the carriage, held a large umbrella over his head, and another guided the animals, whose sleek, fat sides shone like silk.

"There," thought I, "is an equipage which, in description, would have excited my laughter; but, when before my eyes, so far from appearing ridiculous, it fills me with pleasure and admiration." It seemed much more agreeable than to employ our fellow-creatures instead of beasts of burthen, as I was obliged to do like the rest, and which, I confess, at first, excited a repugnance difficult to overcome.

The town and fort of St. George, being built principally of brick or stone, and white washed, have a handsome appearance from the sea; but they glitter so, under the burning rays of an Indian sun, that it pains the eyes to gaze upon them even for a minute.

To our great satisfaction, the dubash procured

us a very pleasant house in the suburbs, commanding a view of the plain and the sea. The morning after we took possession of our residence, he presented us with a list of the servants necessary for our household. To our astonishment, the number amounted to forty-seven, for the service of three single gentlemen, namely, my guardian, Captain Tonin, and myself. When we expressed our surprise at this enormous suite, he answered, that we could not do with a single man less than he had marked down, if we intended to follow the customs of India, and wished to appear like gentlemen.

We said, "Certainly we desire to live in a genteel style, and according to the usages of the country; but we wish, also, to avoid superfluous expense and magnificence."

"Then," replied the dubash, "I shall convince you the number of persons I have mentioned are absolutely necessary. Thirty men of this list are what we call *bearers;* twenty-seven of them being to carry the palanquin of your three honours; and three of them are *kittisol*, or umbrella men, to defend you from the rays of the sun. Should you smoke, you will require three *hookah bidars* and their mates. Then you must have a cook and two mates; two porters to carry water; another to guard the door; a body servant each, and a boy to pull off boots, clean up your bed chambers, &c., duties which no upper servant here will ever perform; also a butler,

with two assistants under him; and three men to wait at table, for your body servants will not serve you at dinner: to these must be added, three men, of the lowest caste, to carry away the dirt and offals of the kitchen, and keep the court-yard clean. Now, gentlemen, you may show my list to any European friend, and, I will answer for it, the reply will be, that your establishment is a very moderate one. The expense of all this retinue, will be a great deal less than you may be inclined to imagine: they will only cost you a star pagoda * and a half per day."

"Very cheap, indeed," replied my guardian; "and we agree to your plan, with the small exception of the two pipe-bearers and their mates. Mr. Brabazon and myself being sworn enemies to tobacco, Captain Tonin will be the sole smoker; so that our number of servants must consequently be reduced to forty-three."

The dubash, putting his hand to his forehead, gave us a long salam †, as it is called; and, without replying, made his exit, apparently well satisfied with our determination. In less than an hour he returned, and told us, if we pleased, we might dine that day at our own table.

The next morning, we went to see the natives choose their cotton cloths and handkerchiefs, for the manufacture of which Madras is celebrated

* A gold coin worth about 8*s.* 6*d.* sterling.

† A salutation.

throughout the East, their texture and the richness of their colours being superior to those of every other district of Hindostan. Our attendant desired me to select a piece of what I considered the finest by the touch. "We will see," said he, "whether or not you are a good judge."

When I had done so, he handed it to one of the natives, and asked him of what quality it was? The Indian placed it on the table, and, applying a microscope to the surface, counted the number of threads contained in a square inch. I had chosen it by its fine silky feel; but I was wrong,—for those of the best quality are rough to the touch, owing to the threads being very closely woven; and the softness of the coarser kind proceeds from their being farther apart, and becoming flat and smooth under the pressure of the glazing machine.

"You see, Walter," said my guardian, "how easy it is to be deceived by a glossy surface: a rough outside often possesses intrinsic worth, which may be readily discovered by a deeper and more careful investigation."

On returning home, our dubash reminded us that it was time to dress, and repair to the feast of a rich native merchant, by whom we had been invited two days previously. On our arrival, we found an immense number of people assembled; among whom were several European officers, merchants, and civilians, with their wives and daughters. The host, who appeared about fifty years of

age, possessed a fine open, prepossessing countenance, and received his guests with great politeness and attention. Jugglers from Hydrabad* exhibited the most extraordinary feats of legerdemain. To these a troop of dancing girls succeeded, some of whom were very handsome and well made, and exceedingly graceful in their movements. They were dressed in light flowing robes, worn over a corset, embroidered in gold and silver, which fitted close to the body; and their hair, plaited and fastened to the crown of the head, was ornamented with odoriferous flowers: amongst these, a species of triple jessamine exhaled so strong an odour that it perfumed the whole apartment where they danced, though it was of considerable extent. The feast and other amusements lasted all the rest of the day, and until a late hour of the night, when the whole was concluded by fireworks and illuminations in an adjoining garden. It must have cost a large sum of money, which, in my mind, might have been expended with more taste and advantage; for the rich natives, when they give an entertainment, surcharge it with all sorts of good things, to a degree that satiates every sense.

I had been assured that the inhabitants of Madras were very hospitable; but, in my opinion, they have a very cold way of showing it. During

* The name of a place in India, famous for a caste of conjurors.

our stay we received a few formal invitations to dine and eat tiffins, which were attended with a great deal of stiffness and ceremony.

I was not sorry, therefore, when Captain Tonin informed us of his having purchased a vessel which he meant to load at Tranquebar for the Isle of France, and afterwards to sail for New York. My surprise, however, was very great when I went with him to see his purchase, and found it to be a brig of only forty-five tons burthen. She was, however, copper-bottomed, and appeared like a good sea-boat; yet, accustomed as I was to sailing in all sorts of craft, I confess I did not exactly relish the idea of crossing the Indian Ocean in so small a bark. I asked him what could have been his reasons for buying such a little cock-boat?

"The best of all possible reasons," he replied: "having but a small sum of money with me, I have laid out as little as possible on the hull of the vessel, as I wish to load her with soap and cotton goods. The soap, being a heavy commodity, will serve instead of ballast; and the cotton goods may be stowed above it. The former article is extremely cheap at Tranquebar, but very dear at the Isle of France; and I hope to make it pay the entire cost and charges of the brig."

The cargo was soon on board, and, the other necessary preparations being completed, we bade adieu to Madras. The cabin of our little vessel was so low that we could not stand up in it; and, on the table being covered for dinner, there was

barely room to squeeze in between it and the lockers. But, when we wished to go to bed, we literally crawled into our berths, and were afraid to make any sudden movement in the night lest we should knock our heads against the earlings. The only place where we enjoyed any degree of liberty was the deck, which, being flush fore and aft, afforded us a walk from the taffrail to the foremast.

We made a quick passage to Tranquebar, and found our vessel sailed well, notwithstanding her diminutive size. I thought it my duty to warn Captain Tonin of the danger to be apprehended, in case of leakage, from the soap ballast he proposed taking; but he persisted, observing that his vessel was "tight as a drum head."

"Very well," I rejoined, "if you are satisfied, I am; but I foresee, nevertheless, we shall all be in the *suds*, with this soap of yours, before you arrive at the Isle of France."

He laughed at my observation, but did not alter his plan; and, a week afterwards, the vessel was loaded and in readiness for the sea. Though he had hired a captain, he performed the duty of chief officer himself; and I agreed to act as second mate. The crew consisted of eleven men and a boatswain before the mast; so that, with my guardian, the captain, Captain Tonin, and myself, we amounted altogether to sixteen souls, embarked upon a vessel of only forty-five tons burthen, to cross a distance of between two and three thousand

miles. It was now, also, autumn, when the change of the monsoon is sure to produce squalls, storms, thunder, and lightning in abundance. Of these matters, we, as seafaring men, could not be ignorant: but necessity has no law.

For the first ten days the winds were so light and baffling that we made but little progress; then came the change of the monsoon, accompanied by severe gales, and a high and troubled sea, which knocked the poor little brig about like a piece of cork, until, to our great sorrow and annoyance, she began to leak. As I predicted, the soap was pumped up in suds, and dissolved away rapidly; while the brig became so crank and top-heavy, we could no longer carry a press of sail upon her. To add to our troubles, we found ourselves getting short of water; and, if it had not been for the quantity we caught during the heavy rains, by spreading sails, our situation would have been desperate indeed. The foul winds and squalls we had experienced drove us to the eastward, almost within sight of the Isle of Sumatra; but, just as we were expecting to see the coast, we took a fair wind, dead aft, which lasted for a few days, and drove us well on our way again.

As the leak continued, the ship became so top-heavy that, in order to carry sails, we were obliged to strike our main top-mast half mast, and rig our main boom out to windward; on which we slung kegs of sea water. Owing to these delays, we became so short of water that we were reduced to

the small allowance of an English pint per man for twenty-four hours, and our sufferings from thirst were beyond description. I relieved the men, in some measure, by having each portion put into a bottle, with a cork perforated in the centre. In this I stuck a quill, and directed that the water should be allowed to ooze out gently, in drops, upon the tongue. By this method the mouth was kept moist all day: for, at first, we swallowed the whole of our allowance at one draught, and, of course, suffered severely afterwards.

On leaving Tranquebar I had purchased a dozen bottles of vinegar, which proved of the greatest service in the present extremity; for, whenever I saw any one in distress, I administered a tea-spoonful of vinegar, and immediately relieved him. During ten days we were obliged to keep to this strict and painful allowance; and even at the expiration of that period we were by no means sanguine in our expectations of making the land. As the weather was extremely warm, we dressed ourselves in lighter clothes, and kept them constantly wet with salt water,—an expedient which contributed to assuage our burning thirst. The pains of hunger were superadded to those arising from the deficiency of water; for, though we had plenty of food on board, every one was afraid to eat more than was barely necessary to satisfy the cravings of nature, as the indulgence of the appetite, in this respect, produced the most insupportable agony. We had nothing but salt

provisions until the men took some fish; but they were dry, and only increased our desire to drink. Latterly, however, we caught several birds, called *boobies* by the sailors, because they alight on the shrouds, rigging, or spars, and allow themselves to be taken by the hand. We boiled them in sea water; and, notwithstanding their strong, disagreeable flavour, they were better than the fish.

Of all the tortures I ever experienced,—and in my time I have suffered the extremity of hunger,—thirst is, unquestionably, the most excruiating.

Our sailors being all natives of India, and accustomed to live on rice, we could not prevail upon them to eat biscuit. They preferred the rice, although boiled in salt water. Some, who possessed a stock of tamarinds, which are a very strong acid, mixed a portion with half fresh and half salt water, declaring that it allayed their thirst, though it was very disagreeable to the taste. We had fitted a scuttle to the water-cask, in which there were now but a few gallons remaining; and it was placed under my care, secured by a lock and key. Once a day, all hands came to me, by turns, to receive their allowance. When it was pumped from the cask, it foamed like milk; and, though its smell was dreadful, and the taste brackish, we drank it with delight.

In this state of universal suffering, the captain had the cruelty to propose a reduction in the sailors' allowance, and an increase of our own, that we might be enabled to make tea.

"Your proposal," said I to him, "is an unfeeling one; not to mention the baseness of wishing to rob those poor fellows of their allowance, and perhaps be the cause of their death, to gratify your own selfish appetite. I pass it over now; but, if ever you dare to mention the subject again, I shall immediately inform the crew of it, and leave you to their vengeance."

"Bravo, Walter!" said my guardian, who overheard me; "you have decided like a man of feeling and humanity. We have no right to a single drop beyond the fixed allowance.

"You are commander of the brig, sir, but not of the water-cask, which, by general consent, has been put under the charge of Mr. Brabazon," said my guardian, addressing himself to the captain; "and, before you attempt to interfere, I hope you have considered the consequences: we cannot take your part, or prevent the sailors from throwing you into the sea. In an event of this nature, when there is short allowance, the cook is as good as the captain. No distinction can be made, as every man's life is dear to him; and the means we have left to save us must be equally and impartially distributed."

At first he gave himself the airs of a commander, and talked of mutiny, &c.; but, on hearing this, he ceased grumbling, and grew pale at the idea of being made food for the sharks.

The sailors being ignorant of our dispute, all went on as before.

The next morning we had the misfortune to lose one of our best seamen. He went on the weather fore-yard-arm to run out the studding-sail boom, as the wind was beginning to haul farther aft; and I meant to round in the weather braces, and set the studding-sails. The fore-yard was then braced sharp up; and, just as he ran out on its end, before he could catch the topping-lift, his foot slipping, he fell over. His breast struck upon the iron head-railing, and he tumbled from thence into the sea. I was standing in the waist, and immediately threw a large coil of rope upon him as he went by; but he was sinking, and the sea all around him was discoloured with blood. Notwithstanding the vessel was brought to the wind immediately, we saw nothing more of him; and, in ten minutes afterwards, two very large sharks were observed in our wake, by which he had, no doubt, been devoured.

On the tenth day of our short allowance we got two double altitudes of the sun, or azimuths, as they are called; and at sun-set, having a fine amplitude to correct them, we found the variation correctly, which, in the Indian Ocean, is the longitude. By these observations we were assured of our position, and I confidently prognosticated a sight of the land the next day. This announcement infused new life and spirits into the poor fainting crew, many of whom had almost wholly abstained from food, for fear of suffering from thirst, and were reduced, in consequence, to a

state of great feebleness and exhaustion. Between three and four o'clock in the afternoon of the eleventh day, when our stock of water was reduced to only three days' allowance, we had the happiness to see the north-east point of the Isle of France. As soon as we had got near enough to be perfectly assured of it, I made the boatswain pipe all hands, and gave a glass of water to every one in the ship, beginning with the captain and descending regularly to the cabin-boy. I drank the last myself, and, stinking as it was, I shall never forget how delicious it appeared at that moment. We ran all the afternoon with a good breeze, and, before sun-down, got sight of a remarkable rock on the north west coast of the island, that is a sure mark to steer by in order to gain the port. We, therefore, took the bearings and distances correctly, by which, although the night was dark, we were enabled to continue our course.

All on board were now quite merry, though we dared not make free with the water; for sometimes the current sets a vessel off to the southward, should it fall calm, and she may be still two or three days before she is able to make the land.

Having barely enough of water on board to keep body and soul together for twenty-four hours, the captain became greatly alarmed. I advised him to hoist his boat out, and tow the brig against the current, until the sea breeze should set in, about ten or eleven, A. M. With

our best exertions, we contrived to keep our own, or, in other words, to stem the current, until at length the man from the mast-head cried out, "*a breeze!*" In a quarter of an hour more it filled out the bosoms of our sails, and we were going five or six knots through the water, direct for the port. On the strength of this happy prospect, another small tumbler of the precious fluid was distributed to each of the crew. Some of them sang, others laughed and danced; and all expressed the utmost joy at the idea of soon arriving at a place where they might drink as much as they pleased.

In a couple of hours more, we were safely moored within a cable's length of the shore, where there was a cleft rock, from whence flowed a stream of fine fresh water like liquid silver. Our boat was immediately despatched to bring off a barrel of it. I pumped out a tumbler of the small portion that remained of our sea stock, but the smell was insupportable; yet I could not help reminding my companions with what pleasure they drank it only two hours previously.

We were no sooner settled on shore, than we renewed our intimacy with all our former kind and hospitable friends, and went into society every day; but I missed the colonel and his lady, whose company had always afforded me so much pleasure. As I could not think of quitting the island without taking leave of them, I proposed to my guardian that we should pass a day at their

retreat, and return the following morning. We accordingly rose between three and four o'clock, and, accompanied by Cæsar, our former attendant, proceeded to the well-known road leading over the lesser mountains into the plain of Moka. Here, we again had the pleasure of contemplating the magnificent prospect I have before described, which seemed to have increased in beauty, richness, and variety since our departure. On the plain, however, some of the ravages of that dreadful hurricane, which will never be effaced from my memory, were not yet repaired.

Every tree was in its best clothing; many of the flowering shrubs and spice trees, particularly the clove, were in full blossom; and the beauty of their foliage surpassed every thing I had seen elsewhere.

As we penetrated through the valley, and drew near to the general's residence, the whole landscape resembled fairy land. The winding river, bursting over the cataracts, and all the scenes described in the story of the Mountain Cat, now rose before me in rich perspective, and riveted me to the spot in silent admiration.

"Here," observed my guardian, who remarked my reverie, "do we find ourselves for the second time: yet such are the inexhaustible charms of nature, that every thing appears in unfaded loveliness. Here an endless variety of sublime and beautiful objects are united within a small compass. As we walk along, the scene changes at

every instant; and, whilst the eye dwells with delight on the exquisite taste of those walks and gardens, it is the next moment enamoured with the stupendous scenery, in comparison with which the most finished productions of human industry fade into insignificance."

About six o'clock we found ourselves at the entrance of an alley, bordered with clove trees, leading to the general's house; and, in a few minutes afterwards, we beheld the whole family coming out to meet us, for they had recognised us at a distance. Their greeting was as cordial as if we had been near relatives; nor was our welcome less agreeable from the old general and his lady, whose manners and venerable appearance immediately won our hearts.

After a *déjeûner à la fourchette* *, we strolled through the shady alleys, and the colonel's lady directed my attention to a number of beautiful scenes which presented themselves in the adjoining grounds; but the heat of the sun soon obliged us to take refuge in a cool pavillion at the upper

* At a breakfast of this substantial kind, consisting of grilled fowls, tea, coffee, omelets, cutlets, fish, curry, and various other things, of which we partook a few days previous to our leaving the port, we saw an old gentleman, a native of France, seventy-two years of age, for a wager, mix part of every thing that was on the table, not excepting coffee, chocolate, tea, mustard, vinegar, pepper, &c. all into one large bason, containing about a quart, and eat the contents in a very short time. Few hogs could have vied with him.

end of the garden, from which a shady alley of clove trees led to the house. This elegant little building consisted of three rooms and an anti-chamber. One was fitted up as a library, with a choice collection of books, writing tables, &c.; a pianoforte, a harp, a violin, and a guitar occupied the second, which was devoted entirely to music; and the third, which commanded a fine view of the plantation, up to the cataracts, as well as the romantic borders of the river, was used as a sitting room. Here we amused ourselves in conversation and reading, until about four o'clock, when, dinner being announced, we returned to the mansion. The table was spread in a spacious apartment, beautifully ornamented with living shrubs and flowers: the walls were adorned with different views of the most romantic sites of the plantation; and the ceiling was painted in imitation of the canopy of heaven. We were served on plate; in short, every thing indicated the noble, generous character of the host, who treated us with all the delicacies of the island, and the finest wines of France.

After showing us a fine cabinet of minerals and other natural curiosities, the colonel's lady proposed that we should set out on our excursion to the cataracts, as the sun had sunk low enough behind the mountains to secure to us a shady walk. Our way lay through the richest part of the habitation, where we saw coffee trees, sugar canes, &c., in abundance; and we at length arrived at the

banks of the river, about the spot where the large pavillion was erected, as described in the story of the Mountain Cat. In strolling along, all the incidents of that frightful story flitted across my memory; and I could not forbear putting questions, from time to time, to the colonel's lady, who smiled on observing the strong impression her history had made upon my mind.

In the course of a couple of hours we reached the perpendicular cliffs, and the natural bridge of flat rocks which traverses the river. They are so near together that I easily stepped from one to the other, and crossed the river almost without wetting the soles of my boots. Leaving my friends on the bank, I ascended the mountain to a rock which, from its flatness and peculiar position, I at once recognised as the scene of Caton's terrific encounter with the colonel. The view here, embracing the whole space from the cataracts down to the pavillion, is so wild and beautiful, that I remained gazing upon the objects around me for half an hour at least; until the colonel hailed me with a loud voice, to remind me that they were awaiting my return. When I joined them, his wife playfully observed that she perceived I was an amateur of the sublime and beautiful, and therefore was in despair; as, in arranging my travels for publication, I should be so enthusiastic in my descriptions of the works of nature, that the poor humble mortal who was the heroine of the story would be forgotten.

"Never," I replied: "you are yourself one of creation's fairest productions, and are so intimately connected with all the enchantment which reigns around you that you can never be forgotten."

She offered me her hand as she replied,—

"You are a flatterer, but an honest one, Mr. Bridmore; and I shall endeavour to persuade myself, if the greater part of what you say be not exactly correct, that it is at least sincere."

But I spoke the truth from the bottom of my heart, for she was a beautiful, engaging woman; and the story she related to me continually presented her to my recollection, in connection with the magnificent scenery around.

Our evening passed away in the most delightful manner: my guardian engaged himself in conversation with the old general, and I was occupied with the ladies and the colonel. At an early hour the next morning, for they insisted on our taking coffee before we departed, we breakfasted in the pavillion, and then took our leave with feelings of mutual regret.

In a few days after, the ship was again in readiness to depart. Our passengers consisted of an old gentleman, with a young wife, a daughter of about fifteen years of age, and two little boys. The girl was tall, handsome, well made, and witty, but precocious to an extraordinary degree; her conversation being already that of a married woman, who had passed some years in the circles of fashion.

We had also two young Americans; and these, with my guardian, myself, the captain, and officers, formed the company at the cabin table, where every one seemed disposed to be polite and good-humoured.

The voyage was attended with no incident particularly worthy of remark; and in due time we had the good fortune to make Montog lighthouse, on the north-east coast of America. Continuing our course, by the evening of the next day we were safely moored within the harbour of Newport, in the province of Rhode Island, to which the ship was bound. Altogether, our passage proved very pleasant and agreeable, one annoyance only excepted, which it was impossible to remedy. The ship, having been for a long time in warm climates, was full of scorpions and a large species of winged house beetle. When we were all assembled at supper, of a sudden, as if by general consent, a swarm of these disgusting insects flew upon the table from every part of the mess room, frightening the ladies out of their wits; and, after flying and crawling about for half an hour, they disappeared as quickly. This did not occur every day, but it certainly happened twice or thrice a week during the passage. Now and then large scorpions were seen crawling on the beams and earlings, and we were in constant fear of being bit by them; for, though the wound seldom proves fatal, it is attended with very disagreeable sensations for several hours. For my part I swung in

a cot, and was of course less exposed to their attacks than those who slept in berths, which, being attached to the side of the ship, are more accessible.

We left the vessel in an hour after her arrival, and hired very decent lodgings, at a reasonable rate, with an old widow lady, who lived on "The Hill," as it is called, which overlooks the lower part of the town, the harbour, and the sea, for an extent of many miles.

Newport is the naval arsenal of the United Provinces of America, and certainly is as fine a port as any of the globe. The entrance is strongly fortified on either hand, and it may be easily approached with those winds which are contrary and difficult for the more southern harbours. Altogether, it is a position of the greatest importance to a maritime nation; and, fully sensible of its value, the Americans have contrived to render it impregnable. The surrounding country is very fertile; furnishing fine vegetables, fruits, and plenty of rich pastures for feeding cattle. Fish, oysters, crabs, in fact all the produce of the sea, are very cheap; and so abundant, that a native of the town assured me seventy sorts of fish were exposed for sale every market day. The province is, likewise, famed for its cheese and butter; of which they export large quantities.

After remaining in Newport a few days, to gratify our curiosity, we travelled northward to

Boston, the capital of the province of Massachusets.

It is situated on a hill, commanding a fine view of the harbour, the bay, the sea, and the country round for many leagues. The prospect from the cupola of the State House is also particularly magnificent.

We found the inhabitants much more plain and simple in their manners, as well as far more hospitable, than those farther south. Every day brought us fresh invitations to dine or spend the evening abroad: and the ladies were extremely amiable, handsome, and well bred. There is a club amongst the gentlemen, which meets every Saturday, called the Fish Club; where, as this town is also famous for fine fish, I expected to have been treated with all the different varieties. To our great astonishment there was only one dish presented, and that was salt cod. We dined late, and, fond as the Americans in general are of sitting after dinner to pass about the bottle, I saw several who retired early, as we did; and I was told no one ever staid later than half-past eleven, that is to say, they did not suffer twelve o'clock to catch them at table, being strict in the observance of the Sabbath. The inhabitants are the descendants of those rigid sectarians who emigrated from Great Britain to people the northern provinces, which they named New England; and there is a strong and characteristic difference in dialect, manners, and customs, between them and

the natives of the other parts of America. The language, indeed, is intrinsically the same; but the mode of pronunciation, the use of certain terms, with the dress, tone, and appearance of the people, distinguish them in a very striking manner from those of the southern states. Although this may be said to have been the cradle of the republic, the people of the latter often accuse them of leaning too much to the side of aristocracy. Indeed, I found the distinctions in society throughout America quite as rigidly observed as in England; and, certainly, in no country have I seen riches obtain a higher influence. There is, perhaps, less of the pomp of aristocracy than in Europe, but the pride of wealth is excessive. At this my second visit, I was more than ever struck with the good sense of Major Semple's remarks, and the maxim he laid down, namely, "That, in such an extensive country, a simple republic cannot long exist; and that America was saved by having borrowed the plan of her political institutions from those of Great Britain, one of the most solid and enlightened monarchies of the old world."

I was still more shocked by that boorish independence of behaviour among the common people, who disdain to exercise the common rules of civility. It is true that some of them are kind and hospitable in their way, but it is necessary to know and be accustomed to them before you can at all

relish their uncouth habits. What I call your half-bred gentlemen, and gentlemen tavern keepers, are still more insupportable. General T., Colonel F., Major B., and Captain C., who either hold commissions or have served in the militia at some period or other, and still retain their titles of distinction, think much more of themselves than dukes, counts, marquises, barons, and esquires in old Europe. One of those fellows (not to miscall them) will sit in his porch, with a glass of grog by his side, his hat cocked down over the left eye, in the pride and glory of republicanism, regarding his guests with an air of the most supercilious contempt. He does not deign to move when you approach him, or even to reply to your questions, farther than by a nod of independence, or a slight motion of the hand, to signify where you may find the bar of the tavern. Then the wife, a daughter, young mister, or an assistant waiting woman (for *servant* is an offensive word in America), will answer pertly enough, or give a laconic "yes" or "no," unless you immediately order a dinner and a bottle of wine. They then seem inclined to receive you with some attention, saying, "Oh! we can fry you up some bacon and eggs, or chickens, in a few minutes." This is the standing tavern dish throughout America. I have certainly met with kind behaviour and hospitable treatment, but never in the house of one of those great military men; besides, you have the dis-

agreeable addition of a heavier bill for the entertainment, if it can be said to merit the appellation.

We spent some very pleasant days at Boston, and then, taking leave of our hospitable acquaintances, proceeded by the stage-coach through Providence, Newhaven, Connecticut, and New York, thence to Philadelphia. Our road for the greater part of the journey lay along an arm of the sea, called the Sound, and afforded us many beautiful prospects. Near one of the country towns of Connecticut, we saw an immense quantity of ground planted entirely with onions. On enquiry, I found that they were cultivated exclusively by the women of the place; many of whom had amassed small fortunes by this species of industry. Although the soil of the northern provinces appeared cold and stony, yet in general it was highly cultivated; the inhabitants endeavouring to make up, by care and industry, for the defects of nature.

We remained ten days at New York, with our friend Tom Bryan, and his lovely wife and children; and, when I mentioned our intention of departing, he was quite in despair.

"Nothing," said he, "since my marriage, has given me such heart-felt joy and satisfaction as the arrival of my friends and benefactors, to witness the work of their charitable benevolence; to behold a man raised, by their humanity and kindness, from misery and wretchedness to happi-

ness, power, and wealth. If I did not intimately know the noble and disinterested feelings of your hearts, I should imagine you envied my felicity, and avoided its participation with me. For Heaven's sake!" said he, with a fervour of expression that really affected me, "do remain here yet a few days. You say you are about to make another long voyage. We may never meet again on this side of the grave! Let me conjure you, then, by all that is sacred to friendship, not to quit me so soon."

The wife and children joined their entreaties to those of the husband and father, and we were obliged to yield.

At this time Tom Bryan possessed one of the finest houses in New York, and entertained a great deal of company, but it was always of a select kind. His friends were few, but those he had he could rely on as being sincere and honest. During our stay he, of course, saw more visitors than usual, having made several large dinners and balls purposely to show us the *beau monde* of his city. As a statesman (for he had long quitted the practice of the law) he was highly esteemed for his sound judgment, probity, and patriotism. His aged parents lived with him, and, though far advanced in years, they seemed yet hale and strong. Sometimes the father and mother would sit with me and talk over the misfortunes they had experienced in Ireland. They always seemed to regret their native country, —

"Where," said the old woman, "I should wish to lay my bones. But, alas! it seems impossible. Our son's happiness is dearer to us than our own. He will not listen to the idea of a separation, and this has determined us to finish our days in America."

I confess that I, in all my travels, have hardly ever met a more happy domestic circle. There was a calm contentment, and a grateful sense of the blessings God had bestowed upon them, conspicuous in all their words and actions. Bryan was highly charitable; and so strong an advocate for justice, that, although he had declined the legal profession, whenever he was solicited to plead the cause of the oppressed, he entered the lists *gratis*, and thundered forth his powerful eloquence at the bar, where his exertions seldom failed of procuring a favourable sentence for his clients.

Altogether, the character of Tom Bryan filled my guardian with delight and admiration; and he several times expressed to me the heartfelt satisfaction it afforded him that we had been instrumental in saving such a noble, disinterested man from destruction.

Our friend had a fine country seat on Long Island, which lies at the entrance of the Sound. He made us spend a week there, beyond the time fixed for our departure, that I might enjoy the amusement of grouse shooting; and, certainly, I never had finer sport. I may add, that the American grouse is the most delicious of birds. Our

excursion was crowned with great success; but it was the cause of a further delay. We carried back a number of fine birds, and Tom would not consent to our departure until he had made a large dinner, as a farewell feast, when the game was to be cooked, and many of his friends invited to partake of it. All this formality being got over, we at length bid him adieu, with the promise to make his house our home whenever we visited New York.

Our journey from thence to Philadelphia was by the way of Trenton, the capital of the province of New Jersey, which I have described before as a commanding site, near the cataracts of the great river Delaware, 150 miles from the sea. We passed the night there, and, starting the next morning at the break of day, dined at our old lodgings in Philadelphia. The following morning, on descending to breakfast, to our great astonishment, we found an old acquaintance, Captain Cooper, who had arrived the evening before, after a prosperous trip to Java, by which he had augmented his capital considerably. After relating the occurrences of the voyage, always interesting to seafaring men, he said,—

"I now mean to put my project into execution, of going to Manilla to purchase an island from the captain-general of the Philippines: should I fail, my destination will be Canton, where I can take in a cargo for Europe. I recollect you and your friend offered to accompany me to Manilla; so,"

if you have not changed your minds, now is your time: I shall sail in the course of a month, at farthest, unless some unforeseen accident prevents me."

We were much pleased with his offer, and promised to be in readiness should we decide on going to China before we had visited France.

"The events of the late revolution in that country," said my guardian, "have had a pernicious influence on the political sentiments of almost every country of Europe, and render it an object of interest and curiosity to every inquiring mind. I am anxious, Walter, that you should see it before the spirit of a licentious, unprincipled people is entirely curbed; you will then be the better able to judge of the value of religion, order, and good government."

"I am not altogether sure," said Cooper, "of being able to depart so soon; for, to say the truth, my finances not allowing me to undertake the scheme alone, I have proposed it to a merchant of this town, who will provide a portion of the capital on condition of sharing the profits. Every thing, therefore, depends upon his reply."

It was finally agreed that he should let us know his friend's decision in the course of a week or ten days; and, as we lodged in the same house, we should have frequent opportunities of conversing on the subject.

One day, whilst I was busily engaged in making a list of necessaries for our voyage, the captain

was again announced. He seemed disturbed; his brow was contracted with a dark frown, and he went coldly through the ordinary ceremony of salutation. As he looked around, seemingly awaiting a question on my part, I did not hesitate to ask what had annoyed him. "Oh!" said he, "I have been deceived and treated ill by one of my best friends; a man in whom I had always placed the highest confidence." After silence of a few seconds, he added, "I am come to apologise to you for my apparent indecision. The last time we conversed together, I gave you to understand that our plan was all arranged, and I should sail immediately for Manilla. Now, sir, I am in despair to be obliged to tell you he has altered his mind, and will not consent to embark his capital, until next year, in a scheme which can hardly fail of success, and to which delay is likely to prove most injurious. So I am obliged to lie on my oars a whole season, and make myself appear to you a man of undecided flighty character, on whom no dependence can be placed. My plan being one that I would not willingly expose to any one else, I must submit and await his time; but I hope it will not disappoint you. There are other vessels bound to China, but not one to Manilla."

I endeavoured to remove his anxiety on our account by saying, that his candid and early explanation was quite satisfactory, and it made no difference to us. We could, in the mean time,

make a trip to France and Spain, and return sufficiently early next season to accompany him.

He seemed much pleased with my manner of receiving his bad news, as he called it; but grumbled a good deal about the delay, and the folly and indecision of the merchant.

When I mentioned to my guardian the purport of the captain's visit, he said he was very well pleased, and that we might now immediately take our passage in a vessel bound to one of the northern ports of Spain, whence we could proceed overland to Paris. The next day I was fortunate in meeting a gentleman, of good family and fortune, with whom I had always been on the most intimate terms, who wished to make the same voyage. He informed me of the departure of a brig bound to St. Sebastian, in which he had engaged his passage, and warmly invited us to join him. My guardian very readily consented; matters were speedily arranged, and the day fixed for our departure.

During our short stay, we had been most hospitably entertained by our acquaintances, more particularly by our old friend Fisher. We, therefore, determined to devote our last evening to bid him farewell. Indeed, latterly, we had been much amongst the plain Quakers, whose manners and conversation being now familiar to us, we found great pleasure in their company. There we sometimes heard politics discussed, but scandal never; nor, indeed, any of the light, frivolous chit-

chat generally prevalent in fashionable saloons. All was solid and instructive; not delivered in too stiff and serious a tone, but accompanied with amusing anecdotes of distinguished members of the sect, or remarkable public characters of America and Europe. I was greatly pleased with the judicious manner in which these worthy people applied every thing to the actual state of society. They contrasted the good with the bad, so as to impress their youthful hearers with the love of virtue, and with the necessity of strictly preserving their moral character untainted in order to render themselves beloved and respected by their brethren. On this evening, a very amusing old gentleman related to us many instances of the credulity of his sect, and how often he had seen them practised upon by the artful and designing. One of these anecdotes is worth repeating.

"Some years ago," said he, "there arrived in our city, from some part of France, a Friend, who was remarkably plain in his dress and manners. His letters of recommendation to some of our elders described him to be a pious, upright man, and as such he was received amongst us without suspicion. He appeared about forty years of age, and his deportment was solemn and calculated to inspire respect. As a preacher he was orthodox and eloquent, at least if we may judge by the translation of his sermons; for I must tell thee that, being ignorant of our language, our friend and brother, Dr. Griffiths, an excellent scholar,

and well versed in all the tongues of Europe, translated his discourses to the brethren as he delivered them. I always considered this gave them greater weight and interest than if they had been spoken to us in our own language. Be that as it may, they were replete with all those mild, peaceable, and Christian sentiments which our sect admire and endeavour to practise. I may say, in truth, that never had any stranger obtained so complete an ascendency over the hearts of all the Friends as this demon of France. He lived in the family of an intimate acquaintance of mine, where he enjoyed all the advantages which friendship and hospitality could bestow. But, alas! he was an immoral man, and an ungrateful villain — a wolf in sheep's clothing. Our poor brother had been nourishing a serpent in his bosom. After passing the winter in Philadelphia, he sailed for France early in the following spring, greatly regretted by all with whom he had associated, and who used their best entreaties to persuade him to remain amongst them. After he had been gone about a week, our friend discovered that his daughter was in the family-way, and that the Frenchman had deceived her. The pilot who conducted the ship in which he embarked, through the mouth of the river Delaware into the open sea, related that, no sooner was the vessel under sail, than he unlocked one of his trunks, and, throwing off his Quaker garments, dressed himself out in the gaudiest colours. He then drew

forth a fiddle, and began to play several sprightly songs and dances. The captain, who was a steady man, was surprised to see him change so suddenly, and, fearful that he was beside himself, questioned him concerning his miraculous transformation.

"My worthy fellow," said he, "I am not, nor was I ever, a Quaker: I merely assumed their dress and deportment because it suited my convenience and the slender state of my finances to do so. In this way I travelled through America for almost nothing; was lodged, clothed, and fed by the good brethren; and, having now got all I wanted, I wish them joy of their credulity."

"My friend," said the old man, turning towards me, with a smile, "what thinkest thou of our sect, after suffering themselves to be duped by such a rascal? Does it not prove what I previously asserted, namely, that our garb may be assumed by designing men and hypocrites with almost a certainty of success?"

"Friend," observed the mistress of the house, "thou hast related what, I regret to say, is too true; but I do not conceive thou canst properly call the man from France a hypocrite. He was, more correctly speaking, a practised swindler, who had the art to procure good recommendations to our elders, and conducted himself in a manner so exemplary, for a length of time, that he won the hearts of our unsuspecting brethren. So far from feeling hurt or ashamed of his having deceived

us, I feel proud of the brotherly and unsuspicious disposition of those who received him with open arms."

"Friend Sarah," observed another old gentleman, who also sat near me, "thou art right. Let the sin lie at his own door; our consciences are free. Besides, hypocrisy does not belong to one sect more than another; and the outward show of religion, I am sorry to say, is common amongst those whose principles and tenets are infinitely less rigid than ours. It is a cloak employed by all descriptions of people; certainly the vilest, most despicable, and, I might add, the most criminal, of all human subterfuges: as if He, who knows all the secrets of the human heart, can be deceived by a base pretender to piety! Our dress and manners, which are in conformity with our religion, have drawn down upon us this reproach; and, though we endeavour to instil into the minds of our youth the inestimable value of candour and simplicity in all their dealings, still," he added, turning towards me, "thou knowest we Quakers are but men."

CHAPTER II.

We quitted our Quaker friends so early, that we had time to return home and prepare ourselves for the assembly, as it is called; or a meeting of the principal families of Philadelphia, held twice a week. We found a very genteel party, and among them were many beautiful and elegantly dressed women. The dancing continued through the evening, and was kept up with great spirit until midnight. Refreshments of all sorts were handed round during the ball; and about half past twelve o'clock the supper was served, consisting of the choicest viands. The dessert which followed was composed of rare and delicate fruits, and the wines were very superior. I remarked, however, that there was as much ceremony in leading the dames to table as could have been used in one of the ancient monarchies of Europe. Certain ancient, rich families took the lead; the young people in the dance, the elder branches at supper. All this appeared to be done by the common consent of the parties, and with as much harmony as in countries where the distinction of classes is more rigidly preserved. Nay, one of the managers assured me that only persons of a certain

respectability in society were allowed to subscribe, and that no petty merchants, shopmen, or mechanics could be admitted. A gentleman, recently arrived from Europe, who was standing near, sarcastically remarked that he presumed, after such an explanation of the manner of conducting their subscription balls, they would not maintain any claim to the title of republicans. Two nights after, I received a pressing invitation to join my American friend at a supper of oysters, tortoises*, and canvass-backed ducks, given him by his associates, at a tavern, previous to his departure. He called for me at the time indicated, and off we went together. I had scarcely put my foot inside the door, when I was struck with the resemblance it bore to the tavern where I first met Cahlinan: when we got up stairs the resemblance was still stronger, until, at last, I found myself actually in the same room where, the reader must recollect, he came in upon us from his chamber.

The entertainment much resembled that before described, when Cahlinan was our guest. There was, however, one singular and, I must say, disgusting fashion, which I never saw practised except in America. The ducks were served up almost raw; and a chafing dish was placed before

* These are an amphibious tortoise, called in America tarrapins. They are small, black, and ugly, but very delicate eating.

each guest, on which he cooked his bird according to his own taste. I observed the amateurs did not waste much time in preparation; they eat them half raw, and laughed at me because I could not follow their barbarous example. It was certainly a ridiculous exhibition to see twelve persons, sitting round a table, broiling their suppers upon a charcoal fire. These bachelor parties, where the amusements are confined to eating, drinking, and singing, are very fashionable in America.

In a few days afterwards my friend announced that the vessel was ready, and requested us to send our baggage on board. She was a deep-waisted, cutter-built brig, of about 180 or 200 tons burthen, flush decked fore and aft, mounting fourteen guns. Besides these, she had a cargo that pressed her deep into the water, and made her plunge in a head sea like a porpoise. However, all this to old and determined travellers was not alarming; though, in truth, it was not quite desirable in a vessel of her construction. In spite of all our precautions, when we had the wind a-beam, or were close hauled, she shipped a great deal of water, and kept the decks wet the whole of the passage. The captain was exceedingly fond of carrying sail, and could not be persuaded that, by so doing, he diminished, instead of increased, the swiftness of his vessel. To show the folly of his conduct, I laid him a wager that, if he took in his top-gallant sails, the

brig would go through the water a half a knot an hour faster than with them set. The trial was made immediately, by heaving the log whilst the top-gallant sails were set, and then again after they were furled; when, to his great astonishment, he found that we went upwards of a knot an hour faster than before, and, consequently, I won my wager.

The captain's obstinacy was, however, of a kind that is often found combined with good seamanship, activity, and perseverance: but the chief officer's drowsiness, in his watch upon deck, was unpardonable. During the time we were crossing the Atlantic, although I found him several times sleeping in his watch, I did not mind it; but, when we drew near the coast of Spain, seeing he persisted in this dangerous habit, I determined on keeping the deck regularly whenever he commanded: and it was lucky that I made the resolution.

One dark night, having the wind before the beam, as we were going about four knots through the water, I was looking anxiously to windward, having fancied I heard certain sounds, resembling the noise of a vessel coming down upon us before the wind, and, in an instant after, the sound of voices. As the rushing noise seemed upon our weather bow, without waiting for the ceremony of awaking the officer of the watch, who was sound asleep, as usual, I shouted to the steersman to put the helm hard up; and commanded that the bow-

lines and trusses should be slackened, the lee-sheets and braces started, the yards squared, and the brig kept right before the wind. I then called the cabin boy, and made him run up with a lighted lantern into the main top. The bustle of rounding in the weather braces awoke the mate: as soon as he got upon his legs, he enquired who had dared to alter the brig's course in his watch?

"I am the offender," said I, "if it can be deemed an offence to save the vessel from being run down."

Whilst I was talking, a very large ship, whose course through the water I had heard, showed her lights in answer to mine, and passed us at the rate of six or seven knots, carrying all sail, near enough to throw a biscuit on board. She went by so rapidly that we had barely time to hail each other; and, according to my computation of the slowness of our course, and the swiftness of hers, if we had not wore ship, but continued close hauled to the wind, she must have struck us about the waist, and sent us all to eternity!

When the mate saw the ship glide by us, his consternation was so great that, for some moments, he was unable to utter a word; nor did he attempt to speak until I said to him, —

"Thank God, sir, the danger is past! You had better now bring the vessel to the wind again, and keep her on her course."

After he had done so, he came back to me and expressed himself fully aware of the impropriety

of his conduct, and the fate that awaited him, should the captain be informed of it.

"You have given me an excellent lesson," said he, "and have saved the vessel and our lives; but, for God's sake! do not mention it, or I shall be ruined for ever."

I replied that I should keep the secret; and, as the captain slept soundly through his watch below, the circumstance was noted on the slate with some little alterations. Accordingly, at breakfast, the officer received his superior's thanks for having kept such a good look out; instead of being cashiered, as he deserved, for his neglectful conduct.

The wind continued blowing from the north-east, until we made the coast of Spain, about the city of Corruna; when we beat to windward, plying off and on, for several days, without being able to get round Cape Ortugal, into the Bay of Biscay. As we had fine, beautiful weather, with a clear sky and a fresh breeze, we were much chagrined to see many vessels pass by us with flowing sheets, bound to the south of Europe and the Mediterranean sea. Ten days passed off in this manner, during which time the captain became so impatient, and fretted so much, that he almost ran frantic, swearing in the most impious manner; until, at last, we were obliged to take him seriously to task for his improper conduct, and the blasphemous language he uttered. He excused himself by saying, it was the first time in his life that

he had ever met such a long continuance of adverse winds; having been famed, heretofore, for making short passages.

"Gentlemen," said he, "my reputation as a good captain will be ruined for ever."

"Better lose your reputation," I replied, "than run the risk of offending Heaven by your curses, and calling down its wrath upon your head."

Our remonstrances had a good effect. He became more composed, and, on the eleventh day, the wind veering round in our favour, in two days after we got into the port of St. Sebastian. The entrance, which is very narrow, is between two enormous rocks, strongly fortified with heavy artillery. Indeed, the city itself is said to be one of the most impregnable places in all Europe, having held out, for a long time against a large besieging army on the one side, and the British fleet on the other. It is situated on a hill of gradual ascent, which is covered with houses from the summit to the water's edge.

Having brought letters of introduction to some respectable Spanish families, the few days we were there passed off very pleasantly. We found the inhabitants agreeable; the ladies, particularly, being conversable, gay, and handsome. Their coal-black eyes, which dart fire from under the shade of long silky eye-lashes, added to their great liveliness of expression about the mouth, would have been perfect loveliness, if the roses of their lips had not been sullied by decayed teeth. It

was most remarkable that we scarcely met a lady whose teeth were not more or less defective; a circumstance which I heard ascribed to the practice of drinking very hot chocolate, and a large glass of cold water immediately after it. There is little doubt but the extremes of hot and cold are most detrimental to this delicate portion of the human body.

After visiting the almost impregnable ramparts, the public buildings, churches, &c., we hired horses; my guardian having assured us that a ride over the Lower Pyrenean Mountains to a small frontier town named Passage, and from thence to Bayonne, would prove highly interesting. Our young friend, who was all life and gaiety, was delighted with the proposal; and off we set without farther delay. The guide, a one-eyed woman, was part owner of the horses. We soon found out the inconvenience of this proprietorship; for, the moment we attempted to move on a little faster than the ordinary rate of travelling, she screamed out that we should tire the poor beasts and injure their feet. Finding her so very disobliging, my friend contrived to annoy her during the whole journey. I used, purposely, to engage her in conversation, whilst he got on her blind side; when, putting spurs and whip to his horse, he started off at full speed. The woman no sooner saw this than she gave chase; and, although her horse was the best of the four, he frequently led her on for more than half a mile before she could catch him,

whilst we, following their example, galloped after them at full speed.

The descent from the mountains to the ferry at Passage is highly romantic. We could not help stopping on the declivity of the hill, to enjoy the prospect of the river winding its serpentine course between the openings in the mountains. The ferry is entirely served by women from eighteen to twenty-five years of age, all very handsome; but one amongst them attracted our attention as being a perfect beauty. They were dark complexioned, black eyed, black haired wenches, with fine rosy cheeks, lips resembling ripe cherries, and their teeth like ivory. The men were, also, good looking, but did not seem so lively as their fair companions. These people inhabit a strip of country, bordering on France and Spain, called Basque. They have a language peculiar to themselves, of which dictionaries and grammars have been published, and it is said to be rich in lyric poetry. The young American was so enamoured of the girl who ferried us over, that he expressed his regret at not being born a boatman's son, in order to have demanded her in marriage. I told him he might do it now with much more hope of success, since he was rich and she was poor.

"Oh!" replied he, "but what would my family say if I were to marry a woman so far beneath me?"

"There peeps forth the pride of American

republicanism," said I. "*You* should be the last man in the world to talk of distinctions of birth."

"Excuse me," he rejoined; "I see no reason, because I was born in America, that I should adopt all its political dogmas. I am no republican, and, to confess the truth, I despise the cant of liberty and equality, and all its adherents: therefore, never rank me again amongst a party I detest."

The following day we arrived at Bayonne, where we hired a cabriolet sufficiently large to accommodate three persons, being determined to ride over the *lands*, as they are called, where *ennui* for ever reigns. After spending a couple of days at Bayonne, we proceeded on our journey towards Bordeaux, where we purposed passing a month or two before we visited Paris. The road for the first few days was over a country composed, for the greater part, of loose, light sand, into which the horses sunk fairly knee deep, and could only move at a very slow walk. These immense seas of sand, if I may be allowed to use the expression, are, however, occasionally interspersed with green and fertile spots, on which there are houses, inhabitants, flocks, and herds; at other times we saw large forests of the cork tree, but the had none of that freshness and verdure for which they are elsewhere so remarkable. At one time, we espied two gigantic figures, in the midst of the sands, coming towards us, whose stature appeared not less than ten or twelve feet!

Astonished at the sight of such extraordinary beings, we asked the driver if the people of that country were all as tall? He laughed, and said we were deceived by the distance; and that, when these men came nearer, we should perceive they were mounted upon stilts.

"They are shepherds," said he, "all of whom make use of this contrivance in passing from one island to another. Being elevated some five or six feet from the ground, they take such strides that a horse must trot briskly to keep up with them."

The next place of any note at which we arrived was Roquefort, famous for its ortolans and excellent cream cheese, some of which we purchased at a very moderate price. The landlord of our hotel informed us that Roquefort supplied most of the great cities of the kingdom with these delicacies; and he showed us a basket of ortolans, packed in rows, ready to be despatched to Paris by the first diligence.

The inhabitants of Bordeaux have always been famed for their attachment to the ancient dynasty of the Bourbons, and suffered severely, in consequence, during the great revolution. Talien, one of the blood-thirsty demagogues who held the reins of government at that time, was sent there with a black list of 420 names, chiefly those of the most ancient and respectable families, who were condemned to the guillotine. To the wife of this monster the citizens of Bordeaux ought to have erected a statue of gold. Talien

was particularly introduced to the house of a rich banker, where he beheld the young lady who afterwards became his wife. She was graceful, accomplished, and beautiful. My guardian saw her some years after her marriage, and has often declared he had never beheld a woman who could be compared to her. Talien made proposals of marriage, but was several times rejected. Still he persisted; and at length she gave him to understand, the only mode of obtaining her hand was by procuring the pardon of the 420 persons contained on his list. The negotiation continued for some time, as he was obliged to send to Paris, and use all the influence of his friends near the murderous Robespierre, before he could obtain an order for their release. When the prisoners were restored to their friends, she immediately married the sanguinary ruffian; and a greater sacrifice was never made by woman, for his person was as hideous as his mind was brutal and depraved. She had, however, the satisfaction on the morning after her marriage, to see 420 persons, with their relations, appear before her, who kissed her feet and bathed them with tears of gratitude. I was told, by those who were present, that it was the most touching scene they had ever witnessed; and Madame Talien was, herself, so deeply affected that, after raising them up and embracing them, she swooned away.

I have always been astonished such a trait of heroic self-devotion and generosity should not

have been commemorated by a monument. On arriving at Paris, she became the pride and glory of the capital, where her beauty and accomplishments, joined to her virtue and heroism, furnished a theme for universal admiration. The complete ascendency she obtained over her ferocious husband was productive of the most important results; and many an unfortunate wretch was saved, through her intercession, from becoming the victim of Jacobin fury.

We found the ladies of Bordeaux extremely handsome and engaging; and the inhabitants, generally, very hospitable. Several Irish families, who had intermarried with the natives, had been long established there; and this gave a tone to their manners that made me almost fancy I was in my native country.

Travellers call Bordeaux the seat of good cheer; for it is one of the most plentiful, and, at the same time, one of the cheapest, towns in Europe. The finest wines are produced in the neighbourhood; oysters, fish, game, and poultry, are very abundant; and all these delicacies, in other parts so costly, are here to be purchased on the most moderate terms.

During our stay we frequently visited the theatre, a superb monument of the taste of the age of Louis XIV.; and I was always in ecstasy whenever I found myself before its chaste and elegant façade, which has a colonnade crowned with statues.

We lodged in a house situated upon what is called the *Chartrons*, or Quay, on the banks of the clear and rapid river Garonne, which there winds in the form of a crescent; and the view of the river is magnificent and commanding. A grove of fine large chesnut trees adorns the banks just below the town, and forms a delightful shade, where we often walked of an evening. At other times we rode out amongst the vineyards in the neighbourhood, to visit some of our French acquaintances, whom we almost invariably found engaged in dancing. I scarcely ever dined in the country, where there were two or three families collected, that fiddles were not introduced; and dancing commenced almost the moment dinner was over. Several of my countrymen, who had resided long in France, grew equally fond of this amusement; indeed, they had adopted most of the native customs, introducing, in return, a number of their own, which were received with equal facility.

Our road all the way to Paris was highly interesting. We passed imperceptibly from districts entirely covered with vineyards into those where the "staff of life" took the lead; and the transition was accompanied by a difference of manners and habits amongst the people. To me the inhabitants seemed all lively enough; but my friend, the American, who loved plainness and simplicity, declared their affected gaiety was highly displeasing to him; and that he perceived

abundance of levity in the nation, but very little natural gladness of heart.

"I despise that cheerfulness," said he, "which is not blended with sentiment; and which deserves no better appellation than inconstancy, proceeding from apathy and want of feeling."

"You are sarcastic, and, perhaps, too precipitate," said I. "Do you not observe that, as we proceed farther north, and get amongst the cultivators of grain, a more serious and steady character prevails?"

"There is some trifling difference," he replied; "but it is no more than a slight shade of the same picture, the groundwork throughout being the same."

We passed through Barbezeaux, celebrated throughout France for its poultry. We dined there off a turkey stuffed with truffles; and bought ourselves a supply of cold roast capons and game pies for the road. Not long after, we got into the heart of the truffle country, where we observed the inhabitants employed both hogs and dogs to find them. They abound in the vicinity of Angoulême; and knowing they were dear, and highly esteemed in Paris, we purchased a basketfull to take with us. This place is also famous for its manufactures of paper, &c.; but there was a coarseness and stupidity about the inhabitants not observable elsewhere.

Our ride along the banks of the river Loire, before we reached Tours, was exceedingly pic-

turesque. When we stopped to change horses, several people brought baskets of fine prunes for sale, for which that town is remarkable. Tours is the favourite resort of foreigners, particularly the English. The French language is spoken there in greater purity than in any other provincial city.

The preparations for the grand festival of July formed the general topic of conversation on the road; and Paris was said to be already overflowing with visitors, arriving from all quarters to be present at the celebration. We could not but congratulate ourselves, therefore, on having lodgings secured, as report stated that their price had already risen fifty per cent.

Soon after our arrival in the capital, we paid a visit to the Minister of Marine, who invited us to dine with him on the last of the three days of the festival, in a species of large covered boat, open at the sides, and moored between the two bridges, not far from an island, on which was deposited a mass of rockets, serpents, &c., to the number of 47,000. The boat was so situated as to have a complete view of the island, the bridges, and part of the garden of the palace. When the hour arrived we repaired to the place appointed, and were presented with a printed programme, indicating the various exhibitions, and the time and place of their commencement.

After reading it, my guardian told us, that, if we were determined to visit every spot where there

were to be shows or illuminations, he must beg leave to remain with the minister, or, at least, not to accompany us, as he foresaw we should have a laborious task.

We readily excused him, as we should be free to go where we pleased, and had made up our minds not to miss a single object mentioned in the handbill.

The dinner was exceedingly stiff and formal; the company being principally composed of military and naval officers, and foreigners from the different embassies, with some prominent public characters, the greater part of whom were unknown to us. About half an hour after its termination the various exhibitions were commenced, which were announced by the explosion of the 47,000 rockets, close by us, and which I can compare to nothing but an earthquake; for the vessels, the river, and every thing else, trembled beneath us, whilst the atmosphere was illuminated with the most brilliant fires in every shape and form that fancy could create; while thousands of hissing serpents, dragons, and rockets, soaring to the skies, burst in upper air, and then descended slowly like meteors to the earth. This magnificent spectacle being concluded, the splendid illumination of the gardens, the bridges, &c., commenced. As we had seen every thing in that quarter, we took leave of the minister, and proceeded regularly to all the places mentioned on our list. The crowd in the streets was inde-

scribably great; amongst whom I was not a little surprised to see a number of genteel females, who must have been frequently in danger of being crushed to death. It is, however, but justice to say, that on those occasions the common people of Paris are extremely civil and polite; yet, notwithstanding this good disposition, the press was occasionally so great that they could not resist the tide, and were forced against each other and wedged closely together. The last exhibition we witnessed was the most interesting of all, and certainly proved most eventful to us. With much difficulty we reached the place designated in the bill, and obtained a good position in front of a large platform. On either side were constructed forts, before each of which several companies of cavalry and infantry were stationed, ready for action. The batteries commenced a regular cannonade. One of them after a while was silenced, and the troops marched to the assault. They were met by the enemy, who made a *sortie*, and resisted them for some time, but at length they were driven back into the fort. Artillery was now brought forward, and employed against the ramparts; and a breach being effected, the assault quickly followed. The battle was so well represented, and the assault made with so much spirit, that several men appeared to be killed and wounded; but the fort was finally taken after an obstinate resistance. A flag of truce was then

hoisted; and the whole ended with a superb triumphal procession, and hymn to peace.

This representation of war, which was on a grand scale, drew the whole population of the capital, whose curiosity to get as near to it as possible rendered them less civil than usual. The piece had scarcely begun, when we found ourselves pressed on all sides, and more than once we heard the shrieks of women in distress. Two very genteel-looking ladies, accompanied by a young gentleman, stood immediately behind us; but, as it was necessary to turn round, in order to get a good view of their faces, and as the scene before us was very interesting, we made no effort to discover whether they were handsome or the reverse. About fifteen minutes before the time mentioned for the commencement of the spectacle, the dense mass in our rear pressed forwards so violently, that in spite of our best efforts to the contrary we were obliged to give way, and advance upon those in front. Being then full of youthful strength, and remarkably powerful in the arms, and my friend, who was likewise very strong, assisting me, we succeeded in keeping off the crowd. Just then I heard a female shriek close by me: turning hastily round, I perceived that one of the young ladies before mentioned had been thrown down by the struggling multitude, and was in danger of being trampled to death. Instantly striding across her prostrate body, I called to my friend to aid her companion, who

also appeared in great danger; then lifting the fallen lady in my arms, I supported her high above the crowd; at the same time entreating her not to be alarmed, but to hold fast by my neck, and I would protect her from further inconvenience.

"Excuse me, Madame," I added, "for the rough manner in which I have treated you; but at a time when your life was endangered, ceremony would have been fatal. Depend upon it you are under the protection of a man of honour, who will defend you at the risk of his life."

She made no immediate reply, and I had leisure to observe that my friend and the young gentleman who accompanied the fair strangers had, with the greatest difficulty, prevented the other lady from fainting, by lifting her also in their arms above the crowd. At length, after sighing heavily two or three times, my lovely burden exclaimed,—

"Sir! I entreat you to put me down. I must be heavy, and troublesome."

"Madame!" I replied, "I conjure you not to make yourself uneasy; keep your position, and amuse yourself by looking at the remainder of the spectacle. Your relations, or friends, are at hand; and, I assure you, I am not in the least incommoded by your weight." Her sister, who was now perfectly recovered, enquired how she felt.

"I am quite well," said she; "but I am really in despair to trouble this gentleman, who has so

bravely defended me, and to whose timely exertions I am indebted for my life."

The young gentleman and his sister expressed their acknowledgements to us both in the politest and most amiable terms; and the show being at an end, and the crowd beginning to disperse, they courtesied, and bade us adieu.

To me their departure was like a thunderbolt. I remained silent, and rivetted to the spot for many minutes, ere I summoned courage to ask my friend if he had ascertained their name and condition.

"I!" said he, earnestly—"I, who have been so taken up with gazing upon the lovely features of her I adore, that it never entered into my thoughts to enquire where she lived, or who she was?"

"This has been exactly my case," I replied; "and all I have discovered is, that the lady whose life I saved walks, at this season of the year, mostly upon the Italian boulevard."

"What stupid fellows we are," said he, "to allow them to bow us off thus, and not to ask permission to accompany them home!"

"True," I replied; "it was certainly a great oversight; but I confess to you, my diffidence, pride, or whatever you please to call it, would not suffer me to solicit the honour of waiting on them, when I conceived it their duty to invite me. We ought, however, to recollect that, in the large cities of Europe, there are so many fortune-

hunters, that persons of a respectable condition in life are cautious of making acquaintances with those of whose character and pretensions they have not previously received some information."

After very many conjectures and conclusions, doubts and surmises, we walked slowly and sadly home, not in the least satisfied with ourselves, or the manner in which we separated from the two persons in the world for whom we felt the strongest interest, and who, though extremely modest and diffident in their manners, were apparently well pleased with us.

We sallied forth the following evening, at the fashionable hour of taking recreation, and walked a full hour on the ramparts before we saw or heard any thing of those whom we so eagerly sought. At last, just as we were about to quit the promenade, I heard a female voice exclaim,—

"Oh, brother, there they are! There are the two gentlemen who saved our lives. Go, invite them to our house, as your uncle has charged you."

When I turned round to gaze at the speakers, a tall, genteel young man, approached us.

"Gentlemen," said he, with a noble frankness, "I beg to thank you for your brave and generous conduct during the exhibition of yesterday; and, at the same time, to request you, on the part of my uncle, the Marquis de Beaucour, to honour him with your company, at his dwelling."

With that he took us alternately by the hand,

and, scarcely giving us time to utter the usual compliments in return, he added, "Here are my sisters near us; allow me to perform the almost needless ceremony of introducing you to them."

This sudden and joyful occurrence filled our desponding hearts with gladness; we turned towards the ladies, who received us with smiles of complacency, and immediately proposed that we should adjourn to their uncle's. There was another gentleman with them, who also approached me, and, bowing, said,—

"The Count de Montaubert also considers himself under the greatest obligations to you for having saved the life of this young lady, to whom he has the happiness of being betrothed."

I returned the pressure of his hand, but was unable to utter a single word. The joy that, only a few moments before, danced about my heart, was damped by the cold chill of disappointment. I shuddered, and felt as if a dagger had been plunged into my bosom. My cheeks alternately became pale and flushed; and a clammy death-like perspiration started upon my forehead. In short, though my perturbation must have been evident to all present, none appeared to remark it except her who was its cause. Regarding me steadily, she said, in my native language,—

"You look ill, sir! I fear something ails you!"

By this time I had recovered myself sufficiently to reply that I felt a little fatigued; but it would

soon be over. The Count again addressed himself to me, saying, —

"Pray, Sir, excuse me, — I have particular business; and as you are going to visit this lady's uncle, may I beg to place her under your care?"

I promised to protect her, and he left us.

"He could not have given me," said she, with a smile, "into safer hands; for I have already witnessed the courage, strength, and presence of mind you are capable of exerting in time of danger; and my gratitude can only end with my life."

I begged she would not place too high a value on so trifling a service, which it was the duty of every gentleman to render to a lady in distress.

"You must allow me," she replied, "to estimate it according to my own notions of what it justly merits; and, at the same time, to apologise for not having invited you at the close of the exhibition to accompany us to my uncle's, who, independently of the obligations he owes you, feels a strong partiality for Englishmen, from a long residence in their country."

A silence ensued that was, however, soon interrupted by the mirth of the rest of the party, who were laughing at the remembrance of the strange manner in which we made their acquaintance, and the ludicrous incidents which befell us in the crowd. My companion listened to their remarks with a languid smile; while every look, every glance, was replete with assurances of her favour-

able sentiments towards me. That such a precious jewel should be snatched from my deluded grasp, was enough to drive me to despair, more particularly when I learnt from her brother, it was only within three days past that the marriage contract had been signed.

We now entered the court yard of a handsome and spacious hotel, the residence of the Marquis; and the brother, leading the way, soon brought us to the cabinet of the old gentleman. He rose, and alternately embraced us, declaring, with tears in his eyes, how delighted he felt to see him who had saved the life of his beloved Lise. We endeavoured to avoid the subject, and pass to something else; but he was not to be turned aside. He enquired whether we were single or married; our places of nativity, names, &c.; and then made an eloquent speech in favour of the noble courage and generosity of my countrymen in particular, for he had been in Ireland.

"Your names, and this noble action," said he, "which has been the means of preserving a treasure more valuable to me than my fortune, shall be registered on our book of remarkable events, and the anniversary of yesterday shall always be a festival in my family." Then taking me by the hand, he continued,—

"Mr. Brabazon, I have spent several delightful years in England, and have travelled all over Ireland, enjoying its verdant beauties, and its winning hospitality. We must be friends: all I

regret is, that I had not made your acquaintance a few days sooner. Come, sit down here with me;" for, said he, laughing, "I see that your friend prefers the society of my niece to the conversation of a tedious old man: and he is right. Let you and I, however, converse about those scenes on which my recollection still dwells with undiminished pleasure."

He then began to speak of Ireland, Dublin, Cork, Limerick, the lakes of Killarney; and at length grew so eloquent in praise of the richness and beauty of my native land, that I was almost ready to press the old man to my heart in ecstacy.

It seemed as if we had already known each other many years; and whilst we were in the midst of this excitement, produced by sympathy, the lovely Lise entered. She smiled at seeing her uncle press me to his bosom, as he exclaimed,—

"Nothing, since I have left Great Britain, has afforded me so much heartfelt pleasure as this unexpected meeting with a gentleman, whose friends and relations I have known most intimately; and, what is most singular, that he should have saved the life of my beloved niece! Ah! my dear child," said he, turning to her, "how grateful do I feel to him for thy safety!" Then he added abruptly,—

"But where's that insensible man, the Count? Surely he has not forgotten to thank Mr. Brabazon."

"I have seen Count de Montaubert in the

street, Sir," said I, "and received his thanks. But you will confer a particular favour upon me, by saying no more about it. I am overpowered by your gratitude, and am more than repaid by the pleasure I feel in your company."

"Come, my dear uncle," said Lise, "let us no longer persist in our allusions to a subject disagreeable to the feelings of our friend."

"Well then," said the merry old Marquis, "let me now ask, in friendship, the name, situation in life, &c., of your friend, who, being a native of America, and, of course, a republican, I am not altogether pleased to find has become so interesting to Julia. She has frankly confessed, for she conceals nothing from her old uncle, being already half in love with him. He is certainly a gentlemanly, handsome man; but, you know, there are other requisites to be looked for in a husband."

I gave him a short account of my friend's fortune, education, conduct, and connections, adding that he was any thing but a republican; that I knew he was in love with Julia, whose hand I had every reason to believe he would demand in marriage, the moment he had been long enough intimate in the family to authorize such a proposal. The old nobleman seemed pleased, thanked me for the confidential manner in which I had explained matters to him; adding, by way of compliment, that he knew he could place implicit belief in whatever was uttered by an English gentleman.

"You see," said Lise, with a smile of benevo-

lence, "that what I told you of my uncle is true. He is in love with your nation; nor do I wonder at it," she added with enthusiasm, "since courage, truth, and honour are their birthright."

"If ever I felt truly proud of being born in Great Britain," I rejoined with equal feeling, "it is at this moment."

"A very pretty compliment, in answer to my niece's just estimation of your national character," said the uncle; "but I must tell the Count to beware how he leaves you thus in the company of Englishmen." Lise blushed deeply, rose, and left the room. When she was gone, the old gentleman continued,—

"We have been only a few hours acquainted, and yet I feel as if we had been known to each other many years — much more cordial than I am with my niece's intended husband, whose family and mine have been on terms of intimacy and friendship for ten years past. I will tell you, in confidence, that they have been worrying me, for more than a year past, to give him my niece in marriage, and I regret now that I prevailed upon her to accept of him; for I begin to perceive that he will be, at best, but a cold, unfeeling husband. However, the marriage contracts are signed, and it is too late to retract, without incurring the risk of a quarrel with the family, and the implication of having forfeited my honour."

"In candour, Marquis," said I, seriously, "I cannot attempt to advise you on so delicate a

point. But I need scarcely observe, that unless you have strong proofs of the danger you apprehend, or have just reasons to accuse him of conduct rendering him unworthy of her hand, he can enforce the contract by law; or at least oblige you to pay the dower mentioned in your agreement, though he cannot compel you to resign her person, especially if she herself is not disposed to marry him."

Our conversation was here interrupted by the announcement that dinner was served, and I remarked that Lise kept her eyes fixed upon me during the whole of its continuance. When they encountered mine, she blushed; but the Count de Montaubert, who had got into a dispute with the cousin respecting the age of a horse, never once spoke to his intended bride, or took any more notice of her than if she had not been at table. My heart bled for her. What would I not have sacrificed to have been in his place! Such beauty, worth, modesty, and accomplishments, to be thrown away upon a block of wood!

Her aunt, who sat next me, seemed to have penetrated my thoughts. "Lise," said she, "wrote a long note before dinner, fearful that I might have been enticed to dine elsewhere, and informing me of her having at length discovered the noble stranger who saved her life. I will not mention," added the old lady, laughing, "half the handsome things she said of you. I see you are modest, and I do not wish to make you vain."

"It would be like flattering a man," said I, "who is condemned to death with the hopes of a reprieve."

"You are right, but still the true lover's motto is '*never despair*;' and I now tell you plainly, if I could break off the match with that stupid Count, I should not hesitate a moment, as I feel persuaded that it will be the death of my poor niece. She has wasted to a skeleton within the last week, and her features ever since the contract was signed have been tinged with the deepest melancholy. My brother regrets now that he had been so precipitate, but it is too late; the contract is signed, and the Marquis will make him pay the dower, whether he gets the wife or not. If I had the management of the business, large as the sum is, I would make him a present of it, and save the poor girl. My brother is not deficient in courage, nor is he a miser; but he has very high notions of honour, and is fearful that breaking off the match may be considered as ungrateful. For my own part, however, I cannot but repeat, that having my niece's happiness much at heart, I would freely sacrifice half my fortune to snatch her from the chilling embraces of an unfeeling coxcomb, who marries her solely for her money, and is entirely unworthy the possession of so much beauty and merit."

At the close of this communication, which was uttered with a tone of ardent indignation, she fixed her eyes steadily upon me, as if awaiting a

reply. My embarrassment was excessive. True, I was deeply enamoured of her charming niece, but she was engaged before I had the good fortune to meet her; and though I felt ready to do any thing that was not incompatible with the character of a man of honour and a gentleman, the idea of bearing off clandestinely a betrothed lady, ceded to another by promise and a legal contract of marriage, rather shocked my nicer feelings. I remained silent, reflecting upon the dilemma in which I was placed, and in what manner I should reply to her, when she seemed to penetrate my thoughts, and said with a smile, "Nay, Mr. Brabazon, don't be too conscientious. We, old ladies, have some penetration; and, I perceive, although I have been here only a couple of hours, or a little more, that you love my niece. My communication has troubled you. Don't be alarmed. Reflect upon it at your leisure. We will talk it over another time."

At this moment it was a great relief to me to see the old Marquis rise from table. I offered the lady my arm, and led her back into the drawing-room, where I meant to escape for awhile at least; but she said, "Take a seat by me, Mr. Brabazon; I see my niece coming towards us."

Poor unfortunate Lise smiled, and sighed as she kissed her. Then, turning to me, she said,—

"You must excuse my aunt, sir. She loves me tenderly herself, and conceives every one ought to love me also; but this may be difficult

for those who are less acquainted with me than she is."

"Don't, my dear," said the aunt, smiling, "put Mr. Brabazon to his confessions; for I see plainly, by his eyes, he does not think there is any difficulty in the matter."

She delivered this observation with emphasis, and an air of superior penetration that confused us both; and, suddenly rising from her chair, she paced hastily across the room, to seat herself by her younger niece and my American friend. We were thus left alone; and, emboldened by a smile that was mingled with the interesting blushes of the lovely Lise, I concluded it would be considered as a dereliction from the duty of a gallant cavalier to quit the subject abruptly, and I said,—

"Unfortunately, your aunt has spoken the truth. To love what is irresistibly beautiful and angelic, is certainly not difficult; though it may be criminal to confess it."

Her cheeks were now suffused with the deepest crimson; she grew agitated; her eyes were cast upon the ground; and it was evident she wished to reply, but was prevented by her feelings. In the height of this struggle, which made me feel alarmed at my imprudence, my guardian rose to depart, and I took a hasty and embarrassed leave.

CHAPTER III.

A FEW mornings afterwards, at breakfast, our American was elevated to the skies. He had broached the subject of matrimony to Julia, and obtained her consent to ask her hand of her uncle. I will not attempt to describe the agonies I suffered during his recital of the incidents which led to this happy conclusion of his courtship, so ardently commenced and so quickly accomplished. Little did he think of the pangs which pierced my heart when, taking me aside, he described to me the marks of love and tenderness bestowed upon him; and the reciprocal sighs which escaped them when they separated the preceding evening.

"As for myself," he continued, "I hate suspense. To-morrow I am determined to attack the old gentleman, and have my fate decided." He was true to his word; for the following evening, when we met, he told us all the preliminaries were settled.

In the course of a couple of days, we dined again with the old Marquis, who took me aside, and related to me what had passed between him and Julia's lover. He was well satisfied that his niece had been so fortunate as to meet with a man of good family and fortune, who loved her, and

who, in every other respect, was likely to make her an excellent husband.

"All this," said he, "as well as the life of my beloved Lise, I owe to you; and it really afflicts me to think that I must appear ungrateful. I fear I shall have to regret my precipitation as long as I live, for my dear girl will never be happy with the Count de Montaubert. We have now determined, in order to make it somewhat more gay for her, that both marriages shall be celebrated the same day. Julia is all gaiety and happiness; but poor Lise seems a prey to melancholy."

This information gave me so much pain that the old gentleman must have remarked my agitation. When he concluded, I had some difficulty to muster up courage enough to say I felt amply rewarded, by his friendship and attention, for the trifling service I had rendered his niece; and congratulated him on the double alliance, of which he had spoken. However, I had made up my mind, at the same moment, that no mortal power should detain me in Paris to behold the sacrifice. That day the Count was not there. I sat by Lise at dinner. She conversed with me in the most unreserved manner, and confided to me all her sorrows. Her expressions of gratitude and attachment, and her assurances that she should never cease to think of me as long as she lived, excited feelings indescribably painful. At length, recovering myself a little, I told her, with a faultering voice, how much I loved and respected her; and,

since her marriage would shortly take place, I meant to quit Paris in four days at farthest, as I wished to spare myself the pain of witnessing that ceremony.

Her cousin now interrupted our conversation; and I retired at an early hour to join my guardian, who, I knew, was at home, and alone. On entering his apartment, I found him with a packet of American letters, amongst which was one from Captain Cooper, pressing an immediate return to Philadelphia, where he was preparing a fine ship, to sail, in the course of three or four months at farthest, for Manilla.

"I hope you are pleased with this news," said my guardian; "and that you are ready to return. In three days more we must depart; for later we may not be so fortunate as to meet with a vessel at Bordeaux bound for America."

"Under any other circumstances," replied I, "I might have felt inclined to remain longer in Paris; but now I am truly delighted to leave it, and am glad I have received the captain's letter, without which I doubt whether our young friend would consent to part with us until after we had witnessed his marriage."

As soon as he returned from the Marquis's, which was not until long after midnight, I mentioned the intelligence we had received, and our determination. He was exceedingly disappointed, and in vain endeavoured by every specious argument, as well as the strongest appeals to friend-

ship, to turn us aside from our purpose. However, after my guardian retired, and the warmth of his expostulations had subsided, I made him sensible that my absence was necessary to the peace of mind of both Lise and myself.

We made our preparations speedily; so that, when the day arrived, we had only to dine with our friends, and, the moment dinner was over, to jump into our cabriolet and depart. When we entered the room, the whole family were assembled. The old Marquis's features appeared serious and troubled; the aunt, like all old maids, was fidgetty and uneasy; the young Marquis was whispering and talking with Julia and her lover; while Lise, pale and dejected, sat in silence by her intended husband, the only person in company whose happy physiognomy exhibited perfect composure. He shook me by the hand, and observed that he was sorry to hear I was about to leave them. This observation gave me at once an opportunity of explaining to the assembled family the reasons of our sudden determination, which was confirmed by my guardian; who added, that we could give no stronger proof of the necessity of our arriving soon in America, than that of our undertaking a winter's passage through the Bay of Biscay, one of the most boisterous parts of the Atlantic Ocean.

Before dinner the old Marquis took me by the hand, and begged me to accompany him into his cabinet. When there, he made me sit down, and

seated himself in his large armed chair, opposite to me.

"You are going to leave us at a very interesting moment," said he, "and, I am sorry to add, rather precipitately. However, you have assigned satisfactory reasons for your determination. My sister has been saying a great deal about you this morning. She considers that I have given you cause to be displeased by my precipitation in bestowing Lise on the Count instead of the man who saved her life, and on whom I was bound in gratitude to bestow her. I have already given you the assurance of my eternal love and esteem; and I further declare to you, I am ready to make any sacrifice, or take any measures you may devise, to break off the match, provided you will remain in Paris, and marry our beloved Lise, whose health, I see, is already injured, and her peace of mind destroyed."

This unexpected appeal, and explanation of conduct that I had never thought of condemning, placed me in a very awkward position, and it was some seconds before I could collect myself sufficiently to return an appropriate answer. I began by assuring him that I had never felt the smallest dissatisfaction at the causes which deprived me of the hand of his amiable niece; and, although I lamented my hard fate, I approved of his honourable compliance with his solemn promises and engagements.

"Whatever," said I, "may be the pangs it

costs my heart to resign her, I never can think of proposing to tarnish your honour; neither can I consent to be an accomplice in a scheme that would certainly draw upon us the animadversions of all France. No doubt your niece will, also, severely feel this sacrifice of her affections; but, I trust in God, she will endeavour to combat her disgust, and be happy with her affianced husband. As for me, I am a traveller and a wanderer on the face of the earth: I may say, with the song,

> " ' My course is o'er the mountain waves,
> My road is on the deep.'

Let me, therefore, depart in peace. Console your lovely niece by your tender care and attentions, and I will struggle to forget that I have been deprived by destiny of such an inestimable treasure."

When I ceased, the old marquis rose from his chair, and clasping me to his bosom, he exclaimed,—

" Thou art honour's darling son, and I shall always consider you as a dear and invaluable friend."

The formality of bidding adieu, however distressing, was unavoidable. When I approached the spot, where, apart from the rest of the family, Lise stood, pale and trembling, she tendered me her hand, which I pressed to my lips; then, muttering something like an adieu, she burst into tears, and hurried from the room. My agitation had now reached to such a height, that I hardly knew

what I addressed to any of the rest of the family; until Julia, taking me by the arm, said, "Adieu, my friend! accept my best wishes for your happiness and prosperity. You have been the principal cause of our felicity, and I beg you to feel persuaded of my eternal gratitude."

The son, the old marquis, and the aunt, shed tears while they embraced me; and I hastened from the house, in company with the young American, who accompanied us to our lodgings and remained with us until we started. After making him promise to keep up a regular correspondence, and embracing him affectionately, I bid a long adieu to Paris; though I confess I never left any place with a heavier heart.

My guardian, who perceived how much I was agitated, exerted himself to divert my thoughts from dwelling too much upon her I had lost; and succeeded, by his affectionate admonitions, in calming the perturbation of my heart.

"I know your noble spirit," said he, "and that you are more grieved on Lise's account than on your own. But, Walter, you must learn to bear the decrees of fate with fortitude."

I replied, that, in spite of my best endeavours, she was continually uppermost in my thoughts. Her image was constantly before me; and, when I laid down to rest, it seemed to come and repose upon my pillow. This feeling, sentiment, fancy, or whatever the reader may choose to name it, continued for a number of years. So powerfully

did it act upon my imagination, that, whenever I was engaged in any affair of importance, whenever I undertook any thing difficult of execution, it seemed by my side, as if ready to afford me assistance or advice. When I laid down at night, her features exhibited themselves to my view in all their beauty and sweetness of expression, accompanied with a slight tinge of sadness that only rendered them still more touching. In this way I was never alone. I always felt as if I had a companion by my side; a guardian angel, who hovered around me by day and night.

We left Paris in the evening, and travelled all night. I will not attempt to describe again our route back to Bordeaux, because it was the same we had previously travelled. On arriving near the town, we saw a diligence, full of passengers, sticking fast in the mire. It had got into a large slough; and, although the driver procured the assistance of some peasants, with ropes and a couple of horses, all their efforts were fruitless. The passengers became impatient, desiring to be freed from their prison; which was at length accomplished by laying boards upon the mud for them to walk on, the slough being so deep and soft that the horses could not use their strength to draw the carriage out, although aided by a dozen men. Indeed, the driver made no further efforts to extricate it, but ordered the peasants to bring him a half a dozen oxen. Whilst we were looking at the diligence, one of the passengers, a genteelly

dressed middle aged man, expressed his sorrow at being detained on the road, when his mother, whom he had not seen for several years, lived only a little more than a day's journey from Bordeaux. Our cabriolet being commodious, we offered him a place in it. He had been a conscript, and served several years in the army, in which he attained the rank of major. The constant solicitations of an aged mother and his sister, who had no other male relation to protect them, made him resign his commission and return to live at home.

"I have listened to the voice of nature and filial duty," said he, "and have sacrificed my ambition to those I love; yet, I confess, it was not without a struggle, for I had reason to expect a rapid advancement to the higher grades of my profession."

He related some entertaining anecdotes of the late Emperor of France; one of which will, perhaps, not be deemed uninteresting to my readers. Napoleon would, sometimes, put on an old surtout, without epaulets, and stroll about amongst the bivouacs of the soldiers, to hear their opinions of his plans. One evening, after a long and tiresome march, he walked forth in his usual disguise; his intention being to make another rapid advance the next morning, and, coming suddenly upon the enemy, to attack them unawares. Drawing near to a company of old grenadiers, of his favourite regiment, he heard his name pronounced, and im-

mediately stopped to learn what was said concerning him. A veteran, who was seated before the fire, smoking his pipe, was listening to a young man, standing near, who said, —

"Our emperor is the devil, and he thinks we are devils like himself, insensible to the feelings of hunger or fatigue."

"Why, what's the matter now?" said the veteran, as he blew a large whiff of smoke from his pipe.

"We have been marching hard," retorted the young soldier, "for the last week, and almost always on a scanty allowance: to-day we have finished a forced march; and I overheard the colonel tell the captain of our company that we shall have another to-morrow, to bring us up unexpectedly with the enemy, whom we are to attack the moment we overtake them."

"What!" exclaimed the other, "without giving us a moment to rest our weary limbs?"

"So said the officer," replied the young man.

"Don't you believe a word of it," replied old Firelock: "listen to me. I have heard, the enemy have only a few light pieces of artillery, and no cavalry. What do you suppose our cunning general is going to do with his cavalry and flying artillery, who are many miles a-head of us?"

"Why, they will await us, I suppose," said the other.

"Not a bit of it," said the grenadier. "I know the little hero better than you. By this

time they have their orders to make a circuitous march, and arrive in the rear of the enemy the day after to-morrow. We shall not be hurried, and shall move only about two thirds of the distance to-morrow, when we shall halt early, get our suppers, a good night's rest, and, on the morning following, a nourishing cup of chocolate, with an exhilarating glass of brandy. This will be early, say between three and four o'clock in the morning; and then, my young cock, you will be ordered to whet your spurs, and be pushed on, for four hours, with all your speed. About eight o'clock we shall attack the enemy, charge them at the point of the bayonet, route them from their position, and then our flying artillery and cavalry falling on will complete their defeat. I have served many campaigns with this little end of a man: leave me, then, to know how he means to act."

Napoleon had no intention of employing his flying artillery and cavalry in the manner indicated by the veteran grenadier; but he lost no time in profiting by his scheme. He despatched one of his aides-de-camp to give the necessary orders, and followed the soldier's plan to the letter. The moment this was done, he took the captain of the company with him to the bivouac, and, pointing out the grenadier, obtained his name and term of service: he was a corporal. The marching orders of the next day corresponded exactly with what the grenadier had told his comrades,

and they were all astonished at his foresight. In short, they got their night's rest, the chocolate, and the dram, exactly as it had been predicted; and before eight o'clock they were at the enemy's outposts, whom they soon routed, and drove from the field with great slaughter.

No sooner was the battle ended, than Napoleon sent for the grenadier, who had greatly distinguished himself during the combat. The moment he made his appearance, he embraced him, and presented him with an order and a lieutenant's commission.

"There," said he: "I have learnt how much you have distinguished yourself to-day, and congratulate you on your advancement."

The soldier was overpowered by his unexpected good fortune; but, after a few seconds, made his acknowledgments in such a gentlemanly one that the emperor was delighted with him. On further inquiry, he found he belonged to a very respectable family in reduced circumstances, and that he had received a good education.

"How," said Napoleon, "did you like my plan to-day?"

"It was admirable," replied the soldier; "but, to tell you the truth, general, I have served so ong under your orders, I almost guessed what you were about."

Napoleon took him aside, and said,—

"I profited by your advice. I overheard what you said to your comrades, and lost no time in

putting your scheme into execution." Then, grasping his hand, he added, "Keep this to yourself: we must be friends: I shall take care of you." The man afterwards distinguished himself in several battles, and was finally promoted to the rank of a general.

This anecdote proves the truth of what I had often heard of Napoleon's character, namely, that he never missed an opportunity of bringing forward men of worth and talents. He was consequently surrounded by officers of genius and merit, who, owing their advancement entirely to him, served him with zeal and fidelity.

We slept at the station; and our lively companion entertained us, during the evening, with his adventures, many of which were highly interesting. Ere we retired to bed, we learnt that the diligence had been, with difficulty, drawn out of the slough by six oxen and as many horses.

We started very early the following morning, the officer having made us promise to stop and breakfast with his mother, whose estate lay immediately on the road. About nine o'clock we drew near to a very neat-looking stone house, in the porch of which two elderly women and a young lady were seated.

"This is my home; yonder are my mother and my sister!" exclaimed our companion.

He was so animated at the sight, and in such a hurry, that he hardly gave the postilion time to stop the horses before he sprung from the carriage,

and, in an instant, was locked in the ardent embraces of his affectionate relatives. They were so affected at his sudden appearance, although he had written to warn them of his coming, that they shed floods of tears, and almost swooned away for joy. The scene was a touching one, and brought tears to our eyes. When they were sufficiently recovered, he introduced us to them, and mentioned, with more warmth than it merited, the obligation he was under to us for taking him from the diligence. His mother, a fine, handsome featured, respectable-looking old lady, expressed herself extremely obliged to us for helping to restore her son to her, and hoped we would do her the honour to spend a few days at her house.

"There is a neat village," said she, "almost adjoining my farm, situated on the banks of a pretty little river, and we can offer you some very agreeable excursions during your stay. I am sure you must require a little rest and recreation after such a long journey."

This hospitable invitation was pressed upon us by the son, but we refused; and, having convinced them of the necessity of our arriving speedily at Bordeaux, they consented to let us depart after breakfast. His sister was a beautiful brunette, with piercing black eyes, a sprightly, animated countenance, regular features, fine teeth, and a colour on her cheeks that, if it had been united to a clearer skin, would have been strikingly brilliant. As it was, I could not deny her the palm

of a distinguished beauty; and a very genteel, unembarrassed deportment served to heighten her attractions. Her simplicity of manners charmed me; for in France there is too much of what I call made-up deportment, or, to render myself better understood, a sort of theatrical display of person, which may occasionally attract attention, but oftener the satire of those whom it is intended to fascinate.

I could plainly see that the brother, whom I had heard extol the beauties of Paris, beheld his beautiful and accomplished sister with silent admiration. There was a handsome pianoforte in the sitting-room; and, at my request, she played and sung two or three national airs, with great taste and without hesitation. The old lady, all this time, was bustling about and giving orders for the breakfast, though she every now and then came back into the room to kiss her son, each time exclaiming, "Thanks be to the Almighty God, who has granted the poor widow's prayer!"

The breakfast consisted of excellent coffee and cream, cheese, butter, eggs, ham, omelettes, and all sorts of dainties. Nothing was deemed too good for the amiable strangers, as we were styled, who brought a beloved son to the arms of a longing mother. When we had finished our meal, the old lady showed us over her vineyard, farmyard, and dairy. She assured us she always superintended the vintage and wine-making herself, as, likewise, her dairy; adding, that she was



ably, we took leave of this
made a rapid journey to Bor
for us, there was a ship p
America in ten days, and w
following our arrival to secu
She was bound to New Yo
fast-sailing, sharp-looking shi
burthen, too long for her b
covered, at the first glance, s
call, in their technical languag
meaning, that she ships a g
and keeps the feet continually
we were to be cabin-passenger
objection; and, there being n
for some months, we settled w
made preparations for going ab
warning.

On getting clear of the co
experienced some strong gales
and, as I predicted, our ship was
soaker," but was crank, weal

she pay'd off three or four points from it, and was near swamping in the trough of the sea. We, therefore, had no other resource left but to scud; and, even then, we ran the risk of foundering, for we shipped several tremendous seas over the waist, one of which pressed her into the ocean, so that we thought she would never rise again. Our captain was, certainly, one of the most skilful seamen I ever saw. During the storm he scarcely slept a wink, standing constantly by the helmsman; and to his care and management alone were we indebted for the vessel's escape from foundering.

We were no sooner clear of the Bay of Biscay, than the wind blew with a steady gale, the sea was smoother, and the waves more regular, which not only relieved the ship, but likewise the crew, who had been pumping for three or four days without intermission. I asked the captain how he had the courage to go to sea in such a shell of a ship, that was constantly in danger of perishing?

"This is the fifth voyage," said he, "that I have made in her, but it shall be the last. At the close of each I have suffered myself to be talked over by the owners, though I was twice very near being lost, for she broached-to, and one of those mountain waves fell in upon us and swept our decks. On that occasion I had one of my officers and three men washed overboard."

Notwithstanding all her bad qualities, however, in good weather she was what the sailors call "a



severe gale from the north-
such violence, that, had we
two anchors ahead, we sho
out of the bay. The wind h
east, and became a snow st
month of February, and ou
consequently more than ever

Our friend, Tom Bryan, w
greet us on our arrival; ar
could say to the contrary, w
powered by his hospitality an

I shall not trouble my re
scription of a journey they
me before. It is, however,
to say that I found the tave
road, much improved. The c
exhibited proofs of a rapid a
culture; and, as we entered the
with the number of addition
reared up their heads during
absence. We met an hospita
same lodging-house where we

week after, he declared that he should be ready by the 10th, at farthest.

Although the intermediate time was busily employed, and I had every thing about me that could occupy or divert my thoughts, still I found it impossible to prevent them from reverting to her whose image, in all its beauty, was constantly before me. At length I received a letter from my American friend, announcing his own marriage, and that of the Count de Montaubert, on the same day; describing the delight and happiness he experienced in the possession of his beloved Julia. He added, that Lise's health was fast declining. "We all," said he, "strive to divert her melancholy, and avoid mentioning you. This, however, seems to offend her; and she once told her sister she considered us extremely ungrateful in having so soon banished you from our remembrance. She asked me the other day where a letter would find you. I found it impossible to deceive her, and was obliged to give your address; but, at the same time, mentioned, as delicately as possible, what your orders were. 'Ah! would you be so cruel as to deprive me of this consolation?' she exclaimed. 'His motive was honour, delicacy, and a tender regard for my feelings.' And then the tears rolled down her languid cheeks." I could read no more, but threw the letter on the table. A suffocating sensation, and a violent palpitation of the heart, seemed to check my respiration. I was for some minutes quite

overcome. At length, I thought I saw Lise smile and beckon me to her. Then, again, she seemed dejected, and motioned me to remain where I was. My agitation continued until tears came to my relief, and the load that pressed upon my heart grew lightened; but I had not courage to read the letter through.

I will dwell no longer on the history of my feelings, but return to the subject of our voyage. Captain Cooper's affairs went on gaily: he seemed in high spirits, often talked of his project, and was impatient to put it into execution. As I was particularly charged with the care of the stores, provisions, live stock, &c., and, indeed, furnished him the list of what was to be purchased, he begged me to attend on board to see that every thing received was exactly according to my orders. Having nothing to detain us in Philadelphia, we immediately repaired to a small sea-port, about sixty miles farther down the river, where the ship was moored, for the purpose of attending to these matters. Here I received them, and was well satisfied with every thing except the fowls, which were nearly double the number necessary; the man who supplied them having stuffed the coops so full that the poor animals were almost suffocated. I made him take one half of them back, at which he was offended, and complained to the captain, who came and looked at the coops.

"How thin they are," said he, "we shall have too few for our long passage."

"I am an old caterer," I replied. "You have left this to my judgment, and therefore you must not interfere. If the coops were thickly stowed, more than half would be suffocated or trodden to death. Now, every bird has room to move, and I will answer for it you will have very few deaths besides those inflicted by the cook's knife."

My explanation was satisfactory, and matters were settled as I had directed, to the great chagrin of the poulterer.

In two or three days all was prepared, and, a fine fair wind springing up, we ran down the Delaware with a flowing sheet, and in a few hours more were on the swelling bosom of the briny ocean. We crossed the gulf without scarcely feeling its effects, and, the breeze continuing fair and strong, we made our passage to the trade winds in a very short time.

In less than six weeks we found ourselves in the meridian of the pitch of the Cape of Good Hope; after which the north-west and south-west winds, alternately, swept us along with a rapidity I had never before experienced. We went seven to eight knots an hour continually, with a smooth sea; nor had occasion to lash the cabin-table once during the whole passage. After passing the Islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam, we began to make our northing, and were equally fortunate; the wind continuing fresh and fair through the straits of Sunda, Gaspar, and across the China Sea: so that, in 110 days from the time we left

the Capes of Delaware, we cast anchor in the Bay of Manilla. During this time we had never experienced but two squalls sufficiently strong to make us lower our top-gallant sails; and we took a single reef in our top-sails but once, carrying our top-gallants over them.

This passage deserves a place in the annals of navigation, as one of the most extraordinary ever performed, as well for speed as for fine weather. We dined every day with the table spread, and the decanters, tumblers, and wine-glasses placed as they are on shore.

The sailors grumbled all the way about it.

"I say, Tom!" said a fellow, one day, to his messmate, "we shall work up all the yarns in the ship before we get half passage out; besides, we shall forget how to lay out upon the yard-arm and haul home the weather-earing. These youngsters here will not learn to reef, or hand a sail, for want of practice. They do n't yet know what it is to take a trick at the helm when a ship's scudding. If the surly old god of the ocean do n't pay us up for it on our homeward passage, then call me a lubber's brat."

"Sink me if I would n't sooner see the spars crack in a dozen gales of wind, than have such smooth river-sailing for a month of Sundays. Why, the landsmen have not had their corns fairly softened since we left the shore!"

"True," said his comrade; "this is what you may call a lubber's passage; for we hav'n't had a

squall hard enough to blow a fly off the main truck. Shiver my timbers! if I shouldn't like to have a blast or two from old Boreas, if it was only for variety's sake; for I 'm sick of working up spun yarn, mats, and gaskets."

"Whose luck can this be, Tom?" said another.

"Why, the captain's, to be sure," replied Tom.

"Not a bit of it," retorted his comrade; "for our captain was formerly a lawyer; and when lawyers turn sailors, the devil comes in a gale of wind to blow them to ——."

"Then," said a fourth, "it 's the cabin-boy's, for he 's a country bumpkin, who don't know how to keep his sea legs aboard in rough weather; and would have had the cat on his back half a dozen times a day for breakage and spillage."

No doubt several more opinions would have been given, but just at that moment the boatswain piped all hands to dinner, and put an end to the conversation. However, I received a letter from Captain Cooper the year after, in which he said that his homeward passage was as rough as the outward one had been mild: so that the old sailor's prediction was verified.

At Manilla we were received with great hospitality, the commander of the fortress being a countryman of ours, and he introduced us to all the genteel families of the place. The captain was so occupied with his scheme, that he forgot to take us with him when he went to see the governor-general. His excellency, however, sent for us,

and the captain was not a little astonished, when the hour of dinner came, to meet us at the door. After being there a few days, Cooper discovered that he ought to have made his application to the mother country, as the governor of the colony had not unlimited power, and could not sell an island belonging to his king without special permission.

I was much pleased with the inhabitants of Manilla, particularly with the ladies. Many of them are from Spain, and are sprightly and engaging: they are very fond of strangers, and have a singular manner of proffering their services and hospitality. When you inquire after their health, they answer, — "Well, to serve you in my house and my person:" and, again, "My house and myself I lay at your feet." This wonderful generosity at first overpowered and alarmed me. After awhile, however, I found it was only what we call in Ireland *balderdash*, or an adulterated hospitality, composed of unmeaning compliments, polite expressions, to flatter the ears with agreeable sounds, but which are as insincere as our salutations of "I am most happy to see you," "I hope I see you well," &c.

"This unmeaning, complimentary style," said my guardian, when I found fault with it, "exists in every country; but I think, with you, that amongst some nations it is carried to an almost criminal extent: and there is no doubt that it insensibly produces duplicity of conduct. One of the most pleasing traits in the Quaker character

is their strict regard to truth, and the neglect of all superfluous terms and compliments, calculated to deceive and induce people to think they intend more than what they express. This severe observance of plain speaking certainly leads to plain dealing."

What ought we to think of a person who says, "My house, and all that is in it, is at your disposal," and the following day refuses the most trifling favour? My readers will say it is a thing of course, and well understood by the great world. This does not prove, however, that it is either good, just, or correct; nor is it in the least necessary. Fashion has established many things of a similar nature, which are intrinsically immoral, base, and ungenerous; and, when we reflect how many there are who are led away by these examples, it is greatly to be lamented that plain speaking and sincerity have been almost wholly banished from the higher circles.

"Ha!" said my guardian one day, as he looked over my journal, "a traveller and a moralist! Take care how you touch upon this tender chord, or you will frighten your readers—I mean the fashionable ones—before they get half through your volumes; and they will throw the book into a forlorn corner, or else send it, as a present, to some of their simple country cousins, who are fond of dry reading."

"Why," said I, "as I only break forth now

and then, they can turn the page aside, and pass on to something more agreeable."

I hope my readers will excuse this digression, excited by the insincerity of the complimentary language of Manilla, which is imported by the Spaniards from the mother country; for I found the natives had a different manner of receiving strangers. With them, the pipe, and the offer of a certain kind of nut, with leaves, to be chewed, is the kindest way of entertaining guests; and they are by no means lavish in their professions of friendship.

The native women of this island are tall, handsome, and well formed, possessing more softness and grace in their manners and gestures than any savages I ever saw; and they have more energy of mind and body than those of hot climates generally. It is also worthy of remark, that the half-castes, between them and the Europeans, are the most languid, insipid, monstrous creatures in the world. The natives have much browner skins than the half-castes, but they are soft as satin. They are lively and animated, with black melting eyes, long eyelashes, fine teeth, beautiful expressive mouths; and the rosy colour of health plays upon their dark cheeks. I do not mean to infer that the half-castes are not handsome also; indeed, some of them have very beautiful features; but, displaying no elasticity of mind or body, they are uninteresting blocks of mortality, whose counte-

nances are so lifeless and unvaried, that one becomes tired of looking at them in a short time.

The rich and princely creoles, I mean the men, are indolent beyond conception, and are said to be very jealous. They are fond of the natives of China, numbers of whom are allowed to settle on this island, for their industrious habits render them valuable colonists.

We made an excursion of thirty to forty miles into the interior, to a large lake, the source of the river that passes through Manilla. There we found a very fine race of men; and the women were even superior in shape and figure to those of the town.

On our return, Captain Cooper informed us he could no longer entertain the faintest hope of succeeding in his scheme; it therefore only remained for him to make the best sale he could of his cargo, and prepare to depart immediately. In three days more we were under sail for Canton, and on the sixth day after leaving the island we anchored in Macao roads.

It was forty-eight hours before we got our passport, but, having a fine fresh breeze from the sea, we arrived at Whampoa, a distance of upwards of ninety miles, in about eighteen hours.

CHAPTER IV.

As I wished to spend some time in Ch
acquainted with the British admiral on
station, I obtained the appointment of co
to the ships of war and cruisers visitin
and Canton. This service, although s
very difficult and dangerous, left me ne
the year free to employ myself in any man
suited to my taste or caprice. Not long
wards I received another letter from Julia
band, on his return from the springs with h
and the lovely but unfortunate Lise, whose
he announced. The reader will naturally
clude what a shock this news was to my feel
He stated that her health gradually declined
the day of my departure. The marquis wa
tentive at first, but grew cooler as he perce
her illness got the better of her spirits. He
not accompany her to the springs. My friend a
his wife, finding their sister's health getting wor
instead of being restored, as they had fondly an
cipated, took her back, by easy stages, to Par
She lingered only ten days afterwards, and
length resigned her breath almost without
struggle. "In her last moments," said my friend
"she spoke of you frequently; prayed to God to

bless you; and desired me to assure you once again of her love and gratitude. 'Tell him,' said she, 'that my last sigh breathed forth his name.'" This melancholy account of Lise's attachment, and the manner of her death, rendered me so unhappy that it required all the philosophy and energy I was master of, assisted by the consolations of my affectionate guardian, to enable me to conquer the sadness and dejection it produced.

I answered my friend's letter by the first ship that returned to Europe; and although some months had elapsed, the renewal of the subject produced sensations the most painful. I was three days, writing only at intervals, in finishing my letter, and then I felt as if I had been relieved from a terrible load that pressed me to the earth.

Having sealed it, I put it in my pocket, and we set out together to deliver it to the captain. His lodgings being near our own, we soon arrived there, and found him busily preparing for an early departure. He was a hard-faced, surly-looking son of Neptune, very rough in his manners; and though he commanded an American ship, it was easy to see he was not a native of that country: indeed his language plainly showed he was from Ireland.

"Here, captain," said my guardian, "are a couple of letters, which, if you will have the kindness to put into the post-office for Paris, on your arrival at Rotterdam, you will particularly oblige us." He stared for a moment, and then said,—

ppeared agitated; and, suddenly, throwing the etter up on the table, and looking at me, he xclaimed, whilst the tears came in his eyes,—

"Zounds, sir! you have unmanned me, and set my eye-pumps a working. Fold up your letter; I can read no more; but I promise to take it,—and yours too, sir," said he, addressing my guardian, "provided you will only give your word of honour, that it contains no commercial information. Curse upon these mercantile prohibitions," said he, wiping his eyes, "that make us appear more unkind than we really are!"

"Make no scruple," said my guardian, "about reading mine also. I can safely swear to what you demand; but, I pray you to satisfy your scruples, as you are bound to do by your owners."

"No!" said the captain warmly. "Enough has been said to satisfy my conscience; and I have read sufficient to prove, that I am not the only man in this world whom cruel destiny has thwarted. But come, gentlemen, ye are countrymen of mine; I shall finish packing this box in a few minutes; stop and take a glass of wine with me, and I will tell you my adventures,—for this gentleman's letter (pointing to me) drew me on to read from line to line, until, at last, it opened the wounds afresh, which I thought time and apathy had entirely cicatrized."

We accepted his invitation. Whilst he was busily occupied in packing his box, my guardian observed to me, "Behold, Walter, how difficult it

is to judge of men by their features
your manner that you took this
rough, uncouth, vulgar fellow; but,
mistaken, we shall find him a very
of a character."

"He certainly has an unpromisi
said I, "but my opinion of him is alre
The emotion he just now discovered
tear of sympathy which followed, do
to a vulgar or a hardened heart. His
are rough from habit, but his language
and I hope to hear something that will b
of a place in my journal."

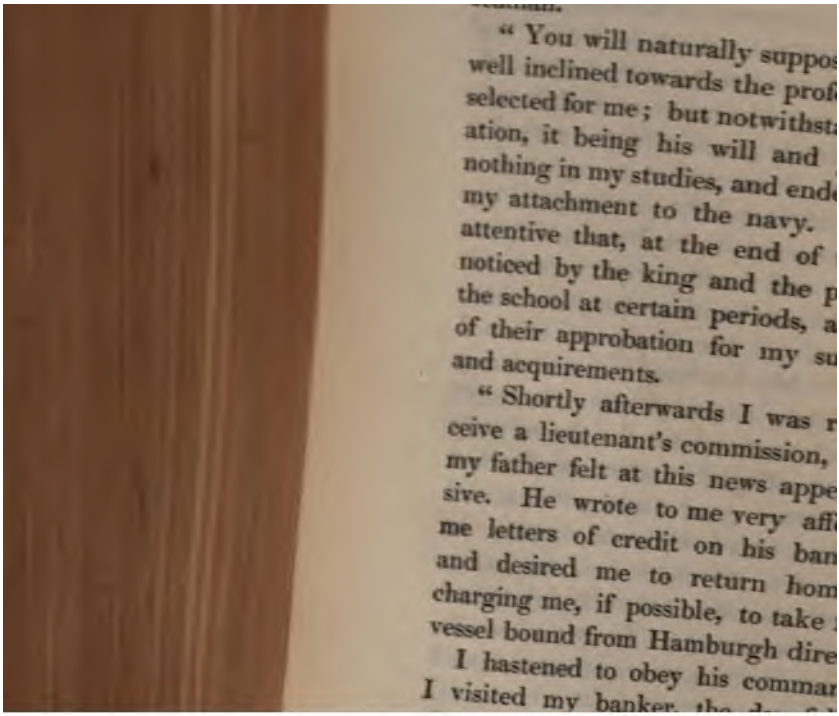
In a few minutes his box was packed, t
served; and the captain, as he seated him
us, said, with a smile of benevolence, such
first I thought his hard features incapa
expressing,—

"Thank God! 'Tis better late than n
as the old proverb says. Ever since I ar
here, I have been desirous of making your
quaintance, having heard from a friend of m
you were natives of Ireland; but, I have be
almost constantly at the roadstead, and had
leisure to seek you out. Allow me to tell you, M
Brabazon, that I have known some of your rela
tions at home; and, at New York, your old friend
Mr. Bryan, the lawyer, is my generous protector."

We expressed our satisfaction at this inform-
ation; and, without farther preamble, he related
his story as follows:—

"I am a native of the county of Limerick. My father was a country gentleman of good estate; and being an only son, his great care was to give me a finished education. I went through all the usual studies preparatory to entering the university, at an excellent school in Cork; and the moment I was deemed sufficiently instructed, I was sent to finish my education at Dublin college. There my favourite pursuits were astronomy and navigation; and, I succeeded so well, that I twice obtained the first prize. I spent all my leisure hours at the port, where I was curious to examine the ships; and made myself acquainted, not only with their construction, but their sails, rigging, tackle, &c., all the names of which I learned by heart. My fondness for a seafaring life made me ardently desire to enter the navy; but my father had destined me for the military service, and I was obliged to submit. He had been told that I was a good mathematician, and he, therefore, determined I should become an engineer. With this intent, I had no sooner finished my career at college, than he despatched me to the military academy at Berlin; where, he was assured, I should be better instructed than I could be at home.

"During my voyage from Dublin to Hamburgh, my fondness for the sea-service was increased. What I had treasured up before in theory was now seen in practice; and I became such a pro-



" You will naturally suppos
well inclined towards the prof
selected for me; but notwithst
ation, it being his will and
nothing in my studies, and end
my attachment to the navy.
attentive that, at the end of
noticed by the king and the p
the school at certain periods, a
of their approbation for my su
and acquirements.

" Shortly afterwards I was r
ceive a lieutenant's commission,
my father felt at this news appe
sive. He wrote to me very aff
me letters of credit on his ban
and desired me to return hom
charging me, if possible, to take
vessel bound from Hamburgh dire

I hastened to obey his commar
I visited my banker, the

was of no consequence, as I was never sick at sea; that I could sleep anywhere; and that I should be satisfied to receive my meals in the steerage. I added, that certainly it was not very pleasant to eat alone, but I would sooner submit to this arrangement than lose such a good opportunity of going direct to Cork. I went away well satisfied, having first ascertained from him that the ship would sail in four or five days at farthest, and that I must prepare myself accordingly.

" The following evening I received a note from him, requesting I would be at home at twelve o'clock on the morning of the next day, as he wished to call and introduce to me a rich Italian merchant, who was desirous of making my acquaintance. At the hour mentioned, the banker's carriage arrived, and I repaired with him to the house of the merchant, where I found a very large company of gentlemen and ladies. On entering, the host received me with great politeness, presenting me to his wife, a very handsome, well-bred lady, also an Italian. At my first glance round the room, I was struck with admiration at the expressive features and beautiful figure of one of the young ladies. It would seem that the feeling was reciprocal; for whenever I happened to turn towards her, I found her eyes fixed upon me.

" You must know, gentlemen," said the captain, " that I was then only twenty-two years of age, and was a much handsomer man than at

present."—Indeed, it was easy to see that he had formerly been what is called a fine, manly-looking fellow. He was tall, his complexion was dark, and his features strongly marked and expressive.

"All this time," continued the captain, "I had been standing talking to the host and hostess, and the persons surrounding them; but when I left them to take a seat, the only chair vacant was one by the side of the young lady whose beauty had attracted me. After being seated, I addressed her in the German language, supposing her to be a native of Hamburgh; but she replied in Italian, begging to be excused from speaking German, which she knew but imperfectly. Whilst we were talking dinner was announced, and, of course, I did not lose the opportunity of offering her my arm, and had the satisfaction to sit beside her. When she resumed the conversation, although she pronounced the Italian very well, I quickly discovered she was a countrywoman, and immediately said to her, in English,—

"'Is it not absurd for two persons born in Ireland to speak to each other in a foreign tongue?' Looking at me with astonishment, she exclaimed,—

"'Is it possible you are a countryman of mine, yet speak Italian so well that I thought you had been born in Italy?'

"This agreeable discovery, and, as I could perceive, a favourable disposition towards me, soon led to more friendly communications; and ques-

tions of who I was, and where I was going. I said I was returning to Cork, in such a vessel, to sail on such a day.

"'It is very singular!' said she, with an air of surprise and pleasure. Then, as if recollecting herself, she added, 'But how can that be, when my father assured us he had paid an extra price to secure the cabin to himself?'

"I answered, by relating what had occurred, and the arrangement my banker had made for me. I spent a delightful evening, and drank deep of the stream of love which flowed from the melting black eyes of the beautiful Emma Doyle, for that was the name of my fair enchantress.

"By ten o'clock the next morning we were all on board, and the ship under sail for Ireland. The sea was by no means smooth: a fresh breeze bore us away at the rate of seven knots an hour, and all the passengers, except myself, were sick and confined to their beds. Our captain, whom I soon perceived to be a young, inexperienced seaman, was astonished at my knowledge. I took the sun with him, having a sextant of my own, calculated the reckoning, and told him the run of the ship to a figure, even more correctly than he could do it himself.

"Three days passed away without my seeing any of Mr. Doyle's family. On the fourth, however, they all came upon the quarter-deck, where a place had been purposely prepared for them; and I had frequent opportunities of conversing alone

with Emma, when I poured forth the feelings of my soul, and received her tender sighs and confessions in return. However, I dared not ask her in marriage until we should arrive at home, for I well knew my father's temper; and if he had fixed upon a certain career in life for me, nothing could induce him to alter his determination.

"Matters went on thus for some time, when one morning as we began to draw near the end of our voyage, suddenly the weather looked cloudy, and threatened a gale of wind. Breakfast was scarcely over when the storm commenced with great violence. However, we were well prepared for it. The top-gallant masts and yards had been struck down upon deck; all the light sails clewed up long before; the mainsail, foresail, and mizen handed; the topsails close-reefed, and clewed down upon the tops; so that we were as snug as ship could be, and might literally be said to go under bare poles.

"Mr. and Mrs. Doyle and their family appeared in great alarm. They frequently consulted me during the day; but, to avoid the necessity of an explanation, I affected to be as ignorant as themselves. There was something truly awful and touching in the scene which presented itself to me whenever I entered the cabin: a father and mother, sitting with clasped hands and eyes turned up to heaven, surrounded by their children, on whose features terror and despair were depicted in the strongest colours. Although this was the first

time of my life I had been placed in such a painful situation, yet I felt the necessity of firmness and resignation to the will of God; without which, thought I, if we are thrown upon the coast, we shall be unable to make exertions to save ourselves.

"I was young, strong, and an excellent swimmer, and had been always remarkable for my courage and presence of mind. Feeling a sort of elevation above the changes and chances of this mortal life, I addressed them seriously; begged them to put their trust in God; that though we were not then in imminent danger, we probably might be; and advised them to think more of how they should save themselves in case of shipwreck, than suffer their minds to be enfeebled by despair.

"'One thing,' said I, 'I promise: if any accident does happen, I will share your fate. I will save you, or perish in the attempt.'

"The family embraced me alternately, the father and mother showing the example; and never shall I forget the warm tear shed by Emma upon my cheek, as I fondly pressed her to my bosom.

"'Now,' said I, 'call for me no more. I shall be upon deck: there I can be of service to you; here I am useless.'

"'Go!' said they, 'go! and God protect you!'

"I hurried from the cabin. It was indeed a night of horrors, which it would be difficult to describe in all its awful colours. The bell struck eight. It was midnight; and instead of changing

the watch,—for the wind had increased,—all hands were called. The waves rolled mountains high, and, curling their green and foaming tops, they burst upon the vessel's decks with a fury that swept all before it. Two of the crew, who neglected to lash themselves, were hurried away into the fathomless deep; for there was no chance of rescue.

"We endeavoured to bring our ship to the wind, in hopes she would lie-to, being fearful of getting swamped by the tremendous seas which fell in upon her waist; but in the attempt, the main-topmast, with the yard and rigging, went by the board, being carried away just above the cap: after which she fell off into the trough of the sea, and the next terrible wave, raising her up suddenly, threw her on her beam ends. In this dangerous position the sea made a clear breach over her. All my cabin friends now clambered, as well as they could, to the gangway, where they held fast by the ropes, calling on me by name. I put my head down the companion, begged them to preserve their courage, and I would soon come to them.

"Seeing the captain so frightened that he knew not what to do, I took the trumpet and cried out,—

"'Cut away the foremast, men! with all haste.'

"'Well imagined, sir,' said the chief mate, who was standing by me; 'it is the only thing to save us.'

"'Come, said I,' 'let us scramble about our-

selves, and lend a hand.' Then, with a thundering voice, I shouted again through the trumpet,—

"'Be brisk, lads, if you wish to save the ship.' And the mate added,—

"'See that you cut away the starboard shrouds and lanyards first, and all the rigging, that there may be nothing to check it.'

"We had a fine smart crew, and in less than half an hour the mast went by the board, and the ship, to our great joy, righted. She had, however, a great deal of water in her, and all hands were busily employed at the pumps. The moment the ship was on her bottom again, and the wreck cleared off a little, I descended to the cabin. Its terrified inmates hung about me, like children round a father; and Emma called me their saviour. I was affected to tears. However, I told them to be calm, for the danger was not yet over; and getting a tumbler of wine and a biscuit to recruit my strength (for I had worked as hard as any of the sailors), I went again upon deck to watch the weather.

"During the remaining part of the night, we were driven about like a log upon the ocean; the sea breaking over the decks so violently that we were all obliged to hold fast by the rigging, or lash ourselves to avoid being washed overboard. At length the morning broke; and, as the streaks of light burst through the black clouds, we beheld the frowning cliffs of Ireland under our lee. Terrific and appalling sight! I perceived at the

first glance that it unmanned the captain. He looked at me for a confirmation of his fears, and then exclaimed, 'Oh! we are lost for ever!'

"'For shame!' said I; 'you, as the captain of the ship, ought to show an example of firmness. Cheer up, man! let us try and ascertain where we are. The wind is abating; and I think, from our course since yesterday morning, we must be well up the channel.'

"This expostulation appeared to rouse him. Just as I had done speaking, he looked again at the land, that was now growing more and more distinct.

"'By heavens!' he exclaimed, 'but you are right! There, Mr. Morgan,' said he, to the mate, 'there's the old head of Kinsale.'

"'Clap the mainsail on her, then,' said I, 'and try to keep along the coast, for the wind is not more than a point or two before the beam.'

"'Ho there, men!' he shouted; 'loose the mainsail; goosewing it, and let us try and keep the ship off shore.'

"As soon as all was in order, and we perceived, that although the vessel made a good deal of lee-way, she still kept on parallel with the coast, I went again to my cabin friends with the welcome tidings that the storm was abating, and that we saw land. They all came hanging about me as usual; when I advised them to lie down, and endeavour to take some rest, for they appeared dreadfully pale and haggard.

" ' Thank God! and you, our brave and active friend!' they all exclaimed with one voice, and then retired to their berths. The moment they were gone, I desired the steward to bring the book of charts and a candle (for it was still dark below), in order to see if we were not near our port; for the captain continued so alarmed at the sight of the land, that it was not improbable he might run past the Cove of Cork, and, in our crippled state, it would have been exceedingly difficult to get back again. I showed him that the old head of Kinsale now bore off our larboard beam, and advised him to give the ship a couple of points free, which would shape our course direct for the harbour. In a short time, the goose-wings were shook out of the mainsail, and the studdingsails set. The ship made good way through the water; and in one hour more, a Kinsale pilot boat, that was seen beating out to board us, came alongside. The wind growing fair, and the sea smoother, we made all the sail we could carry in our shattered condition; and in a couple of hours more were safe at anchor in the Cove of Cork.

" All this time our poor fatigued cabin passengers slept soundly. I made the steward and the servants prepare every thing for breakfast, the pilot having brought with him fresh fish, eggs, and potatoes; and I charged every one not to mention where we were, until they discovered it themselves. When they were all assembled, I observed that Emma looked languid, but more beautiful than

ever; and, as she gave me her hand, she softly whispered, 'It is to you we owe our lives!'—'Yes,' said the mother, 'can we ever forget the obligations we owe you!'—'Never!' said the father.

"Whilst we were congratulating each other on the stillness of the elements, the son rushed into the cabin, crying out, 'Come upon deck! We are safe at anchor in the Cove of Cork!' In an instant the cabin was deserted; the mother observing, with an affectionate smile, as I assisted her up the companion way, 'And is it thus that you cheat and overpower us with joy!'

"In a short time afterwards we got into the harbour; and now the hope of soon seeing my father, and obtaining his permission to ask the hand of the lovely Emma, filled my whole soul, and agitated me so I thought every minute an age until I was on my way to his residence at Limerick. I felt severely at parting with Emma, not knowing when I should see her again; however, her father and mother gave me the most pressing invitation to spend some days with them at their country seat, the moment I had liberty to absent myself. This, although highly gratifying to my feelings, and consoling as it regarded my attachment to their daughter, did not entirely calm my doubts and apprehensions. I knew my father's manner of marking out the road for me in every thing, and trembled lest he might have a secret scheme of sending me to the other end of the world, or of marrying me to some person on whom he had fixed as a suitable match. Alas!

how little did I imagine the catastrophe that awaited me, or I might have spared myself the trouble of those tormenting conjectures.

"I must now inform you, gentlemen, that my father sent me a letter of credit for fifteen hundred pounds; out of which, after paying some debts I had contracted at Berlin, and my travelling expenses, passage, &c., there remained about four hundred, which I kept to show that I was not in the habit of expending money foolishly, as some young men do, merely for the sake of throwing it away upon trifles, or in dissipated company.

"With a palpitating heart, I won't say a gay one, for my mind was oppressed by an awful presentiment for which I could not account, I left Cork about seven o'clock in the morning, and continued my journey without rest until I arrived at my father's house. Jumping impatiently from the carriage, I knocked for admittance. After some delay, an elderly man, to all appearance an upper servant, slowly opened the door. As I was about to pass him hastily, he said, 'Wait a moment, if you please, sir. You cannot enter without first letting me know who you are, and what is your business.'

"'Pshaw!' I replied; 'don't stop me. I am your master's son, just arrived, and I wish to see my father.'

"'Asking your pardon, sir,' said he, 'but my master is a young man who has never been married.'

" ' But my father?' said I, naming him.

" ' Oh! Lord, sir!' replied the man, ' he has been dead these five weeks; and his nephew, the heir at law, lives here, and has got possession of his fortune.'

" Thunderstruck with this dreadful and unexpected intelligence, I was so affected that I should have fallen, if the servant had not lent me assistance.

" ' My God! sir!' he exclaimed, ' what is the matter? Was the old gentleman really then your father? Shall I bring you a chair? Will you have a glass of water? What shall I do for you? I am sorry I told the news so abruptly!'

" ' No matter, my good fellow,' said I, recovering a little, ' tell me how and when my father died?'

" He then related that the old man had a violent dispute with a neighbour, and on returning home was seized with an apoplectic fit, which put a period to his life in half an hour afterwards: that he left no will, and that consequently his nephew was the legal heir to all his property.

" Gentlemen," said the captain, " you may readily conceive what a shock I must have experienced; but hoping for the best, and imagining that although the nephew had taken possession of my father's fortune, he would not be so ungenerous as to leave the son without a penny, I told the servant to announce me, and say I requested an interview with him. The man led me to the

ante-chamber before my father's library; and, after begging me to be seated, went to deliver my message. During his absence, a thousand conjectures tortured my brain. He returned shortly, saying his master requested me to walk into the library, and he would come to me immediately. On entering the well-known apartment my feelings were excruciating. I saw every thing exactly as in my father's lifetime; and then suddenly recollected hearing him say, that his nephew was an avaricious, disagreeable young man, who had designs on his fortune, but that he was determined he should never enjoy a penny of it. At all events, thought I, even allowing him to have died with or without a will, still the proper heir must be his only son; and surely this man cannot be such an ass and rogue together as to imagine, because I have been absent, and he has got possession of the property, he can filch it from me. No! thank God! in this civilized portion of the world, such illicit acts are not to be performed with impunity.

"Whilst I was chuckling at the assurance of a son's rights, and those of an *only son*, being superior to all others, the door opened, and in walked a man, about thirty years of age, and certainly of a most unprepossessing aspect. His complexion was dark and sallow; his eyes small, black, and piercing; while large overhanging brows, a wrinkled forehead, and an enormous mouth, gave a severe and vulgar expression to his whole coun-

nance. Curling his upper lip with a half contemptuous smile, he asked who I was, and what might be my business with him. To this question I mildly replied, by an assurance that I could prove, to his satisfaction, by letters and documents in my father's hand-writing, that I was his only son, whom he educated at Dublin, and afterwards sent to the military school at Berlin; from whence, after finishing my studies, and fitting myself for the engineer service, I had returned, in compliance with his orders, as his letters would plainly show. He listened to my explanation with great attention; and then said, with a curious smile,—

"'Sir, I do not deny, or attempt to dispute what you say you can prove, namely, that you are the only son of my uncle; but I must beg to tell you what *I have proved*.'

"'And what is that?' said I, hastily.

"'That my uncle *never was married*, and, consequently, *never could have had a legitimate child*,' he replied, with a diabolical grin of inward satisfaction. 'That is the reason,' continued he, 'why you find me in his house, and in possession of his estates, being the only true and legal heir; and I now beg leave to assure you, that I shall never cede my right to you, or any other man breathing, who cannot show a superior claim to the inheritance.'

"My feelings on this occasion are easier to be imagined than described, when I reflected that I should be publicly branded as the child of shame,

the moment I attempted to prefer my claim. My cheeks glowed with indignation; yet, the idea of being turned a beggar upon the wide world, and, although a natural son, to be left pennyless, when I knew my father had been possessed of abundant wealth, was equally galling. However, I kept my temper, and answered, in a gentle, but firm tone—

" ' Supposing what you say is true, and which I cannot pretend to doubt, seeing that the law has put you in possession of the estate, surely you will not be altogether so selfish and avaricious as to refuse to grant me a small annual stipend out of his very large property, to enable me to live, and push my fortunes in the army? I do not solicit this as a pension for life, but merely for five or six years, until I can exert myself to get forward in my profession.'

" With a look of contempt, that froze my very soul, he coarsely replied,—

" ' Sir, your appeal might have had some effect, if my uncle, during his life-time, had not treated me like an entire stranger. Then, perhaps, I might have known and have felt some desire to serve you; but now, I candidly confess, I feel no such desire; nor do I recognise any law, either human or divine, by which I am bound to provide for my uncle's natural children. He may have had a dozen, for any thing I know to the contrary; and if he has not thought proper to make a provision for them himself, it is his fault, and not mine. So, sir, without wishing to have any further

altercation on the subject, I must require you to leave my house! Should you have any legitimate claims or rights, which, by the by, I doubt, the laws of this country are open to you; and, as I am by no means disposed to have my leisure intruded upon by every one who chooses to call himself my uncle's son, I beg, in future, you will regulate yourself accordingly. Allow me to wish you a good morning.'

"He then bowed slightly, and, ringing the bell, told the servants to 'show that gentleman the way to the street door.' He retired, and left me stupified at his unfeeling conduct in presence of the servant, who, more humane than his master, approached, and said, in a respectful tone,—'Will you permit me, sir, to conduct you?'

"'Lead on,' said I, 'my good fellow; it is hard to be walked out of one's own house; but no matter — God's will be done!'

"Just as I got near the street door, I heard a hasty step at my heels; and, turning round, beheld my father's old steward, who accosted me with tears in his eyes.

"'Ah! your honour,' said he, 'long life to you! and may God protect you! for here you have nothing to hope. Your poor father went off suddenly, or he would not have left you destitute. Peace be to his soul!—he loved you, and I love your honour, for his sake. Tell me where I shall find your honour, and all I can rake and scrape toge-

ther of my long earnings shall be at your service!"

"'Enough of this, old man,' said I, shaking him by the hand; 'I admire your gratitude, but I cannot think of making use of your money. Thank God! I have what will keep me from starving; and I am young, strong, and active. But tell me where is the cheapest place I can put up, so as to live decently and economically, for I cannot support the expense of an hotel?'

"He followed me out of the door, and, after giving the driver some directions, he turned to me, and said,—

"'God be with your honour!—keep a good heart! By my soul, but I know you have good courage, and won't be down-hearted at what can't be helped.'

"I thanked him, shook him by the hand again, jumped into the carriage, and in a few minutes more was set down at the door of a decent-looking inn.

"The moment I was alone I threw myself upon a sofa, and was, for a half an hour at least, absorbed in deep thought. A thousand suggestions flitted at once across my mind. I had scarcely time to think of one thing when another intruded itself. My wandering ideas at length settled upon Emma, and what a cruel disappointment it would prove to her, and indeed to the whole family, to hear, first, that I was an illegitimate son; and next, that I was penniless!! All their ardent

professions of friendship and gratitude rushed upon my recollection.

"Surely, thought I, these cannot be mere empty words! There was so much warmth, feeling, and sincerity in their manner of making them, they could not have been feigned. No, impossible! If they really love me, seeing I am a gentleman and a man of honour, of what consequence is it to them who my mother was? Alas! thought I again, poor fellow! the prejudices of the world are against you! Yet, am I to blame? If there is nothing more to accuse me of than the misfortune of being a natural child, really Mr. Doyle can have no good reason for treating me with contempt, though he may find my want of fortune a sufficient bar to a union with his daughter.

"These tormenting reflections laid deep hold of me, and, at length, in despair, I concluded that until I could better my fortune in some way or other, it would be mean and dishonourable to attempt to intrude upon them. They must have heard of my misfortune, for news of this kind quickly flies abroad; and if I were to visit them, they might feel embarrassed in what manner to receive me. Not to receive me at all, would be unkind and ungrateful; but how to receive a poor natural son, without fortune or protection, so as to avoid wounding his feelings? Ay, thought I, there's the difficulty. Let me not put them to the trial.

"Then, it occurred to me that I was in my native

city, a perfect stranger. I knew no one, though every one knew me; and the moment I should appear in company, the finger of derision would be pointed at me. Who could have been my mother? was another thought that came to perplex and annoy me. My father always told me she died when I was only eighteen months old. Strange that he did not also tell me I was an illegitimate child! and still more strange he did not provide against the accident of sudden death, and the loss of the entailed property, which he must, of course, have known the law would take from me the moment he was in his grave!

"When I reflected on this want of foresight, so contrary to his character, and so little corresponding with the strong attachment he showed me publicly, I confess I felt more than ever convinced of the falsehood of my cousin's story. But how was I to get at the truth? My enemy had already eleven points of the law in his favour, and had branded me with the odious name of bastard.

"Judge, gentlemen, how cutting this reflection must have been to the feelings of a man bred up with the keenest sentiments of honour, and with all the prejudices of high birth; for often had I heard my poor father exclaim,—

"'Thank God, who has given me a male child to inherit my fortune, and carry down to posterity the noble name of S——, which dates its origin from the kings of our province!'

"Is it probable, thought I, that, knowing his child to be illegitimate, he would have boasted so often of his son and heir, as he used to call me?

"Full of these ideas, I was deliberating how to proceed in order to penetrate the mystery that hung over my birth, when the door of my room opened, and in came the old steward. He looked at me stedfastly, bowed, and said in a faultering voice,—

"'Long life to your honour! Although you have not arrived to good luck, God be praised that you are safe in Ireland!'

"'My good honest fellow,' said I, 'I know you always loved my father, and knew intimately every thing relating to his property; tell me, therefore, honestly, are you aware of his having made a will, and, if so, what became of it? Have you ever heard him mention my mother? Who was she? Tell me, I conjure you: for I am persuaded, that you, who have lived so long with him, and enjoyed his confidence, cannot be altogether ignorant of these matters.'

"The warmth with which I addressed the old man alarmed him; he was for some seconds before he could answer me. At length he said,—

"'For God's sake, your honour, don't speak so loud! There is only a thin partition between us and the next apartment; and I should be loath to let any one overhear your questions. I followed your honour purposely, to find an opportunity of talking with you in private. I must

tell you now, for I should not die in peace if I were to conceal it, although I was sworn solemnly on the holy cross; but as this was done against my will, I made a reserve, and therefore consider myself free, as far as it regards your honour. Your father *did* make a will: I saw it, and was present when it was signed by two of his friends as witnesses; but they are since dead, and the will has either been concealed or destroyed by his nephew, — I won't call him your cousin, your honour, for he is not a blood relation, and has no more right to the estates than I have.'

" 'But my mother?' said I.

" 'Your mother, Lady S——, for she was an heiress in her own right, married your father privately, in order to preserve a property left her by an uncle, which she was to enjoy all her life, provided her husband was a Protestant; but if she connected herself with a Catholic, it was to pass into the hands of her cousins. The secret was kept for upwards of two years; and your father reaped all the advantages. At the end of that period, it being discovered and proved, the estates passed away from her, and two months afterwards she fell sick and died. The proofs of this marriage, together with the will, and indeed all the other valuable writings as you were absent, were immediately seized upon by your father's nephew, who administered to his estates, as being the nearest relation on the spot. On getting possession of the papers, he directly perceived that by

concealing or destroying the testament and the marriage certificate, he could maintain your illegitimacy without fear of contradiction.

" ' One day as he was sitting in my old master's cabinet, looking over the will, I happened to go in suddenly to ask his directions respecting some business. The sight of a document which I had so frequently seen before immediately arrested my attention. Observing that I had fixed my eyes upon it, he asked me why I looked so steadily at the papers?

" ' They are old acquaintances, especially one of them,' said I, pointing to my master's will. ' I did not sign it myself; but I heard it read, and saw my old master and the two witnesses put their signatures to it, so I knew it again in a moment.'

" ' Oh! ho!' muttered he, and a dreadful frown overspread his countenance; ' then you are an accomplice of my unnatural uncle, and his two base witnesses to this deceitful, lying document, in trying to deprive me of a rightful inheritance, to give it over to his base-born son? But I have you in my power. Your wages for the last five years have not yet been paid; those you shall never receive; besides, I'll prosecute you immediately for being leagued with my uncle, and have you transported, as a lesson never again to unite with those who are guilty of fraud and impeding honest men from receiving their dues.'

" ' This speech, uttered with a voice of thunder, and a look that chilled the blood around my

old heart,—made me tremble all over like a leaf. I fell upon my knees and prayed for mercy, assuring him of the innocence of my intentions, and my ignorance whether the documents I saw were legal or not. Why, said I, persecute a poor old man, or deprive him of his well-earned wages, because he had the misfortune to be present at the execution of a deed which he could not controul, and had no right to oppose?

"'His brow now became relaxed, and he said, in a softer tone, 'Then you really did not intend to assist in their diabolical scheme?'

"'This is the first I heard of it, your honour,' I replied, for I always thought the young gentleman in Prussia was my master's true-born son, and the will like all other wills.'

"'Well, then,' observed he, with affected mildness, 'I'll pay you up the balance of your wages, and keep you in my service; nor will I attempt to prosecute you, provided you will consent to what I propose. This will and marriage contract are both illegal, as I have proved to the satisfaction of the Court of Chancery; or how otherwise could I have obtained possession of the property? Being then of no use to any one, I shall put them out of every one's reach, to prevent future litigation. As you, who are the only witness to their existence now surviving, might mention them inadvertently, here is the sacred book of our religion, and the cross; swear on them solemnly, before God, never to reveal to any

one breathing what you know of these papers, or of the manner of their execution. This done, I shall feel satisfied, and not before.'

" ' Excuse me, your honour,' said I, ' if I tell you, that I never took such a solemn oath in my life; and where will be the use of it? for, whilst in your service, I shall always be in your power. It is a dreadful thing to swear, your honour!'

" ' Come,' said he, with another terrible frown, ' I'll hear no excuse; take the oath, or you and I are sworn enemies, and we shall see who is the strongest.'

" ' God forbid, your honour,' said I, ' that I should be considered an enemy to any one, much more to my old master's nephew! Since you insist upon, I must comply.'

" ' He took the book, and placed the cross upon it. He laid my right hand over the cross, and then dictated the oath, which I repeated; but, take God to witness, I reserved in my mind the right of telling you all that passed. What else was I to do, your honour, — a poor, helpless, old servant, in the power of a wicked man? After robbing me of my wages, which was all in the world I could call my own, with a blasted character he would have thrust me into the street. Alas, my beloved young master! it grieves me to the soul to see you thus cheated out of your inheritance — but I fear all is lost! For how are you to prove your mother's marriage, if these documents have been destroyed? The priest who married

them is dead. Her Catholic relations have all emigrated to Maryland, in America; and there is not a soul on the sod of old Ireland, except myself, who has the slightest knowledge of the matter. As to the will, it is not of so much consequence, for the moment you prove yourself legitimate, all the property must be yours by law. Ah!' cried he, with tears in his eyes, as he closed his story, 'how unhappy was your father's sudden death for us all!'

CHAPTER V.

"During the old man's recital, I felt my bosom moved by the conflicting passions of love, despair, and revenge. For some seconds after he had finished, I was totally absorbed in these feelings, until, recollecting my impotent situation, I sighed deeply, and exclaimed—'Alas! old man, I am undone! that fiend in human shape has so completely got the better of us; and I now see no possible chance of asserting my rights. However, thank God! and thanks to you, old man,' I continued, shaking him by the hand, 'I am now satisfied that my mother's fame is unspotted, and feel consoled in reflecting I am not what they take me for, let the world say what they please. This consciousness will bear me up in adversity, and make me smile at the scoffs of mankind.'

"When the old man left me, I retired to bed, but not to sleep; my thoughts dwelt on the difficulty of overcoming the untoward obstacles that rose around me like mountains. The emigration of my mother's family to America suddenly occurred to my mind. Why not seek them out? My passage, thought I, I can make, not only very cheap, but profitable, if I choose to engage myself as mate in a merchant vessel; for I know enough

of navigation to perform well the duty of an officer. Thank God! I exclaimed, and my good father, for an education that will enable me to provide for myself in a way suited to my fancy!

"Pleased with this idea, my mind became in some degree tranquillized: I rose, and prayed to God to assist me in the arduous career upon which it would shortly be my destiny to enter. In fact the only thing that now hung heavy at my heart was the thought of quitting my native country, and the spot inhabited by the lovely Emma, the only being in the world for whom I felt a lively interest.

"Still it was necessary to be up and doing. I therefore resolved to go to Cork, as being a large sea-port, from whence many vessels sailed for America, in order to take a passage, or engage myself as an officer in one of them.

"Full of this resolve, I devoted the following morning to the requisite preparations for my journey; but growing tired, and the weather being extremely fine, I determined to take a long walk into the country, and dine at a roadside tavern, or wherever I could conveniently pick up a dinner. Fatigued at length with wandering about, I returned towards Limerick, and began to look out for some house of entertainment. It was not long before I came to a decent little tavern, in the porch of which I seated myself, to inhale the freshness of the air. Before I had been there many minutes I observed a young man, mounted on a

handsome bay horse, followed by a servant, coming up the road, apparently returning home from the city. Judge of my surprise and embarrassment when, as he drew nearer, I discovered my young friend, the brother of the lovely Emma! I would willingly have avoided him, by retiring into the house; but it was too late. He had recognized me; and coming up at a brisk trot, he jumped off his horse, ran to me, threw his arms around my neck, and embraced me in the warmest manner.

"'How happy I am to see you!' he exclaimed. 'Where have you been? What have you been doing for this age past? My father, mother, and particularly Emma, have been greatly disappointed and distressed that you have not visited us, as you promised. This is the fourth time I have gone into Limerick expressly to seek you out, and now I find you at a tavern door on the high road. How unaccountably strange! Tell me, my dear friend! what can have detained you from friends by whom you are loved and esteemed?'

"This unexpected meeting, and truly affectionate address, so overcame me at first that it was some some time before I could reply. On recovering myself I said, in a faultering tone,—

"'Alas, my dear sir! I am no longer the person whom you formerly knew as the inheritor of an honourable name and an independent fortune!'

"I then briefly detailed to him the history of my father's death, my cousin's villany, and my own destitute condition. During the recital my friend's

features exhibited all the various emotions which it was calculated to produce; but certainly nothing which implied coldness, or a change of sentiment and feeling. On the contrary, his countenance was flushed with indignation; and when I described the humble manner in which I entreated my cousin to share with me a portion of my father's fortune, and the contemptuous answer I received, he exclaimed,—

"'Infamous villain! I am astonished you could refrain from sacrificing him to your vengeance on the spot. But enough of this, my dearest friend! Don't imagine that a misfortune, and a cruel, unforeseen one, can ever make the slightest change in the sentiments of my parents and our family at large. We all love and esteem you. We owe our lives to your courage and fortitude, and the crime of ingratitude never yet stigmatized the name of Doyle.'

"I pressed his hand as I assured him that I believed most implicitly what he advanced with so much real feeling; but, alas! it was that which alarmed and rendered me distant. The idea of his family considering themselves bound in gratitude to keep up their connection with me, and to do what, perhaps, was not exactly conformable to the opinions of the world at large, was extremely painful. That my love and respect for them could never cease, and I would fain believe they had a strong attachment for me; but, as I was now situated, it would be mean and ungenerous, on my

part, to recommence an intercourse which could only be productive of distress and grief to his sister, as well as to myself. I confessed that I loved her tenderly; and had been fully determined to ask my father's permission to solicit her hand in marriage, supposing I should have succeeded to an independent fortune — that as fate had otherwise decreed, he must permit me to pursue my present scheme, and excuse me if I refused to trust myself in the presence of those I loved and esteemed too highly to behold again without the keenest emotions of regret.

" ' My dear friend,' said he, again warmly pressing my hand, ' you take a wrong view of the matter altogether! I know not how to return home without you, since this is the fourth time I have been sent by my father to discover where you lived.'

" I hesitated for some seconds, and then said, ' Pray repeat my reasons and objections to your father, as well as my determination to go to America. If, after hearing them, he persists in his desire to see me, I live at the Widow Butler's, who keeps a small shop in the main street, where I intend to remain three days longer; until then I cannot decide on the business.'

" He gave me a look of sadness, mingled with reproach; and a tinge of displeasure darkened his fine countenance, as he replied, —

" ' Since all my endeavours to entice you to us have failed, I must return alone, to the great dis-

appointment of myself and family. I did not think you would have been so obstinate, and so difficult to bend to the wishes of those who are fondly attached to you. Farewell!' Then, stretching forth his hand, he repeated the words, 'Farewell! God preserve you!' and clapping spurs to his horse, in a few moments a turn of the road hid him from my sight.

"I remained rivetted to the spot for some minutes, lost in meditation, until the landlord addressed me with an inquiry whether I would not walk in. Starting from my reverie, I said, 'What! is the dinner ready?'

"'Excuse me, sir,' he replied, 'your honour has not yet ordered it.'

"This caused me to recollect where I was; and desiring him to produce whatever he had, I made a hasty meal, and returned immediately to town.

"My baggage did not require much packing, so that by ten o'clock on the morning of the fourth day after this interview, I was ready to depart.

"It was a fine clear morning, when I left my lodgings; and, under more favourable circumstances, I should have anticipated a very pleasant journey, but the misfortunes which had already occurred to me so occupied my mind, that I felt a sort of listless unconcern for the future. Every thing was bright but my thoughts. I dwelt with gloomy disappointment on the stroke of fate that had

deprived me of what I esteemed above all this world's treasures, namely, the lovely Emma.

" By the steward's advice and assistance, I had turned all my superfluous clothes and baggage into money, and had with me no more than what was barely sufficient for a gentleman to maintain himself decently dressed. I, therefore, set out on my journey with a sum amounting to near three hundred pounds, which constituted my whole fortune. At that time, there was a daring fellow in the county of Cork, named Bradshaw, who headed a gang called the ' Black Band;' and it was only on seeing the coachman and the two guards armed, that I recollected a pair of pocket-pistols, which were in my portmanteau. I, therefore, unlocked it, took them out, and put them into my side pocket. On seeing this, the passenger who sat next to me observed in a careless tone, ' You travel armed, sir?'

" ' I do,' I replied; ' and perceiving our guard and coachman armed with carbines and pistols, I thought it was as well to carry mine on my person in case of necessity.'

" ' Should we be attacked, take my word for it,' said he, with a scornful laugh, ' they will do you more harm than service: if you wound one of the robbers, the others will assuredly murder you.'

" ' But,' said I, " if the guards and coachman fight well, I might be of some assistance in enabling them to beat the fellows off.'

"'Take my advice,' rejoined the stranger, should we be so unfortunate as to meet with one of the gangs now infesting the country, give up quietly what you have about you, and make your peace with them. Indeed, the mere fact of your having fire-arms, whether you use them or not, will excite their fury, and probably cause you to be taken for a disguised policeman.'

"This account alarmed me, and I quickly returned my pistols into the portmanteau, not in the least pleased to reflect on my imprudence in bringing so much money with me. However, it was then too late to repent or repair my mistake; and Emma coming again into my thoughts, I was soon lost in reflecting what a treasure had been snatched from my deluded grasp by cruel destiny. How grieved she would be when her brother returned, and related to her the conversation that passed between us. After accusing myself of too much pride and delicacy in not accepting his disinterested and generous invitation, I consoled myself with the reflection that I had acted honourably; for although Mr. Doyle was rich, he had a son and two daughters. The former would, of course, take all the landed property; and it would not be very agreeable to him to see Emma, whom he tenderly loved, married to a man without a penny. I made hasty conclusions, gentlemen, as almost all young fellows do, forgetful that I had received a good education, and might push my fortunes either in the army or navy with

equal advantage after marriage as before. The sudden deprivation of my property and expectations, in so rude and unexpected a manner, obscured my better judgment, and roused my worst passions — they called for vengeance; but how was it to be obtained?

"These considerations occupied me so deeply during the first part of the road, that I scarcely noticed what sort of persons my fellow-travellers were. All I recollect is, that there were two cavalry officers in regimentals, and one woman.

"About four miles distant from the station where we were to breakfast, I was roused from my reverie by hearing the driver cry out to the guards, —

"'What the devil's the meaning of yon cloud of dust on the road, as if a troop of cavalry were coming? Look out, boys, and prepare yourselves! Who knows but it is that devil, Ben Bradshaw, and his gang! If it is, they'll be after giving us a rubbing down. Ben owes me a spite, ever since the fight we had with him on the Dublin road. So let's be prepared.'

"'Well said, my honest fellow,' observed one of the officers. You may depend upon our co-operation. We must not allow these gangs to harass the country as they have done. This Bradshaw is a sanguinary ruffian, who spares no one; so, gentlemen,' addressing himself to the passengers, 'you had better all assist, for you will assuredly be killed, whether you fight or not.'

"'Don't believe a word of it,' said the passenger

who advised me to put away my pistols, addressing me in an under tone. 'Be advised, and do as you see me do, and these fellows won't hurt you.' I thanked him; and then for the first time remarked his countenance. He was a dark-complexioned, ill-looking man, with a tremendous pair of whiskers; and, altogether, might himself have been well taken for a highway robber. He had a good strong oak stick in his hand, and seemed a cool, determined sort of a fellow.

"'Ho, there! guards, be ready!' suddenly exclaimed the coachman again. 'By my soul! but it's Ben and his comrades! See, what a motley set of blackguards they are! of all sorts and sizes, some on ponies and others on coach horses; the devil's own cavalry all entirely!'

"'Never fear,' said one of the guards, hastily unbuckling the leathern covering which protected the lock of his carbine, 'we'll stick by you; but, by Jasus! there's a posse of them: I doubt they'll be after giving us some hot work!'

"'Hark ye,' said the coachman, 'let me fire first: whilst I put my nags to their speed, and try to make a lane through the vagabonds, do you give them the contents of your carbines right and left.'

"'Well imagined,' said the officer; 'and we will fire also: if, after all, they succeed in stopping the coach, we must try the fortune of war, close-handed, with our broadswords.'

"During this rapid dialogue, my neighbour's

features exhibited a ferocious smile; but he kept silent, and I followed his example. We were eight persons in the diligence: there were two outside passengers; these, with the coachman and the two guards, made altogether twelve men and one woman. What prospect had we of effectually resisting eighteen or twenty desperadoes mounted, and furnished with pistols and cutlasses? However, I really believe, had the coachman's advice been adhered to, we might have made a lane through them, as he said, and then have maintained a running fight until we got beyond their reach. But the rashness and impetuosity of the guards ruined all. They both fired before the coachman, and so frightened the horses that he had no longer any command over them. One reared, another galloped, a third kicked; and not pulling together, nor setting off at full speed, and in the confusion they were easily seized and stopped. The driver was killed upon the coach by a shot from Ben's carbine; and the guards, with the two outside passengers, shared the same fate. Directly that the coach stopped, the officers fired from the window, and then jumped out with their drawn sabres; but my neighbour, quickly following, knocked one of them down with his club, and they, as well as the other inside passengers, were instantly transfixed by the pikes of these ferocious brigands.

"Seeing how ill matters went, I remained in the diligence with the poor woman, who had fainted

ay, and lay for dead. Presently, my neighbour t his head in at the door, saying, 'Come out re!' and, addressing the chief of the gang, lded, 'Ben, I recommend this man to mercy, ecause he listened to good advice; but, as a onsideration for saving his life, we must have the ining of his pockets.'

"I sprang out of the diligence: the robber started back on seeing my size and figure. Then, coming near to me, he said,—

"'Let's see what you have?' My comrades, I find, have not got much, besides wounds, for their pains.'

"When I produced my pocket-book, his eyes sparkled with pleasure.

"'There it is,' said I; 'take it; it's all I have in the world, except my watch: do you wish to have that also?'

"'No,' said he of the large whiskers; 'what he says is true. 'Tis young S., whom that niggardly scoundrel, who ought to have been hung ten years ago, cheated out of his father's estate, and has made the world believe the man's a bastard. Look at him! A fine, stout, well-made gentleman, as you'd see in a long summer's day. If he's not the true son of his father, whom I've seen many's the time, and an honest good man to the poor he was, then I'm not Tim Drury.'

"'Sir,' said Ben, 'you look down-hearted at the loss of your money, but we lads must live; and, besides, we have to relieve our poor com-

rades in poverty and trouble. The best thing you can do is to join us; and, by Jasus! if I'm obliged to do it myself alone, but I'll play that fellow a trick who robbed you of your estate.'

"I hesitated: when my black-whiskered neighbour added,—

"'Come, there's no use in thinking too long about it. By following my advice you saved your life. Take, now, the best horse of the four that are harnessed to the diligence, and let's be off; for I know there's a party of cavalry on the look-out.'

"Without saying any thing in answer, I went and pulled my portmanteau out of the diligence; but finding it had also been rifled, I was about to leave it behind, when Tim said,—

"'Take it with you—I'll get all your *duds* back again in good time.'

"Having unharnessed a fine young horse, I threw it across his back; and, jumping upon him, we then rode off, leaving the poor woman and an elderly man in the coach, more dead than alive. Proceeding in silence at a rapid rate, through bye-roads and God knows where, for about three hours, we came to a bog. We crossed it on a narrow, swampy foot-road, that trembled beneath our steps, one behind another; and when on the other side, rode about half a mile further on, where we entered a small forest, thickly overgrown with brush and underwood. On reaching the thickest part of a clump of large

ees and bushes, the band halted. I then observed to my friend Tim, that I did not know how I felt, but that I should like to eat and drink, as I had not breakfasted this morning.

"'Be asy,' he replied, 'we shall all eat and drink soon. Have patience, young squire, you shan't want for a plenty; only, perhaps, it will be rather coarser than you have been accustomed to.'

"In a few minutes afterwards several women came to take our horses, and Tim desired me to follow. About a hundred yards further, in the centre of the wood, under a large oak, I saw our breakfast was prepared. It consisted of sour milk, potatoes, the better part of a fine fat sheep roasted, and a batch of eggs. Ben and his black-whiskered friend were very attentive to me; and their comrades, who were a set of cut-throat-looking fellows, consequently, behaved with more respect than, under all circumstances, I could have expected of robbers.

"Their commander was about five feet eight inches in height, with a remarkably ample breast and shoulders. He had light hair, dark-blue eyes, and good regular features; and though, altogether, his countenance might be styled handsome, it had a fierce, determined air, which his unshorn beard and enormous whiskers rendered still more savage.

"Before we commenced our attack on the sylvan repast that lay spread before us on the verdant turf, the captain examined into the condition of the

surviving members of his band. It appeared that two of the party were slightly wounded; one had been so severely injured, that he remained behind, and another was killed outright.

"We now turned-to upon the potatoes and mutton with a keen appetite; Captain Ben offering to those who wished it a drop of the real home-made stuff, as he called it, to keep up their spirits. Such of the lads as had wounds made light of them; they bound them up with their handkerchiefs, or a bit of an old shirt; and, by the captain's advice, stanched the blood with a little whiskey, outside and inside. Whilst we were at breakfast, five more of the party, who, it seemed, had been despatched on another expedition, returned with a considerable booty in money and clothes; they also brought two horses and some fire arms.

"I asked Ben if he was not afraid to remain any time in one place, lest the cavalry should be sent after him?

"Oh!' said he, 'I have my scouts and my spies every where, who give me immediate warning. I can go in two hours, across the country, to places which they would be as many days in reaching; so ignorant are they of the bye-roads, and places we frequent. Besides,' added he, 'one of our stout-hearted fellows is worth a dozen of your trained soldiers, who only fight by rule; we, squire, fight with a stick better than they with a

sword. There,' he continued, pointing to a stout, well-built young fellow, about twenty-five years of age,—' if there be a man in Ireland who can beat down his cudgel with a cutlass, then I'll give my head for a foot-ball.'

" Being a skilful swordsman myself, and always very cool and deliberate in my play, I answered, that if they had a good strong broad-sword, I would play a match after breakfast, for the sake of amusement.

" ' With all my heart,' said the young man, ' we are near of an age and of a size ;' and when the breakfast was finished, a cudgel and broad-sword were produced.

" ' Comrade,' said I, ' before we begin, remember we are not to strike each other ! I shall either cut your cudgel out of your hand, or you will beat down my guard ; and whoever does this three times in succession is the conqueror.'

" At it we went accordingly, and, in truth, I never saw a cudgel played in such style before. He kept on the defensive, and parried all my cuts for fifteen minutes, without having his guard broke in upon. After this, changing his method, he began upon the offensive ; and, in the course of ten minutes more, my sword had been three times nearly struck from my grasp. I now threw it down, and gave him my hand, satisfied of his unrivalled dexterity ; for, when at Berlin, I was considered the best broad-swordsman in the college. The

lads were all pleased with our trial of skill, and not less so with the good humour I exhibited on being defeated. I am convinced no swordsman could have resisted my antagonist. His cudgel moved like lightning; the inner part, from his hand to his elbow, covering his body in a half circle, or otherwise, according to the blows aimed at him.

"In a few minutes after our exercise, the robbers separated, every one to his post; and I now found that Captain Ben had his piquets, out-posts, spies, &c., all regularly arranged; while he and his lieutenant, as he called my friend Tim, were here, there, and every where.

"'Get me a fresh horse,' said Ben to one of his men; 'let me have the little brown bay, for I've got twelve miles to make, and to return before our dinner time.'

"The captain then disappeared for some minutes, and when he reappeared I scarcely knew him. He wore a country gentleman's grey riding coat, leather breeches, and white top-boots. A pair of holsters, with pistols, were at his saddle-bow; a hunting whip in his hand; and, altogether, he had the appearance of one of those fox-hunting squires frequently seen in the south of Ireland.

"'What think you now,' said he, 'of Ben Bradshaw? I am going to a fair about twelve miles off, where I am to meet some of our friends, and to hear from them if we are to protect a poor fellow who has had his cattle [illegible] for tithes.'

"'Why,' I replied, laughing, 'you are now a ooth-faced country squire; nevertheless, I think vas a pity to shave off that fine thick beard, ich gave you such a fierce look.'

"'Oh!' said he, 'I can put it on again, when-er there is any necessity. That beard is my otector. No one besides my own gang and par-ular friends knows me without it; so that, when-er I leave it at home, not a soul knows me to be en Bradshaw; but Ben, with the bushy beard, very body knows. I am going to the fair to buy horse, for we have need of one,—and I'll sit n the tents, and at the taverns, and talk and augh with the very people who, I am aware, are charged to discover and take me. Even if they knew me,' continued he, with a contemptuous curl of his upper lip, 'they dare not lay a hand upon me. I've more friends at the fair than they have; and, if they were only to show their teeth, we should give them, by Jasus! what the drummer gave the drum,—a very sound bating.'

"Then springing into the saddle of his bonny brown bay, without putting a foot in the stirrup, he called aloud to me, as he gallopped off, 'Good bye, squire—keep with the lieutenant to-day; and to-morrow we shall give you your station apart.'

"A few hours after he was gone, Tim said, 'Hear me, squire. Go, ask one of the women to give you a saddle and bridle, and the horse you had to day. Make what haste you can. Fling

this broadsword (pointing to the one I played with against the cudgel) over your shoulder; mount, and be ready to start the moment you hear a whistle. Our captain will be home directly: he is going to lie in wait for a party of cavalry that have been despatched round the bog in search of us: but, before they get half-way, we shall cross it by a path known only to ourselves; and, falling upon them from our ambush, we'll give them such a lesson as they'll not be able to repeat to their friends.'

"'In for a penny, in for a pound,' said I: 'I have enlisted under your captain, and I must obey his orders.' I, therefore, started off; and in about ten minutes more was ready for the field, mounted on the young horse taken from the stage-coach. I had, likewise, a good saddle under me with holsters, containing a pair of loaded pistols; and my broadsword was an excellent one, otherwise the blows it received from the cudgel must have shivered it to pieces.

"On hearing the whistle, about five minutes afterwards, I gallopped into the wood, and found twenty-six fine fellows, including Ben and his lieutenant, all well armed and mounted.

"'Now, follow me!' shouted their leader; and away we went, at a round gallop, until we got to the bog. This we crossed by a path as before; and, as soon as we reached the opposite side, he planted us behind a thick copse that skirted the road.

" ' Alight here,' said he; ' and be careful, men, to keep yourselves and your horses as still as mice. The moment you hear my signal, mount again. At the second whistle ride forth in a body; and, having discharged your pistols, lay about you with your broadswords. Although I know there are thirty or forty of them, yet, my brave boys, I have led you to encounter still greater odds; and feel satisfied, if you allow a single man of them to escape, it will be only to carry back the news of how well we wiped them down, the rascals!'

" During the time we remained in ambush, I confess my reflections were far from being agreeable. I was going to fight under the orders of a rebel and an outlaw, against the legitimate authorities of my country; this rather goaded my conscience, and produced feelings of compunction. However, I reflected that this was not the time to reason about the matter; I must either fight or be dishonoured, and, probably, shot by my own comrades.

" Whilst I was still turning the matter over in my mind, the first shrill whistle was heard; and, in an instant, every man sprang upon his horse's back. Our captain let the troop pass us a little before he whistled again, when we darted forth upon their rear at full gallop, firing our pistols, and then attacking them sword in hand, as directed. Fortunately for us, Ben, at the outset, mortally wounded the officer in command; but, not-

withstanding his men were disheartened, they fought bravely, until only six or eight remained in their saddles, and those fled from us at full speed. We attempted to overtake them; but, their horses being better than ours, they got clear off. After securing all that was worth carrying away, we hastily quitted the field of battle; and, recrossing the bog, returned to our hiding-place.

"I participated in many similar expeditions during the period of my connection with this band of desperadoes; besides some horrible acts of house-burning, driving off sheep, cattle, &c., with a number of other atrocities, dreadful to reflect upon. I had been, notwithstanding, unremitting in my endeavours to obtain news of Mr. Doyle's family, but was a long time before I succeeded. At length, one of our spies, whom I bribed handsomely, brought me the mournful intelligence that my Emma was no more, having died broken hearted on learning I had deserted her to turn highway robber. Existence now seemed perfectly valueless. My grief, and the remorse by which I was visited at intervals, drove me almost to distraction. Still I continued the same desperate career; and, with a reckless indifference to life, became the most resolute of the gang. Every difficult enterprise was now confided to me; and the forlorn hope, under my guidance, always proved successful. It would seem that I bore a charmed life; and, at length, my name was more dreaded than that of Bradshaw [illegible]f.

"I am very conscious, gentlemen, that you must regard me with horror; and no doubt wonder how a man of good principles, educated in the paths of honour, and brought up in the fear of God, could be so led away as thus to act in defiance of all laws, human and divine. It was the impious desire of revenge, gentlemen, that rankled in my heart, and urged me on to desperation. This vilest of all passions subdued my virtue, my religion, and my better judgment. The conviction of my error did not completely take possession of my mind until I had committed many dreadful outrages. After Emma's death, suddenly I felt a remorse of conscience—a dreadful disgust for the mode of life I was leading, and a repentance, so truly sincere, that I dedecided on leaving the gang, and getting into another province, where I could remain secreted until an opportunity offered of reaching Dublin, in order to put my original plan of emigration into practice.

"This determination had been made some time, but, as yet, I had not found a good opportunity to signify my intention to my comrades; for the captain and his lieutenant were both laid up with severe wounds, and I was intrinsically the chief, I might say the soul, of the gang, who, to a man, would have sacrificed their lives for me. However, my mental sufferings becoming daily more insupportable, one evening, at the time when our consultations for the night's work commenced, I communicated my intentions to Ben Bradshaw and

the rest. They were in despair at the mention of it; and endeavoured all they could to persuade me to remain until one of the two was sufficiently recovered to resume the command.

"I answered, that, to convince them of my attachment, I would continue ten days longer; but, after that period, no earthly power should detain me. I assured them that the political chiefs of their party would not protect them; that they had merely used them as tools to embarrass the government, and to carry certain measures into effect; but, if they were all taken, and condemned to be hanged to-morrow, not one of these demagogues would move a finger to save them from the gallows.

"'Then,' replied Bradshaw, 'they are a set of double-faced scoundrels: let me only get well again, and I'll not suffer myself to be plastered over with their Blarney oil any longer; but disperse my gang, and follow your example.'

"'Wisely decided,' said I. 'Reflect seriously on the business. Sooner or later there must be an end to our career. We are branded as outlaws; a price has been put upon our heads; and, when matters between the two parties come to a close, we only shall be the victims.'

"In the course of about fifteen days, the captain and Tim were quite recovered; but, as they seemed still to hesitate, and make objections about breaking up the gang altogether, I determined to quit them forthwith. For this purpose, I had

previously obtained a suit of clothes from a priest of my acquaintance, to whom I made my confession; and, being an excellent, pious man, he not only endeavoured to confirm me in my determination, but promised to assist in my escape. After conversing with him for some time, I found he was a native of Connaught, from whence he had lately returned. I immediately questioned him concerning my father's brother. He informed me that he had been dead some years; but that his son was alive and possessed a good estate, and, though a catholic, had contrived to unite the esteem of both parties with the love of the poor, to whom he was a liberal benefactor.

"'Father O'Neil,' said I, 'I am resolved to visit my cousin, who is the next heir to the estates of my father; for, though I can never claim them myself, I should not die in peace if they were left in the possession of that villain, to whose unfeeling conduct I owe all my errors and misfortunes.'

"'Hold, my son!' said he: 'is it thus you manifest the repentance of which you so lately spoke? The desire of seeking out your relation, and instructing him how to obtain the inheritance which, as an outlaw, can never be yours, is just and honourable; but let not this praiseworthy motive be degraded by schemes of vengeance. These are unholy, and ill become him who professes to have confessed his crimes before God, and to have prepared himself to lead a life of virtue and repentance.'

" ' Excuse me, holy father,' I answered, ' if I have been too warm in the expression of my feelings; but, believe me, they are now no longer of the revengeful cast they were formerly. My acts shall be passive and obedient to the rules you have laid down for the government of my conduct, and the safety of my eternal soul.'

" ' Enough, my son,' replied the priest; ' and may heaven prosper thy endeavours! Stay a few minutes, whilst I prepare for you an introduction to one of my brethren, who lives near your cousin. When you are about to quit Connaught, he will procure you a safe guidance to Dublin, where, however, it will be imprudent for you to remain: embark, the moment you arrive, in some ship about to sail immediately; for the police keep a strict watch upon all such as take passages to America.'

" After receiving the letter, I took my leave, and returned to bid an everlasting farewell to my old companions.

CHAP. VI.

'On the road I stopped to rest myself at a poor hut, near the edge of the bog; not being decided in my own mind whether to cross over to Ben that evening, or sleep at the turf-cutter's and go to him early in the morning. On reaching the door, a man who was coming out, supposing me to be a priest by the garb I then wore, asked my blessing.

"'I thought you were Father O'Neil, for whom we had sent,' said he, in a respectful tone; 'but it 's all one,—you 're one of our holy fathers. Enter, sir, and receive the confessions of a poor sinner at the point of death.'

"On opening the door, he led me into an inner apartment, where, horrible to relate, I beheld the wretched Bradshaw in the last agonies of death. He was covered with wounds; but the mortal one was a cut from a sabre, which laid open his brain, and from which the blood gushed every time he breathed. My feelings were greatly excited at the dreadful spectacle; but I had the firmness to conceal them, and endeavoured to make the dying man sensible that I came to ask the Almighty to pardon his offences, and receive

his sinful soul. He did not recognise me; but, making a sign that he understood what I said, he raised his eyes to heaven, and breathed his last.

"I then called the turf-cutter aside, and inquired if he knew me? He replied in the negative.

"'Do you know this man who has just expired?'

"'Father,' answered the turf-cutter, 'it is to you, who have the care of our souls, we must confess the truth, and ask advice and assistance. Only a few hours ago, four of Ben Bradshaw's men brought their leader (for this is he who has just died) here, on a litter, and said, "Honest Tom, our captain is an old friend of yours; let him die in peace. God be with his fearless heart! he cut down four or five of the cavalry men before he received this wound on the head; and we defeated them at last: but they have discovered our haunt, and we must disperse as quickly as possible, so we 'll leave our poor friend with you. There's a five pound bill in his pocket: bury him decently and quietly, and don't wait for us; for our lieutenant, Tim, and a half dozen more of our brave comrades, were killed in the battle."

"'They then put the body down upon this straw, and gallopped off. Poor fellow! he asked for water, which I gave him, and since then has never spoken a word. But what shall I do if they come to seek him here? I have no one to

assist me in burying him, except my wife and a son of about ten years old. Besides, father, I should like to place him in the ground just as he is; so that, if the soldiers search after him, they may find nothing to lead to a discovery.'

"'Have you taken the money from his pocket, as the man told you?' I inquired.

"'God have mercy upon my soul, father,' said he, 'it's well you mentioned it, or I should have buried it with him.'

"The turf-cutter went and examined his pockets, which were all empty, except the one where we found—not five, but near twelve, pounds, partly in gold and silver.

"'Now,' said I, 'first go and hide your money: then dig a hole in the most secret place you can find—I will remain all night to assist you.'

"'I shall not be long making a grave,' said he. 'The best place will be in the soft ground, near the bog, on the left side of the pathway, which is generally so wet and muddy, no one thinks of walking there, and a horse would plunge in up to his knees. Before night sets in, it will be all ready; in the mean time, for God's sake, holy father! see that my wife wipes away the blood, and burns all the bloody straw that's about him. Let her wrap him up in my old frieze great coat: poor fellow! it will serve him for a winding-sheet.'

"He and his son then took their spades upon their shoulders and went off to the work. Fortu-

nately, his comrades brought poor Ben in a sort of a litter of coarse bagging, with two poles lashed on either side; and we did not attempt to move him from it. It was a melancholy task for me, who had known him so long, and had been his companion in many a daring expedition. However, in about three quarters of an hour we had all neatly cleaned away: the corpse was rolled up in the old frieze coat, so that he was easily conveyed to his narrow home; and, by cutting away the poles, we buried him in the litter, as they do sailors at sea in their hammocks. I repeated a short prayer whilst we were consigning the body to its mother earth, and confess that I was moved almost to tears, when the cold damp sods gradually concealed him from our eyes. Having concluded our melancholy duty, we returned to the hut; and the woman gave us potatoes, salt fish, and sour milk for supper, after which I retired to rest on some clean straw. I should have passed a comfortable night, had it not been for the painful reflections arising from a consciousness of the perils that surrounded me. At length, I consoled myself with the idea that I was safe amongst the catholics in the two counties; and, when I should be leaving Cork, I could always get an introduction farther on. Indeed, once out of the latter county, I might pass for a southern priest going to the catholic bishop of Connaught on ecclesiastical business.

"Early the next morning I visited the grave:

it was well covered up, and the turf-cutter had placed a few green sods over it, to conceal the fresh earth. After getting a good breakfast of milk, eggs, and potatoes, off I started: and, during the day, being a good walker, I made at least thirty miles over hedges and ditches, bogs, marshes, and by-paths; for I was cautious to keep as much as possible from the high road. At night, I picked out the most miserable-looking hut to ask for a lodging; knowing that, in the character of a priest, I should not be refused.

"The evening was already growing dark, and the night promised to be darker. I saw that the hut where I meant to stop was in an open country; at least, I could perceive no woods for three or four miles beyond it. This did not exactly please me; because, if I were pursued, there was no place to hide myself. However, being fatigued and hungry, these two causes operated so powerfully, that I went boldly up to the cabin, and, knocking at the door, asked for admittance. The inmates consisted of two men and three women: one of the latter was well advanced in years; the others were apparently the wives of the men, two stout, good-looking fellows. All the family craved a blessing of me, which I freely bestowed; and then said, that, having wandered out of my road, and being tired and hungry, I hoped they would give me some supper and a bed.

"Their welcome was a hearty one, and the table was soon covered with fine hot potatoes, eggs,

milk, and salt fish. Whilst I was supping, one of the men addressed me with — 'Father Morgan,' (for that was the name I assumed,) 'God be with you, and long life to you! but are you not afraid to be travelling alone in these dangerous times? By my soul! there hasn't been a day or night, for the last week, but we have had cavalry or police fellows searching the house—sometimes even after midnight. They say that Ben Bradshaw's gang has been dispersed, and Ben himself killed; and now they are scouring the country to try and pick them up. They go five or six in a party, and, after coming softly within forty or fifty yards of the house, they dismount, tie their horses to the hedge, and enter suddenly, or, if the door is fast, knock, and demand admittance, to search the cabin all over. Besides, father, I heard a fellow say, last night, that one of the gang was disguised as a priest, and he described him as nearly about your size and complexion as possible; so that I would have you take care of yourself."

"I could see that the man guessed who I was, and that his caution was given with a sincere wish to aid me; I therefore made no secret of my real character,—adding, as I thanked him for his friendly communication, 'Then you don't advise me to sleep here to night? I am tired, and want some rest: what shall I do? Cannot I sleep under the shed yonder?'

"'Oh! no,' he replied; 'make yourself easy. If they should come at all, it won't be before two

o'clock in the morning; and I'll show you how to manage. Our garret has plenty of straw; and under the eaves at the back of the house is a hole, through which you can slip down on the ground, and make off with yourself in the dark, whilst they are searching below, to a wood, about three miles distant, where you may hide, so that the devil himself would n't find you.'

"'But, tell me, where do they tie their horses?'

"'At the back of the house, to the only hedge within half a mile of us.'

"'Enough: should they come, do you take care to awake me.'

"This he faithfully promised, and I finished my supper as quickly as possible. Though it was then only about seven o'clock in the evening, I went into the garret and lay down upon the straw, with my feet exactly at the hole mentioned by my host; so that, as the hut was low, I could drop to the ground in an instant.

"It was a fine soft berth, composed of sheaves of oaten straw; and I slept soundly until near day-break, when all of a sudden I felt myself roughly shaken by the shoulder. At the same time I recognised the voice of the cottager, who whispered,—

"'They are at hand, my honest fellow: look well to yourself!'

"On saying this, he hurried down stairs before I was well awake, or had time to collect my senses to make any reply. However, I mechanically

started from my bed, and listened, with painful attention, to catch some sounds from without. All was perfectly still for some minutes; till the snorting of horses, and the clashing of their steel scabbards against the ground as they alighted, sufficiently confirmed the arrival of my pursuers. Notwithstanding the confidence I felt in the means of escape which my present retreat afforded me, when I heard the cavalry men thunder against the door with the butt ends of their carbines, and heard the heavy tread of their iron-shod boots, I confess my heart died within me, and the cold drops of perspiration stood thick upon my forehead. As it was important that I should await the entrance of the whole party, ere I ventured to descend, I sank upon my hands and knees, and applied my eyes to one of the numerous crevices between the rough uneven planks of which the roof was composed. The poor man, who certainly endangered his own life in thus exerting himself to preserve mine, was in the act of unbarring the door, which he had no sooner done than six soldiers burst into the hut.

"'Well, Pat,' said the sergeant who commanded the party, addressing the master of the house, 'we have run the fox to earth at last. Faith, now, and I see ye're ready with a lie; but the man we want is here. He was seen to enter this cabin just before dark: so, comrades, look well about here, while I, with the candle, have a peep at who's aloft.'

"I had heard enough, and, slipping through

the hole, I dropped lightly to the ground in an instant. Then, creeping to the hedge where the troopers' horses were fastened, I unloosed one of them, mounted, and, after walking slowly for the distance of a few paces, gallopped off at full speed for the forest mentioned by my friendly host.

"On reaching it, I dismounted; and, turning the horse's head in the direction whence he came, drove him back at a smart trot. When I thought I had seen him far enough to secure his return to the cottage, I penetrated into the forest, walking leisurely until the daylight began to dawn through the eastern clouds, that I might be enabled to direct my route accordingly.

"It now became requisite I should again change my costume; for my present disguise seemed well known. I had about fifty pounds with me, and, therefore, could easily purchase a suitable dress, the moment I decided on the character I was to assume. This, however, puzzled me, gentlemen; having, as you must perceive, a very strongly marked countenance, difficult to disguise. At last it occured to me that the best plan would be, not to aim at any disguise whatever; but, the moment I got out of the county of Cork, to buy myself genteel clothes, take a seat in the stage-coach, and go boldly to the town where the priest resided, to whom I had an introduction.

"It now began to be broad daylight, and I sauntered along for a couple of hours or more, until, perceiving the forest to become thin, I

changed my course to the right, where it seemed much overgrown with underwood. I had not proceeded above half a mile in this direction before I heard a loud whistle, exactly like the signals used by my late associates, when they were scattered through the woods and wished to unite. Almost instinctively, from habit, and without reflecting whether I was doing right or wrong, I answered it. It was repeated; until, at last, I saw three men approaching me, armed with pistols and broadswords. I felt alarmed, and, having a good oak stick in my hand, grasped it firmly, determined, if necessary, to make a resolute defence. But what was my pleasure and surprise, as we drew near each other, to see three of my former comrades, who as quickly recognised me, and came running up, crying out,—

"'Ho! young squire, how are you? What! have you taken to the old trade again, in the disguise of a priest?'

"'None of your jeers,' said I; 'don't you see I've taken orders?'

"'Nonsense! my fine fellow,' replied the spokesman, who was no other than my old antagonist, the cudgel-player; 'here we are, five jolly fellows, the remains of our once-formidable gang: come and head us, and we shall soon find comrades enough to fill our cave.'

"'No, my good friend,' said I: 'I have determined to run all risks in order to get to America; for, to tell you the truth, I am tired of your mode

of life, and have taken an oath to quit it altogether.'

"'By Jasus! squire, and perhaps you are right, after all,' said he: 'you owe us nothing but good will: but we owe a good deal to you; for, although our captain, Ben, was a brave man, he was too fiery, and your coolness saved us many times from destruction. Therefore, all I can say is, since you have made up your mind to quit us, only tell me how we can serve you, and you shall not find us backward.'

"'All I require,' said I, 'is, that you will allow one of the women to go to Killfinnan, and get a tailor to make me a suit of genteel clothes, for which I am ready to give fifteen pounds down upon the nail.'

"'By my soul!' said one of the lads, starting up suddenly, 'I was bred up a tailor myself, and I can take your measure as well as the best master in Limerick. All you have to do is, to send the woman, and get a suit made from it. It will be safer than allowing a stranger to come out to our hiding-place, as he might afterwards give a description of your person, and get you taken up by the policemen.'

"The women soon furnished some strips of paper sewn together for my friend the tailor-robber, who soon took my measure; and, in less than two hours after, the messenger was despatched to town, with directions to stay there until they were finished. I furnished her with money to procure

a drab-coloured riding-coat, pantaloons, waistcoat, and hat; also a pair of handsome boots, whip, &c. At the expiration of four days she was back again, having performed her commission to the letter; and the robber-tailor's measure answered so exactly, that the clothes fitted me in the completest manner.

"I was now completely equipped, and had likewise obtained correct information respecting the departure of the coaches, so that I knew exactly how to proceed. She also gave me a direction where to find her friends, in case I entered the town in the evening, and where I might be concealed all night, taking care to secure myself a place in the coach for the following morning.

"I sent the woman back with the clothes the next day, with directions to leave them with her friends until I arrived; for I thought it would look suspicious to see a gentleman farmer, or squire, well dressed and a-foot upon the high road.

"The next day, after dinner, I bade adieu once more to my friends, the outlaws, having exchanged my priest's disguise for a labourer's costume, which, with a slouched hat, afforded a better disguise. Putting up a prayer to Heaven, I set off, and made my way through the forest, as my comrades had directed me. I had a good strong oak cudgel in my hand, and knew well how to use it: this, however, would not defend me against a party of cavalry or policemen, the only enemies I was fearful of meeting. All I prayed for, was to

spared the necessity of fighting again, and ing obliged to kill a fellow-creature, even in f-defence; for I knew, if I were taken, I should her suffer death upon the scaffold, or be trans-rted for life.

" I walked on smartly until evening, and was rawing near the town, having met several per-ons of various descriptions, particularly a man on orseback, whom I knew, from his appearance, o be a policeman; but no one attempted to mo-est me. My way now lay, for a couple of miles, long the turnpike road, and I felt the utmost anxiety to get over it, when I was to turn to my left up a by-path, which led to the outskirts of the town, being the route pointed out by the woman. When there, I turned into it with a lighter heart, congratulating myself on having accomplished the most dangerous portion of my journey; and slackened my pace a little, having pushed on with all my speed whilst on the high-way. On my left was a fine luxuriant crop of oats, almost ripe, fenced from the road by a low hedge of furze; and, feeling exhausted and out of breath, I paused for a few minutes to admire the richness of its growth. Lucky, indeed, was it for me that I was thus attracted; for, if I had walked fifty paces farther, I should have been surrounded with meadows which had been recently mown; and the hedges were so thin, not a spot could be found to hide a cat, much less a man. Whilst thus occupied, I heard the distinct trampling of

horses; and, looking forward, beheld a party of some half-score troopers, advancing towards me at full trot. I instantly jumped over the hedge, and ran along until I got to the side adjoining the grass field. I then crawled into the thickest part of the oats, and lay flat upon my belly, first throwing off my hat. My terror, during the time they were passing, was indescribable: I knew, if they got a glimpse of me, I should be seized and examined, and then there was no hope of escape. One of them, as he went by, addressing himself to the lieutenant who commanded the party, said,—

" ' I have heard, your honour, that the remains of Ben Bradshaw's gang are hid in the oak forest at the foot of the mountain, only five or six miles off; and that they are robbing and plundering in this neighbourhood again.'

" ' I heard so too,' replied the officer; ' and it is there I mean to go.'

" ' God be praised,' said I to myself, ' that I quitted those fellows when I did; for, since their retreat is known, they will be watched, and soon taken.'

" All this time I was in a cold sweat; for, as I looked up, I could discern the heads of the horsemen through the tops of the oats, and only wonder how I escaped being seen by them.

" This incident alarmed me so, that I was for some minutes quite unmanned, and unable to move; I therefore turned over on my side, and lay

reflecting how lucky I had been, and offering up my prayers to Heaven for my escape. When somewhat recovered, I rose and continued on my journey. It was now almost dusk; but I had not made more than twenty paces before I saw two stout fellows, both with sticks in their hands, coming towards me. I took courage, and walked boldly on, determined to say nothing to them, unless they spoke first; and, if they attempted to stop me, to give them, what I knew I could do, namely, a good beating. When we got near to each other, they saluted me in Irish, and I answered them with the accustomed friendly reply, but without stopping.

"On seeing this, one of them called to me, saying that I had a suspicious look, and he must know who and what I was. You must understand, gentlemen," said the captain, "that in those times there was a set of men in Ireland, worse than robbers, who were employed by the government to find out rebels and disaffected persons, and who have themselves been the cause of much strife and bloodshed.

"I immediately knew these fellows to be spies, and quickly decided in my own mind how to act. I replied, I was an honest man, going peaceably to the town; and that, as I knew of no right or privilege he had to stop people on the highway, if he attempted to interfere with me, he must look to the consequences; for I should suffer no one to arrest or examine me, except a public officer, legally authorised.

" ' Oh !' said he, ' we'll soon show you how we stop suspicious fellows like you ;' and up he came, flourishing his cudgel, and aiming a blow at my head. I parried it, and returned one that laid him at my feet; and his friend, who came to his assistance, soon followed him. They attempted to rise, but I repeated my blows about the arms and legs, until I maimed them so, they roared out for mercy. I then went off at a brisk gait, and before it got quite dark, I found myself in the street, near the house pointed out by my female friend. Coming up to the door, I tapped gently, and, to my great joy, it was opened by the very woman herself, who said,—

"' God be with you, I'm glad you're come; for I was afraid you were taken by the troop that have just left their quarters to search after our hiding-place, as it is said.'

" I will not detain you by giving all the details of my journey. I got a seat in the stage, where I kept myself to myself, as the saying is, as much as possible. After the second day, our passengers decreased; others again took their places; and so it continued until we arrived at the town where I had a letter of recommendation to the catholic priest. Here I separated from a very agreeable companion, who had travelled the whole distance like myself; and who, on parting, made an observation which, had I not possessed great firmness and command over my features, might have led to unpleasant consequences. Taking my hand and

looking me full in the face, he said just as we were about to part,—

"'You must excuse me, but for the first twenty-four hours after we were in the coach together, I took you to be the famous S——, the outlaw, in disguise, you resemble the description I read of him so much; but after I knew you, my mistake became evident, your manners and conversation being those of an accomplished gentleman.'

"I smiled, and merely replied, that I thought the resemblance by no means a desirable one."

"'True, true,' said he; 'God bless you! I hope you may have better luck than he has had, poor fellow!'

"I thanked him, and lost no time in seeking out the priest, who received me in the kindest manner, gave me news of my cousin, who lived close by, and said he would accompany and introduce me to him.

"My relative, being a very religious, honest, scrupulous sort of a man, it was not until the priest had shown him my father-confessor's letter, describing the sincerity of my repentance, that he would consent to receive me. Still he was very cold and distant, at first; but I was too conscious of my demerits to allow this to discourage me. I began by giving him the whole history of my life, and by producing my father's letters proved to him satisfactorily that I was his cousin.

"'Don't imagine,' said I, 'that I shall ever

attempt to bear the paternal name. I love my father's memory too ardently and sincerely to disgrace it again; this act of self-denial shall constitute one part of my penitence.'

"At the close of my recital, my cousin was greatly affected, and he embraced me, exclaiming, 'Thank God for this repentance and return to virtue! Thy prayers have been heard by the Most High; and I trust thy future life shall be pure and holy.'

"I then explained the final purport of my visit, with his undisputable title to my father's rich estates. He presented me with a handsome sum of money, and letters of credit, enabling me to draw for a certain stipend annually, promising on the recovery of my father's property to provide for me liberally. I remained a fortnight with him, keeping myself at home as much as possible, and avoiding all sorts of company: at length, after receiving his blessing, and assuring him of my gratitude, I set out for Dublin, and two days after my arrival took my passage in a vessel bound for New York. When the owner of the ship understood from the captain that I was a skilful seaman, he invited me to his house. There I met with a Mr. Bryan, who also gave me pressing invitations, the moment he found I was a countryman of his from Limerick, and recommended me strongly to his friend, with whom I afterwards engaged as commander of one of

his vessels. I made several voyages for him, and this is the second time I have been to Canton. It is, however, the last I shall undertake; for I saved some money, and my cousin wrote me, just before I sailed, that he expected to be put in possession of the property in the course of the year which has just expired. As he will certainly keep his word, and give me a handsome stipend for life, I have determined to purchase a snug farm at home, and, by living in peace and goodwill with all mankind, to complete my vows of reformation, and atone for the offences of my early life. Your letter, Mr. Brabazon, has caused the wounds of my heart to bleed afresh, and my conscience again accuses me of being the cause of my beloved Emma's death. Gentlemen," he continued, "I fear the horrible transactions in which I have been a partaker will wholly deprive me of your sympathy and esteem; but Heaven, who knows the secrets of the human soul, bears witness to my sorrow and repentance!" So saying he leant his head upon his breast, and seemed profoundly affected.

My guardian now rose and said, with a friendly pressure of the hand, —

"Cheer up, captain! — Heaven is merciful, and smiles upon those who repent sincerely. We feel a real sympathy in your misfortunes; and, whilst we deplore the force of those evil passions which blinded your better judgment, and plunged you

into an abyss of vice, we cannot refuse you our esteem, for the resolute manner in which you extricated yourself at the first effort after you felt the conviction of your guilt. A soul that is capable of such firmness can never be lost; for guilt cannot take root where the attributes of divinity and truth have once fixed their abode. Console yourself, sir, with what God has promised to those who repent sincerely; and accept the ardent wishes of myself and my son for your eternal happiness and welfare."

He was moved, and embraced us affectionately, saying, —

"Adieu, my countrymen! You have poured the balm of consolation into a guilty soul, and taught me how to estimate the means it possesses of becoming pure and virtuous. May Heaven's blessings attend you!"

After giving him another hearty shake of the hand, and making him promise to write to us by the ships of the next season, we returned home.

As we strolled onwards, I remarked to my guardian, that of all the histories we had heard in our travels, the captain's seemed the most replete with incident.

"Yes!" replied my guardian, "and of a kind not very flattering to humanity. Such examples tend to show the extreme frailty of human nature. He who had religion, firmness, courage, and every good quality that distinguishes great men in times

of danger and difficulty, could not brook the idea of poverty or the thoughts of dependence! He spurned from him the generous offers of disinterested love and friendship; and, filled with pride, vanity, and revenge, became the victim of his own weakness and imprudence! What a paradox is man! To-day, he braves the fury of a lion; and to-morrow, is subdued by the smiles of sycophants, or the charms of an artful woman! Remember, my son, to be firm at all times! He who would be truly virtuous must be constantly on his guard, and never let the ebullitions of passion subdue his reason. From the commencement of the captain's story, no one would have imagined it possible for him to have become a robber and an outlaw.

I returned to my lodgings much edified by the captain's history, which I immediately committed to my journal. My business being, as I said before, not always very pressing, I amused myself with taking notes of the religion, laws, manners, customs, &c. of the Chinese nation; which I found to correspond so exactly with the accounts published on the subject, that I will not repeat what would appear copied from a printed description. It will suffice to say, that every thing related of the government of China, its despotic character, severe penal laws, and the venality, superstition, commercial industry, frugality, economy, and activity of the people, as well as their intolerance, vanity,

effeminacy, and contempt of all other nations, is strictly correct. In their public documents, they treat the rest of the world as barbarians; and foreigners are not permitted to travel through their country, or to hold intercourse with the female sex. Those who trade to Canton are consequently confined to a certain part of the suburbs of the city set apart for them.

Many books have been written on their extraordinary manners, customs, policy, &c.; and most authors have condemned them as being repugnant to wise policy, and the system of *modern* civilization adopted in Europe. I hope they don't mean to recommend the *sanguinary philanthropy* and *liberal atheistical principles* of the propaganda. The policy of a nation, whose soil, climate, productions, religion, and manners are so totally opposite to those of Europe, ought not to be condemned without a fair examination; especially when we know from well-authenticated chronicles, that the Chinese were acquainted not only with most of the arts which indicate a state of high civilisation, but also with the use of gunpowder and artillery, a thousand years before we emerged from the trammels of barbarism. Nothing but a wise government, and laws well adapted to the religion and customs of the nation, and the climate and productions of their country, could possibly have held such an extensive empire together during so many ages.

The best proof of the wisdom and solidity of a government is its durability. It is, also, the strongest testimony that can be offered of the religious character and industrious habits of the people. Upon these fundamental principles, which are conformable to wisdom, truth, and experience, the government of China may be cited as the wisest of the earth.

Their policy in regard to foreign nations is another strong evidence of their wisdom, in prohibiting a free access to travellers, speculative philosophers, and politicians, who, though they might not be able to revolutionize, would greatly disturb the peace, prosperity, and happiness of the empire, by diffusing certain political dogmas, which have already done much mischief in Europe. Not that I think it would be easy to wean the people of China from habits and customs which seem peculiarly well adapted to their climate, and the genius and character of the nation. They do not respect what we style the laws of nations, never acknowledging any diplomatic characters, except from those nations who pay them tribute, and send an ambassador with it; or to offer terms of peace or war, when any dispute has occurred between their subjects.

The climate is fine, the country rich and productive. Indeed it has the advantage of one rare production, I mean tea, the leaf of a tree peculiar to the country; and which has become not only a

luxury, but a necessary, to the greater portion of the civilised world.

I lived many years in that country; and if it had not been for the privation of female society, they might be accounted among the happiest of my life.

CHAP. VII.

It would appear that the vagrant and unsettled mode of life I had hitherto pursued was shortly destined to receive a permanent check. In consequence of a private misunderstanding with the new admiral sent out to command our fleet on the Indian station,—the details of which it is not necessary to lay before the reader,—I was induced to resign my appointment of naval commissary. After some little deliberation my guardian consented to accompany me in a commercial voyage to Siberia; and the peninsula of Kamschatka was selected for our first visit. We immediately set about carrying our plan into execution, and purchased a vessel, which was freighted with whatever we thought might prove acceptable to the inhabitants of those dreary regions whither we were bound.

In due time we anchored in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul; and after disposing advantageously of the cargo we had brought with us, and reshipping its produce, which principally consisted of valuable furs for England, we recommenced our travels overland, with the intention of pushing through a tract of country some thousand

miles in extent, until we reached the capital of the immense Russian empire.

The whole surface of the country being covered with a thick crust of frozen snow, we gladly adopted the mode of travelling usual among the natives of Kamschatka, and hired a couple of sledges drawn by dogs. The novelty of this plan, as well as the amazing celerity with which the docile animals conveyed us from station to station, proved a source of much pleasurable excitement; and our little carriages presented so singular an appearance as to merit a particular description.

If the reader pictures to himself an oblong basket, about four feet in length, and eighteen inches broad, composed of wicker work and thin slips of wood, open at the sides, and ornamented with thongs of variously coloured leather, he will have a very correct idea of the body of the machine. Its extremities are curved upwards; and it rests on a frame composed of two parallel boards, larger than the body, and about four inches in breadth. These also bend upwards in front, and are lashed to the poles forming the driver's seat. The planks answer the purpose of skates, and enable the sledge to glide smoothly over the surface of the snow. From the nature of the materials used in their construction, these conveyances are very light in proportion to their size; and during the whole of our journey I never rode in one that seemed to weigh more than ten or twelve pounds.

The harness by which the dogs are attached to

the sledge is exceedingly simple; being nothing more than a broad leathern strap passing under the neck and resting on the breast, whence traces connect it with the machine, as in ordinary carriages.

Four or five dogs is the usual number harnessed to each sledge. They are yoked two abreast; and when the fifth is used he goes foremost as the leader, and is always the most sagacious and docile of the team.

With a single traveller besides the guide, or when the latter is alone, with luggage equal to his own weight, they will travel from sunrise to sunset, without any other sustenance than a little dried fish, the almost unvarying fare of both men and dogs. Their progress is regulated by means of a bent stick, ornamented at one end with a number of loose iron rings, which, by their jingling noise, answer the purpose of bells to encourage the dogs and accelerate their speed. By striking his staff upon the snow, the guide turns them to the left; and by a smart blow upon the wooden frame-work, he intimates his design to proceed in the opposite direction. When, towards the close of a hard day's toil, the dogs begin to flag, and show symptoms of weariness, he excites them to renewed exertions by throwing the staff among them; and to recover possession of it, as the machine whirls rapidly along, requires no inconsiderable dexterity, and is a most indispensable accomplishment in a sledge driver. Should he unfortunately fail to do so, the cunning animals immediately become aware of his

mishap, and set off in a direct line for the nearest habitation or village, generally upsetting the vehicle in their course, and leaving the guide and his companion in the road, to find their way to the next station on foot.

Our journey, however, was attended by no incident of this nature. We passed in safety over the immense frozen plains that lay in our route, until having made about two-thirds of the distance to Tobolsk, we halted one evening at the *ostrog* or village of Kodinska. Guides, dogs, and travellers were more or less fatigued, and all ravenously hungry; it was therefore with no small satisfaction that we followed our conductor towards a *yourst*, or winter habitation of the natives, being an oblong square pit about six feet deep, roofed with boards, and proportioned in extent to the wants of the family destined to occupy it.

Being strangers and guests among a people proverbially hospitable, in spite of their extreme poverty, for it has been said of them, that it would be as rare to find in Kamschatka a cheat or a churl as a rich man, we were, of course, ushered into the residence of the village chief or *tayon*. A hole in the centre of the roof, serving the triple purpose of window, door, and chimney, admitted us into his domicile, by means of notches cut in the trunk of a tree, fixed upright in the ground. On reaching the bottom, we found ourselves in a spacious apartment, surrounded on all sides by a low platform of boards, well covered with mats and

skins, that served for seats and beds. The temperature of this subterraneous abode formed a striking contrast to the bleak and frozen atmosphere we had just quitted. It was oppressively hot and close; for the guide having represented us to the worthy old tayon as foreigners of distinction, he piled a fresh supply of juniper fagots upon the hearth; as among these simple-minded savages, the magnitude of the fire is always proportioned to their respect for the guests.

After supping heartily on broiled salmon, caviare, salted vegetables, and preserved berries of a very delicious flavour, we ordered our baggage to be unpacked, and distributed a small portion of brandy, tea, and tobacco, to each of those present. Our liberality, indeed, extended to the whole village; the entire population of which, men, women, and children, amounting in all to about twenty persons, had contrived to wedge themselves around us in the tayon's yourst.

Every one now looked happy. They immediately separated themselves into two parties, and commenced their favourite pastimes of reciting love tales, and the dance. The latter was got up for the special amusement of the strangers; and a space being cleared in the centre of the floor, by forcing the women and children to mount upon the matted platform, a most grotesque exhibition ensued. Like all their dances, it consisted of a pantomimic representation of adventures connected with the chase. Five of the younger men under-

took to depict the incidents of a bear hunt, from its commencement to the slaughter of the game. First, there were the uncouth motions and gestures of the animal as he ascended a tree in search of wild honey, of which the whole race is immoderately fond; next we saw the cubs sporting and frolicking around their dam, as she lay basking in the sun; the hunters appear in sight; the game is roused; and the performers attempt to imitate the agitation and rage of the shaggy monster when closely pressed and wounded by its pursuers; then followed the dispersion of the cubs; the shouts of the hunters; and finally, poor bruin's dying groans, by a simultaneous yell from the whole company—perhaps the most correct, and certainly the most intelligible portion of the entertainment.

Their stories, though generally monotonous and uninteresting, are not universally so. At the close of our dramatic spectacle I joined the group of listeners, in the centre of whom sat a wild-looking fellow with an enormous black beard, delighting his attentive auditors with a tale of horrors illustrating the fatal effects of jealousy and revenge. I remained but a short time among them, for, overpowered by drowsiness, arising from the heat of the room, and previous fatigue, I gladly retired to the comfortable bear-skin couch, provided for me by the kindness of my host. Perceiving, however, on seating myself in the sledge the next day, that the driver was no other than the story-teller of the previous evening, I managed to relieve the tedium of a long day's journey through a very

flat uninteresting country, by making him repeat his whole budget of narratives, as we glided silently over the frozen snow. One of these tales is here presented to the reader in an English dress, not because the author considers his translation to possess any poetical merit, but merely as a specimen of the popular romantic fictions current among the Kamschatdales.

THE FATE OF MOROSKOFF.

GUIDE.

" Stranger, beware! this plain is bleak,
A cold and dismal road!
In yonder vale a shelter seek,
At Zarskoi's kind abode.

" The tempest rages; fast the snow
Like fleecy down descends;
With hoarser sound the breezes blow,
And blast with blast contends!

" Too soon shall melancholy night
Her sombre shadows spread,
And cloud in gloom the feeble light
That fades above thy head.

" Come, then, whilst yet a last faint ray
Still glimmers in the west;
Turn from this cold and dreary way,
At Zarskoi's cot to rest.

" Around him stately forests rise,
And lofty mountains near
Their snow-clad summits to the skies
In awful grandeur rear.

" Imperishable proofs sublime
Of a Creator's sway!
Stupendous monuments, that time
Can never sweep away.

" But yonder plain, where whirlwinds rage,
Tempt not this stormy night;
Let Zarskoi's cheer our toils assuage,
His smiles our cares requite.

" What though no splendid halls are there,
Nor wealth nor pomp hath he,
Nor tables deck'd with costly fare,
Nor aught of luxury:

" Yet plenty on his humble board
An ample stock bestows;
Welcome to share his frugal hoard,
Rough couch, but soft repose.

" Where truth and honour fix their seal,
How eloquent they speak!
Nought can their ardent flame conceal,
It kindles on the cheek.

" Refulgent from the monarch's brows,
Celestial are its beams;
The lowly peasant it endows,
Great as a king he seems.

" It brightens aged Zarskoi's smile,
And o'er his manly face
And winning features, void of guile,
Shines with expressive grace.

" With kind and hospitable look
Receives both rich and poor;
No houseless stranger e'er forsook
The generous Zarskoi's door.

" Nor bolt nor bar that door secures,
But free to all who roam;
The famish'd dog, his bounty lures,
Seeks not in vain a home.

" Though age his cheeks hath furrow'd deep,
And blanch'd like snow his hair,
Sweet smiles of pleasure on them sleep,
And banish gloomy care.

" His breast ambition ne'er hath fir'd;
To God's decrees resign'd,
He has what's most to be desir'd,
A calm contented mind."

STRANGER.

" Ah! lead me to his blest retreat,
For fain would I behold
This peaceful enviable seat,
And in mine arms enfold

" The man so good, so chaste, so pure,
Who never felt the pain
The proud and envious endure,
And those who covet gain.

" Oh, courtesy! thy charms divine
The purest joys impart,—
The magic of thy smiles benign
Enchants the way-worn heart:

" Steals o'er the soul, and lulls to rest
Pale sorrow's rising sigh,
Calms every tumult of the breast,
And dries the tearful eye."

Now all was gloomy, dark, and drear, —
The whistling winds blew high;
No moon, no sparkling stars appear, —
No hut, no shelter nigh;

Not e'en a stunted bush bespeaks
The road so wild and bare;
Appalling sounds, like groans and shrieks,
Flit wild in upper air.

" A horrid night!" the driver said,
And shudder'd as he spoke;
" I saw a frightful stalking shade,
And heard the raven croak!

" Oh! shield us, Heaven! for oft I ween,
On such a dismal night,
The ghosts of murdered folk are seen
In all their gory plight,

" To show the way, and falsely lead
The dogs who smell the blood
Adown a craggy mountain's side,
Or plunge them in a flood!

" And hark! what rumbling dreadful sounds
Burst harshly on the ear!
A clamour that the storm confounds,
Like falling waters near."

" Cease, coward! cease thy dire portent!"
The angry stranger cried;
" To Zarskoi's cot our course is bent:
Or dar'st thou to deride?

" Though heaven and hell should rise in arms,
Their terrors I defy!
Curse on thy womanish alarms!
Were we not born to die?"

The timid driver bow'd his head
Submissively in peace,
Forced to conceal his inward dread,
Whilst awful sounds increase.

Loud roar'd the storm, and keenly drove
Thick clouds of drifting snow;
In vain the active driver strove, —
He knew not where to go.

A dark'ning whirlwind round them spread
That shook the troubled sphere,
The dogs, affrighted, wildly fled, —
Their guide no more they hear.

Swift o'er a rugged steep they rush'd
Into a ravine deep,
Where all the blustering winds seem'd hush'd,
And nature's self to sleep.

Men, dogs, and sledge, together hurl'd
From such a fearful height,
Seem'd plung'd into a nether world,
Where reign'd eternal night.

For there immerg'd in snow they lay,
And through the depth profound
A cold blue mist, like ocean's spray,
Encompass'd them around.

Nought but a mountain torrent's roar
Here mingled with the gale;
Bursting from rock to rock, it bore
Dull murmurs through the vale.

And then a solemn deathlike peal
The howling tempest rung,
That made the quaking driver feel
As if his dirge were sung.

"Oh God!" said he, "that precipice!
My dogs were led astray:
I warn'd thee, friend, how fiends entice, —
Let 's cross ourselves, and pray."

"Hold!" said the stranger, "let us rise,
The tangled dogs release;
Despair not, and I would advise
To leave the fiends in peace.

"Though I am weak, and sick, and sore,
My utmost strength I 'll give;
What 's done is useless to deplore, —
Thanks be to God, we live!

"Rouse up thy dogs, there 's nought to fear,
And cease thy moaning strain;
Perhaps there is a dwelling near, —
Why should we here remain?"

These words the fearful driver cheer'd,
They ranged the dogs amain;
And now the simple harness clear'd,
Their route pursu'd again.

Slow by the foaming torrent's side
With cautious steps they went;
O'er rocks, snow-cover'd, smoothly glide
Along the steep descent,

To where its waters gently spread
In branches far and wide,
Through Zarskoi's peaceful valley led,
A fertilizing tide.

There, safe upon its frozen stream,
A winding course they made,
When suddenly a cheerful gleam
Shot forth from midst the shade.

High leap'd the dogs, they snuff'd the wind,
Their guide no more they heed;
But, swifter far than hunted hind,
Urge on their eager speed.

A noisy pack, whose howling cries
The mountains round repell;
With shriller notes Echo replies,
And bears their piercing yell

Far on the winds; the frighted hare
Starts from her hiding place,
And prowling wolves the while forbear
Their sanguinary chase.

But lo! yon feeble, flaring light,
Beams forth with friendly ray,
Gladdens the dismal shades of night,
And guides them on their way.

'T was Zarskoi's lamp illumed the dark,—
The driver's heart beat high;
The springing dogs, with livelier bark,
Announced the cottage nigh.

And now, behold! the weary guest
Arriv'd at Zarskoi's door,
And Zarskoi clasps him to his breast,
Though never seen before.

"Enter," said he, "and with us share
Our shelter and repose;
For yonder plain is cold and bare,
And keen the tempest blows.

"Here rest thy weary limbs from toil,
From cares relax thy mind;
Free from all dangers and turmoil,
To peace thy breast resign'd:

"In mirth, and song, and fairy tales,
Long nights shall glide away;
Nor shalt thou feel the chilling gales
Which cloud the face of day.

"The best I have I freely give
To those who seek my cot;
In peace with all mankind I live,
And bless mine humble lot."

The feeble stranger, lost in thought,
Some time on Zarskoi gazed;
In rapture then his hand he caught,
And said "Great God be praised!

"A pious, upright man I've found—
Here shall my torments end:
Here lay my bones in the cold ground,
My soul to heaven commend.

"Yes! gentle host, with thee I'll bide,
Blest be thy cheerful song!
But, ah! my sorrows how to hide,
Amidst thy jovial throng!

"And much, I fear, my mournful air
Shall, like a dismal cloud,
Thy sportive plays and pastimes fair
With gloomy shade enshroud.

"Zarskoi, thy gracious words entice
They proffer peace of mind;
But how a soul, deep stain'd with vice,
From goading pangs unbind?

"For I've a wound, that rankles sore
Within my tortured heart;
No balm can sooth the canker'd core,
No charm, allay its smart!"

ZARSKOI.

"Thou son of sorrow, tell to me
The grief that rends thy heart;
Full cruel must the anguish be
Which thou canst not impart.

" For oft, at sympathy's behest,
I've seen e'en fell despair
Forsake a harden'd sinner's breast,
And melt his soul in prayer!

" Come then, unbend thy care-worn brow,
Since hope despair can tame;
Here's curds and milk fresh from the cow,
With berries, fish, and game.

" Eat and be joyful; banish spleen.
Thy gloomy cares suppress'd,
Pray, and thy thoughts shall be serene:
The penitent are bless'd.

" Here stays a monk who once, 'tis said,
Was sad and sinful too;
Four years of penance strict he made,
And now he lives anew.

" To him thy heavy crime confess —
He shall for mercy plead
To God, thy contrite heart to bless,
And wipe away the deed."

STRANGER.

" Kind host, thy sympathy inspires
Sweet hope and confidence;
Oh! tell the monk my soul requires
His aid to penitence.

" Worn down with sickness, toil, and care,
I sink into the grave;
His holy unction let him share,
A sinful man to save."

This said, the sickly stranger's sighs
Were mournful, long, and deep;
Though moist with anguish were his eyes,
Alas! he could not weep.

And then a chilly tremor shook
His agitated frame:
He gazed around with frantic look,
Until the friar came.

Then falling on his knees, he cried,
"A guilty wretch behold!
Oh! father, pray thee by my side,
Whilst I my crime unfold!

"To thee relate the dreadful tale:
My trespass thou shalt know;
The pangs my conscience oft assail,
The cause of all my woe.

"Know, then, that I am nobly born,
That wealth and lands were mine;
And all the charms which life adorn,
Around me seem'd to shine.

"A wife I had, whose angel face
The mirror seem'd of truth;
A form, imbued with every grace,
With beauty, wit, and youth.

"But, ah! a foul, deceitful heart
Dwelt in that lovely shrine;
Fondling she play'd a double part:
Moroskoff! she was thine.

" Thine, monster! who escaped the steel
That gored her hateful breast;
Pardon, oh, God! but still I feel
Revenge had made me blest.

" Nay, start not Father; she is dead,
But him I've sought in vain,
He who defiled his uncle's bed;
My nephew brought the stain

" Of murder on my guilty soul:
By furious passion led,
Nought could the deadly stroke control,
Else ne'er had woman bled

" By my revengeful erring hand:
'Twas at his breast I sped;
But, losing all my self-command,
The thrust laid Bertha dead.

" Five years, with burning vengeance fraught,
And poniard in my hand,
The traitor's heart I've vainly sought
Through every foreign land;

" Till sick and sinking fast in death —
Ah! holy father stay!
Hear me repent with my last breath,
And teach me how to pray!

" How His forgiveness to obtain,
Who soon my soul shall free
From all the cruel bonds which chain
[illegible]o mortality."

This said, he paused; and for a while
The heedful Friar seem'd
Confused and sad; a languid smile
Then o'er his features beamed!

But whilst the stranger told his tale
The Monk's expressive mien
Was flush'd like fire, or wild and pale,
And troubled thoughts were seen

To agitate his breast: he sigh'd,
And thus the silence broke:—
"Thy Bertha innocently died:
May God thy crime revoke!

"'T was jealousy thy mind beguiled;
For, wretched sinner, know,
Moroskoff ne'er thy bed defiled,
Thy wife was pure as snow.

"Moroskoff loved thy wife's fair friend;
For him did Bertha plead;
To Minna his fond love commend
And well did she succeed.

"When frenzy urged thy cruel glaive
Her guiltless blood to shed;
Charged with the crime, thy life to save,
Moroskoff quickly fled.

"Though fair appearance guard thy fame
Still art thou discontent;
And to these distant regions came
With murderous intent.

" But, now, Moroskoff here behold!
Before thine eyes he stands;
False is the tale that thou hast told!
Oh! raise thy blood-stain'd hands

" To Heaven, whilst I beside thee kneel,
And ask in fervent prayer
Of God thy penitence to seal —
Thy guilty soul to spare!

" Four years, in strict seclusion dwelt,
On the cold ground I've laid;
And ever at the cross I knelt,
And fasted, wept, and pray'd.

" In pure devotion found a balm,
To heal the wounds of love;
The cowl received, a blessed calm
That came from Heaven above,

" Now reigns within my tranquil breast:
All worldly cares are o'er;
E'en proud ambition's lull'd to rest
Since Minna is no more!"

The stranger long the Friar eyed,
As if o'erwhelm'd with grief:
" Art thou Moroskoff?" then he cry'd;
" Come, let thy prayer be brief."

With jealous ire his visage glow'd,
And, gaining strength once more,
In his uplifted hand he show'd,
[illegible]rd stain'd with gore!

That made the host and Friar start;
And all the guests around
Shriek'd as it struck Moroskoff's heart!
It was a mortal wound.

He gave a groan, and lifeless fell;
The Stranger, smiled aghast
And said, "Go, villain, down to hell:
The deed I've done at last.

"One weapon served ye both; but thou!
A traitor's death is thine!
I've found thee, and perform'd my vow:
And sweet revenge is mine."

Then with a scornful, horrid frown
The thronging guests defied;
Threw the blood-reeking poniard down,
Said, "Mercy, Heaven!" and died.

The first place at which we m
able halt was Tobolsk, the
Siberia, beautifully situated on
confluence of two fine rivers.
vantages, added to the social a
racter of the people, rendered o
delightful. In truth, hospital
found in Siberia; and we were
it wherever we stopped.

But my sojourn in Tobolsk
a spell far more potent than ei
the city, or the amiable attenti
hearted inhabitants. At a splen
given by one of the civil officers
introduced to two young ladies,
daughter of our host, the other
They were both remarkable for
ments; but the beauty of the lat
with a gentleness so fascinating

of my rudeness by the mistress of the house near whom I sat, who rallied me, with an arch smile, on the state of abstraction in which I appeared to be sunk.

"You seem to take great notice of my little adopted daughter?" said she. "Pray, what do you find in her so attractive?"

"My dear Madam," I replied: "the heart must indeed be cold and insensible that could remain indifferent to the presence of so much loveliness; yet it is not the beauty alone of your adopted daughter which has fixed my regards, but her almost perfect resemblance to a lady now no more, and once the object of my tenderest affection." She answered that she rejoiced at the circumstance; hoping that it would induce me to visit them more frequently;—

"If you really love the lady in question," she continued, "you are doubtless affected at the sight of one who appears a lively copy of the departed original."

Observing that my countenance continued to exhibit traces of the painful retrospections which intruded themselves on my thoughts, she kindly endeavoured to dissipate my dejection by adding, in a more sportive vein,—

"You gentlemen are certainly the strangest creatures! so incurious! Here have you been full two hours introduced to a lady for whom you express the most rapturous admiration, without once attempting to ascertain her name! Now, had

I been conversing with one of my own sex, in ten short minutes she would have elicited that, and a score of little interesting facts besides. Listen, and you shall know all; though, to judge from your countenance, it is scarcely necessary to bespeak your attention. Daria is an orphan. Her parents, though respectable, were poor; and, at first, we adopted her purely from motives of compassion; but as she grew towards womanhood, and her amiable disposition unfolded itself, she so won upon our affections, that we have long ceased to look upon her in any other light than as a beloved child. The same education and accomplishments were bestowed on her as on our own Henneka, whose affection for her foster-sister cannot have escaped your observation, nor the warmth with which it is returned."

I replied by expressing my conviction that the consciousness of having been instrumental in preserving so much virtue and merit from the dangers inseparable from a state of indigence must afford, to a mind like hers, an ample recompence for all its generous cares. And, indeed, the sentiments she expressed were sincere and unexaggerated. None ever conversed with Daria, without being sensible that personal beauty was her least endowment; while the reciprocal affection existing between these lovely young women, and the impartial distribution of their favours which marked the conduct of the parents, were the theme of eulogium with all who had the pleasure of their acqu[illegible].

Several days elapsed after this interview before I felt my usual composure; and the image of the beautiful orphan now took entire possession of my thoughts. I dwell with ardour on those expressive features, whence the soul of life seemed to beam forth, and which effected me with mingled emotions of admiration and regret.

During the period we remained at Tobolsk, which was upwards of three months, accident, as well as inclination, frequently threw me into the society of the fair Siberian; and every succeeding visit but served to unfold some fresh charm of mind or person, and to rivet more firmly the mysterious connection that seemed to bind my soul to hers. My attentions were evidently not indifferent to her; and it may be supposed I availed myself of these favourable opportunities to obtain from her that confession which every lover is anxious to draw from his mistress. It was given with an innocent simplicity, that enhanced the value of the acknowledgment a thousand fold; and whilst, pressing her to my heart, I poured forth the sentiments of eternal love and attachment, which filled my enamoured soul, her timidity was so great, that it was with difficulty she replied to my passionate entreaties. When I urged her to consent to our speedy union by arguments founded not only on the impatience of an ardent lover, but also on the necessity of prosecuting our journey whilst the snow continued sufficiently hard to bear the weight of the carriages, she sank upon my bosom,

and softly murmured "Dear Walter, my heart is thine! let the rest be as yourself and my parents may determine."

After this assurance, it would be difficult to paint the transports I experienced, arising from the consciousness of being beloved by Daria, and the prospect that we should, ere long, be indissolubly united in the silken cords of matrimony; for I, who write of my *bonds* after having worn them some years, may be allowed to use that expression. Feeling thus secure of the affections of my mistress, it will naturally be concluded that I lost no time in making a formal proposal of marriage to her friends; who, it must be presumed, had the welfare of their beautiful protégé too much at heart to throw any obstacles in the way of her being respectably married and settled in life. But, the great master of the human heart has well observed, —

"The course of true love never did run smooth;"

and I was destined to experience opposition in that very quarter where nothing but the most cheerful compliance could have been anticipated.

Among the families with whom my long residence at Tobolsk had brought me acquainted, was that of General Norenski, the governor of the city, at whose house I had always experienced marks of the most friendly regard. Personal vanity could never be justly charged upon my character; yet it was impossible not to perceive the pleasure one of the daughters affected in my

company. The mother, also, incessantly lectured me on her superior accomplishments, her skill in embroidery, and talents for house-keeping, both of which hold a distinguished place in the education of Russian ladies. In short, they seemed to have set their caps at me. My affections were, however, already so deeply engaged, that I remained, for a long time, insensible to the object of these manœuvres. Even Daria's protectress appeared, latterly, to seize every opportunity of dwelling upon the beauty and amiable disposition of the governor's daughter; whilst she listened with a studied coldness when I attempted to turn the conversation upon a more grateful topic — the perfections of my destined bride.

The whole secret was at length revealed to me by Daria herself. It appeared that her adopted mother was the confidante of the young lady who had fixed her affections on me; and her husband being dependent, in a great measure, for his place on the governor of Tobolsk, they had been induced, from motives of policy, to use their utmost exertions to discourage my views in any other quarter.

Matters went on thus for some time, until my patience would endure no longer; and I prevailed upon my guardian to seek an interview with Daria's adopted father, and ascertain what objections he could have to her marriage with me. He returned an equivocal answer, observing, "he felt highly honoured by my good intentions; but

reasons, not then to be explained, impelled him to decline my offer, at least for the present."

When my guardian told me this, I was extremely angry, and mentioned the cause.

"Go yourself," said he: "make your proposals in form; and, if he declines again, we will petition the authorities of the town, since we can prove that the young lady herself wishes the connection."

The following morning, I called on the father by times, and, finding him alone, I made an immediate declaration of my wishes, and formally demanded the hand of his protégé in marriage. He pretended to be greatly surprised, and remained, for some seconds, deeply absorbed in thought. At length he exclaimed, abruptly,—

"My God! are you mad? What! seek to unite yourself with a poor orphan, dependent upon our bounty, whose birth and condition are all inferior? For God's sake, recollect yourself! This must be only the caprice of a moment, which hereafter you will deeply regret. Give yourself time to reflect. You, who have visited all the courts of Europe, and kept the best company in each, to come to Siberia and marry with a poor, silly country girl! Even here, my friend, there are several wealthy, high-born ladies, who would be proud of the honour of your alliance. Choose one of them in preference. I must candidly inform you that Daria can expect no fortune from me; and my wife and daughter are so accustomed to her society,

that I know they will never consent to a separation. I beseech you, therefore, not to press the matter; and, when you give yourself time to deliberate, I think you will decide differently, and not seek an alliance so far beneath your own rank."

After listening with much patience to this coarse and vulgar harangue, which was certainly little calculated to exalt the speaker in my estimation, I briefly replied, that the circumstances to which he alluded were a subject for my personal consideration alone; that I considered his adopted child to be rich in every mental and personal accomplishment which could adorn a virtuous female; and that, as I was myself a gentleman, by birth and education, the woman I married, however humble her previous condition, was immediately raised to a rank in society equal to my own; and concluded, by declaring, that nothing would compel me to resign her hand, but a positive assurance from herself that she did not wish the connection.

"Oh!" said he, "she is not such a fool as to refuse you; so, since I see you are fully determined on this match, I will consult my wife about the matter, and you must allow me time to see how we can arrange it."

I replied, that I had no objection to a reasonable delay, candidly reminding him, at the same time, if he did not yield her by fair means, I knew how to force his compliance, according to

I could plainly perceive th
reported to the government
an opposer of those very law
duly administered, alarmed
hesitated, remained silent fo
addressed me in a confidentia

"You well know, my good
it would have made me to ha
offers long since, if I had not
site instructions. However, t
and me. Here's my hand, a
mise that Daria shall be yours.

I was so wholly unprepared
unexpected termination of our
was some minutes before I co
sufficiently to make any reply.
tionately embraced the old ma
truth, appeared scarcely less de
at the thought of having relieve
cost, from the trammels of an i
there is no doubt, he was, from
willing participator.

In fact, his whole demean

presence might have proved before this *éclaircissement*, he now pressed me to remain and partake of refreshments, about which he gave orders to an attendant. In a few minutes after, the door again opened, and she who was destined to become the day-star of my future existence entered, bearing in her hand a basket of dried fruit. My presence there was evidently unexpected. The light fairy step with which she had approached was instantly arrested; her cheeks became overspread with the deepest crimson, and, laying down the basket, she courtsied gracefully, and, hurried from the room. I flew to overtake her, and, fondly entwining my arm around her waist, led her back into the presence of her foster-father.

"Come hither, girl," he exclaimed; "blush not to acknowledge a virtuous attachment. There, Mr. Brabazon," continued he, placing her hand within mine; "may Heaven confer its blessings on your union, as freely as I bestow mine. Though she be dowerless, she possesses that which is a fortune in itself—a pure and unspotted mind; and, if I rightly interpret the sentiments you have just avowed, wealth, in your opinion, does not constitute an indispensable ingredient in happiness."

I again embraced her tenderly; but she was so deeply affected when her foster-mother, who had entered during this scene, congratulated her, that she fainted in my arms. The application of some ordinary restoratives soon recalled her to animation; and, when I saw she was tolerably composed,

I took my leave, and hastened to inform my guardian of this auspicious termination of all my difficulties, and arrange with him the plan of our future operations.

The benevolent old man grasped my hand, and almost melted into tears, as I related the circumstances of this triumph over the obstacles that had opposed themselves to my union with the woman of my affections. With the promptness and decision that ever marked his own character, he proposed we should be married the next evening, and set out immediately after for Perm, the first town of any consequence on the road to the capital, and thus disappoint those envious and malicious persons who envied the happiness of my bride.

Anticipating the possibility of a sudden departure from Tobolsk, I had purchased a Russian post-carriage. The seat unfolded at night, and made a comfortable bed, admirably adapted for securing its inmates from the inclemency of a Siberian winter; whilst under the coach-box there still remained sufficient room for a couple of portmanteaus. The whole was well lined with the skin of the black bear of Siberia. A lamp inserted in the body of the carriage behind illumined the interior; whilst on either side of the driver were other lamps with large reflectors, which spread their enlivening beams far and wide upon the road. Besides these conveniences, it had innumerable pockets, great and small, and a table upon hinges in front; so that it only wanted

a chimney and an oven to have been a complete itinerant house.

We had been invited to dine with General Novenski on the following day; and it was planned that, soon after dinner, we were to take leave, and return home, when we were immediately to repair to church.

The lady of the house and her daughter received us with a somewhat sarcastic smile.

"Mr. Brabazon," said the latter, "I hear you are preparing to leave us; and a friend of mine, who saw your travelling carriage, described it as quite a *family* vehicle, furnished with all sorts of conveniencies."

I replied that her friend was a faithful reporter, as I really was on the eve of my departure; and as I meant to take my partner for life with me, I had endeavoured to make our conveyance as warm and commodious as possible. It was evident, however, that none of the party had any suspicion of our being on the point of starting that very evening—not even the mistress of the family; for she said, during dinner, "Remember, Mr. Brabazon, you are to visit us on Sunday, as it is the fête-day of my youngest daughter. I think nothing of your carriage being ready, as long as you are not prepared yourself; and in this country people cannot marry and fly away in a minute. There are certain indispensable ceremonies to be gone through; and even then, you know, you

must wait to receive the felicitations of your friends."

"Notwithstanding all these obstacles, madam," replied my guardian, answering for me, "Walter is a practised traveller, very quick in his motions and decisions. Beware of him, he will be off ere you think it; for, having a long journey to perform, he must do it whilst the winter roads are in the best condition."

"Ah! no matter," said she, laughing; "I shall keep a strict watch upon him: we know where his treasure lies, and that he will not depart without it."

Dinner being now announced, I led the hostess to table; and several times during the repast she questioned me concerning my movements, saying, at length,—

"Tell me, candidly, do you really intend to leave us so soon?"

I briefly replied, that I positively was determined to marry as quick as possible, and start immediately.

Never did repast seem more tedious and irksome. It appeared lengthened to an age; and I sat upon thorns, with my eyes intently fixed on my guardian. At length, it being near six o'clock, he rose, and, apologising for his abrupt departure on the plea of urgent business, bade adieu to the host and hostess.

When I approached to do the same, Madame Norenski said, "[illegible], Mr. Brabazon, for the

moment; we shall expect you at our evening party."

I bowed, and retired. My guardian awaited me at the door. "Bravo! Walter," said he; "we have managed matters admirably: let us now lose no time, but hasten to your father-in-law's, and finish the business."

On arriving, we found Daria dressed in white, and looking beautiful as an angel. There was little said on either side. She was affected on leaving her home, but recovered before we reached the church, and displayed more firmness throughout than could have been expected. When the priest, at the close of the ceremony, desired her to embrace her lawful husband, a custom usual at marriages celebrated according to the ritual of the Greek church, I felt her warm tears upon my cheek; and she was also deeply affected when her adopted mother congratulated her. When the moment of separation arrived, she sobbed violently; and as her mother embraced her for the last time, I was obliged to carry her in my arms to the carriage. Having seated myself by her side, I made a sign to the driver, and off we started at a rapid pace.

In ten or fifteen minutes we were far beyond the suburbs of Tobolsk. During this time my beloved Daria continued bathed in tears, and I abstained from addressing her until the violence of her sorrow was in some measure assuaged. After a while, having a bottle in the carriage with

some wine and water, I prevailed upon her to drink a little, which, with the aid of smelling salts, rendered her more calm; when, exhausted by the paroxysm of sorrow, she placed her head upon my bosom, and fell into a profound sleep. At that moment I felt myself the happiest of earthly beings, and repeated with enthusiasm that passage of the poet, Thomson, in which he paints so beautifully the happiness of the marriage state: —

> "Oh, happy they! the happiest of their kind,
> Whom gentler stars unite, and in one fate
> Their hearts, their fortunes, and their beings blend."

This sweet sleep lasted several hours, and she awoke refreshed; but it was some time before she could conquer a grief which again burst forth at the recollection of her beloved foster-mother. By tender attentions, I at length prevailed upon her to think of the separation with more fortitude; though for many months the mention of her home made her shed tears. However, she was delighted with our comfortable and convenient equipage, and at length became quite reconciled to travelling.

When I reflected that she was born at one end of the globe, and I at the other; that she was the younger by some fifteen years and more; that I had visited so many countries and seas, and had been already once so near marriage, I could not persuade myself but it was the decree of fate that I should seek a partner for life in the remote region we were then traversing. We made a rapid

journey over the snows to Perm and Glazow, at which latter place I stopped a few days, to allow my dear Daria some repose, though she declared she did not require it, and pressed me to continue travelling until we should arrive at the termination of our journey.

The inhabitants of these towns, like all the natives of Siberia, proved very kind and hospitable; and provisions of all sorts are there excessively cheap. Although the frost was very severe, we were so well wrapped in furs, we did not feel it; and my wife declaring herself quite strong again, we pushed forward towards the capital. My guardian, who was much pleased with Daria's perfect innocence and simplicity, and, at the same time, great natural judgment and penetration, joined us at every station, and, by his attentions and cheerful conversation, diverted her thoughts from dwelling too much on her absent friends, towards whom she appeared to feel the liveliest gratitude. So far from being displeased at this feeling, I was delighted to observe such proofs of her affection and sensibility. For (as I think I have often observed before in this work) I consider ingratitude the basest of all the crimes which disgrace human nature. It is painful to suppose there are beings in the world, even amongst the intelligent and well-educated, incapable of appreciating noble, generous actions; but that there should be also persons who are insensible to the favours and obligations heaped upon them by the hand of commiseration, is a

in good health and spiri
the capital proved exceedin
brought introductory letters
families. Indeed, in no
strangers more hospitably
capital of Russia, where they
at their ease, and treated w
and attention. In most of the
houses, it is the lady who invi
on grand festivals and bal
invitation is given, in which th
master and mistress are mentio
have fixed days of the week for
at dinner, and in the evenin
visiters every day in the year.
more hospitable, or more uncer
confess, however, that in some
was carried to a ridiculous exces
ostentation. I recollect a friend
me, that he was invited to dinner
nobleman, who kept open hou
at which there were never seen
twenty-five to thirty guests. As
was a particular friend of the host
at his right hand. During the repa
an individual at the lower end of th
countenance appeared familiar to h
curious to know his name, he en
Count. He smiled

nomy, as well as the faces of many others at table, who have been in the habit of dining here for the last three years, are perfectly known to me, I really cannot tell you their names."

Now, I think this a species of hospitality that may fairly be styled ostentation; or, rather, a stupid way of spending money, when it might be much more usefully and charitably employed. To receive persons at dinner without knowing whether they are, or are not, gentlemen, is paying a poor compliment to the rest of the company; and the person who related the anecdote declared it so disgusted him, that he never after made one of the Count's motley parties. This nobleman, who had been once immensely rich, left his estates embarrassed with debts to an amount that rendered them almost an useless inheritance to his family. He was, however, generous and charitable when called upon to assist the needy, or relieve suffering humanity; characteristics in which the Russian nobles are by no means deficient. Their benevolence and affability are proverbial; but there are few amongst the very rich who understand how to manage their own property, or choose men of probity to govern for them; and, consequently, they find, when too late, that, without economy, order, and regularity, the greatest fortunes may be easily dilapidated.

I recollect hearing of an extremely rich man, who placed his son, at the close of his education, in the navy, making him commence as a midshipman, and

experience all the hardships endured by the young men of small fortunes, who were his companions. Being an only child, some of his friends remonstrated with him on the imprudence of exposing his sole heir to the dangers and chances of such a perilous profession. He replied, "I do it to teach him economy, order, and regularity; for in no service are these most essential qualities so well inculcated as in the navy. Besides, he is as much under the protection of God at sea as on shore. I should conceive him in greater danger had I bestowed upon him some thousands a year, to spend as caprice might direct, whilst he led a life of indolence and dissipation, useless to his country, and hazardous to his morals, health, and fortune."

The want of order and economy has been the ruin of many a wealthy man in Russia, where gaming* is carried to a great pitch, and people often give themselves up, from habit, to the management of agents who flatter their favourite passion by furnishing them with the means of gratifying it, at an immense sacrifice; and at length involve them in debts too heavy to be retrieved, and bring about their inevitable ruin. In the mean time, the agent enriches himself, and drives a coach and four, when his master suffers all the privations of poverty.

A nobleman of this unthinking class, of immense

* Since these remarks were penned, a severe edict has been published against all games at hazard.

wealth, was once asked how many vassals he possessed. "They tell me," said he, "that I am the lord of fifty thousand souls, and some very rich estates; but the devil take me if I know where they are situated, or trouble my head about them, as long as I am amply supplied with money." This man continued his thoughtless extravagant mode of life until he became a bankrupt, when his estates were put under tutelage; a small sum per annum being allowed him to live upon. Indeed, I know some instances myself of the same kind; and one gentleman, with whom I was on terms of intimacy, declared to me, that he never felt himself so much at his ease as when his estates were managed for him by the crown.

The Russian nobles, generally speaking, are very genteelly educated — possess every polite accomplishment — understand music — dance well, and speak several foreign languages, *better* than their own. In the more solid branches of education, I am sorry to add, they are often found deficient; and this superficial formation of the minds of young men, naturally fond of ease and pleasure, unfits them for the serious and steady occupation of looking after their estates and ameliorating the condition of their peasants. Many, also, are so constantly engaged in the service of the crown, that they really have no time to bestow upon their own private concerns. Consequently, for them we must make all due allowance, and speak respectfully of the patriotism of

those who expose their lives and fo
country's service.

Many who have small incomes, o
encumbered with debts, in order t
capital, seek places in the civil serv
make both ends meet. How much
it be were they to undertake the m
their affairs themselves! It will sc
lieved, that in Russia, princes, count
serve for salaries of from 20*l.* to 100*l.*
I know myself two or three who did
over 20*l.* a year, and one particular
ceipt of something less; yet he paid
60*l.* per annum to one of his own
manage his estates, who, no doubt, pu
that sum into his pocket, without t
knowledge. Some of the gentlemen
— indeed I may say *all* of them, — po
natural talents and many elegant acq
but they were indolent, and had an ave
applying themselves to any thing solid.

I remember some persons of the abov
tion once set up a woollen manufactor
entirely ignorant of the matter; and the
with most of the workmen employed, w
better than novices. However, they be
had the confidence to contract with the c
the delivery of a certain quantity of clot
the materials were purchased, or a sing
put in motion! The consequence was, t
first year they paid a forfeit for not co

with their contract: still they persisted, being favoured by the government, which, in Russia, encourages even the enterprises of the ignorant. They consequently contrived to establish their manufactory, and comply, in part, with their engagements.

It is the ease with which speculations of this kind may be undertaken in Russia, that oftentimes is the cause of their failure. Proprietors of land and peasants, whilst they have a surplus of capital, spend it and involve themselves in debt. On finding themselves embarrassed, they turn their attention to what, as provident men, they should have commenced at first, when in possession of the means of insuring success. The proverb says "that good and bad fortune are necessary to a man, in order to render him adroit and clever;" and I really have seen this proverb frequently verified in the country of which I am now speaking. There is something so confident, brave, and noble, in the native character of its inhabitants, that nothing seems too difficult for them to attempt. These traits, added to great good-nature, generosity, and hospitality, rank them, in my estimation, among the first nations of the world. We must not forget also, that being religious from feeling and education, they are true and loyal to their God and to their sovereign.

The spirit of this people is also truly martial; and it seems a prudential as well as a political

motive of the government, to
of the upper classes almost e
At a very early age, young ge
at the public schools to fit the
of military service, where, I a
they are taught every science
wise contribute to make them g
leaving those institutions, the
enter the army, although noble
in the lowest grade above a pr
to pass on regularly from thenc
ranks. This strict adherence t
gradual promotion gives them
practical experience; and few cou
duced more highly distinguished
Many people have criticised this
education with a good deal of seve
to keep young men ignorant of
which they have need of in their jo
life, pretending that military men
good civil officers. This reasoning
in principle; and, as far as my obse
false in its conclusion. I have seen
lent civil officers who have previous
the army; and if young men in Ru
acquire what is necessary and useful, i
of their immediate profession, it is not
of opportunity, but from indolence or
cause. The profession of arms, either
sea, is the best possible school wherei
young men's minds and bodies, an acti

exercise constantly succeeding to their studies; while a strict discipline keeps them in good health and good morals. Then mathematics, the leading science in military tactics, forms the minds of a youth quicker than any other study whatsoever; ripening his reasoning and reflecting powers, and giving a just and manly decision to his ideas. I think, however, the sea officer has, in this respect, the advantage. Besides learning all that a military man is supposed to know, he must make himself acquainted with naval tactics, astronomy, mechanics, physics, &c.; whilst the practical part of his profession requires the most rigid attention, great activity, a retentive memory, and a clear judgment. Exposed at every instant to imminent danger, he acquires courage, fortitude, presence of mind, and a habit of relying upon the mercy and protection of God, to carry him through all his difficulties and perils: he therefore becomes pious from principle, and a conviction of the power and omnipotence of a great Protector; and preserves, through life, habits fraught with great real advantage to his soul and body. Place him where you please, his judgment always operates with coolness and deliberation. The most sudden and extraordinary accidents cannot alarm him: he never forgets himself, but meets every shock with an intrepid heart, remaining firm and unmoved, in the midst of dangers, like a rock in the middle of the ocean, against which the raging billows beat in vain.

It takes some years of close application and experience to make a good practical seaman, whilst a soldier may be formed in a few months. The latter is a perfect machine. He is ordered to march straightforward, shoulder his musket, wheel to the right or to the left, form a line, a hollow or a solid square, charge bayonets, fire, &c.; all according to established rules of manœuvring, which he cannot change or vary without injuring the chain of effects and embarrassing his comrades. It is quite different with a sailor. He obeys his officer's orders as strictly and rapidly, but he is left at liberty to perform his service at will, according to his own judgment. If, therefore, he cannot tie a rope fast enough with his hands, he calls in the assistance of his teeth. He runs up and down the shrouds, and lays out upon the yard the best way he can; and, sometimes, to be first upon deck, he glides from the cross-trees, or the cap, by the running rigging, like lightning. No one rates him for throwing his leg over the yard-arm, when he hauls home the weather earing, or rigs in a studding-sail boom; all he fears, is being accused of performing his task too slowly. When he walks the deck, he is not obliged to turn out his toes or hold up his head with a martial air. In short, he is left to perform his duty as his judgment directs, and is never reproved but for sloth, or an ignorance of what he undertakes to perform.

There are certain established forms, also, aboard

ship, which skilful mariners always adopt for setting and taking in sail,—reefing, scudding, heaving-to, &c., but there is no restraint upon the sailor's bodily exertions. He is commanded to do *so and so;* but if the officer of the watch perceives any difficulty or impediment in the speedy execution of his commands, he cries out again to the sailors, and points out to them where they have been deficient. Seamen, consequently, do not work altogether mechanically, but with freedom, ease, and alacrity; and, I may safely venture to assert, are the liveliest and most good-natured people under the sun. I really know of no class of persons to whom the world are so much indebted. It is commerce, and more particularly maritime commerce, which has improved and civilised mankind, that opened new worlds to their enterprising spirits.

The preference generally given to the land-service is not because its officers and soldiers are more brave and skilful, but because they are more dashing and polished in their external manners, from the habit of mixing in the gay world and ladies' society. In point of professional skill the navy has the advantage. Amongst the greatest generals, there are very few, indeed, who, if they were asked upon their consciences, would not declare they owed their success more to good fortune, or some unforeseen advantage, than to a regular and perfect plan of operations. But, I will venture to assert, that no important naval victory has ever been gained without superior skill, management,

and courage. It is in a naval action only that the man exhibits the full force of his genius, his courage, fortitude, skill, and judgment. The bravery of a small portion of a very large army may save the whole from defeat, although the general's plan might have been never so badly conceived.

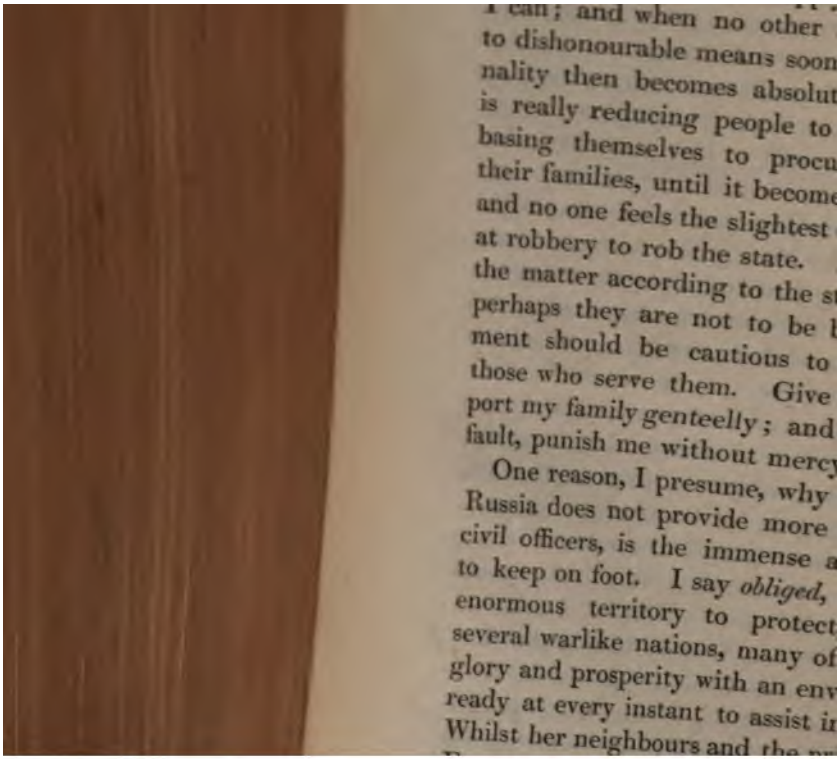
"Dolus an virtus quis in hoste requirat?"

Not so with a fleet. The most undaunted conduct cannot supply the defect of bad tactics. An unskilful disposal of a fleet, either for attack or defence; nay, even the bad management of a single vessel, proves fatal. For this reason, no naval commander has ever been successful in a general engagement who has not been sure of the perfect co-operation of all those who were to fight with him, and to whom he had previously imparted his plan; so that when once in action they could almost anticipate his signals and orders. In order to insure the victory, the breaking of an enemy's line must be followed by the good management and skilful attack of each particular ship in the station assigned to her. Then it is that not only coolness and courage are necessary to the commander, but they must be of that firm and deliberate kind which no accident can disturb, and which enables him to take advantage of even the most trifling circumstance to overpower his adversary. This presence of mind must be preserved through clouds of smoke, the thundering

of cannon, and the crashing of splinters; the vessel manœuvred in the same manner as if nothing had happened. Fire and water, two dreadful elements, both threaten him with destruction, as well as the artillery of his foes; so that, in point of danger and perilous accident, nothing can be more awful than a naval engagement.

I hope my readers will excuse this digression on a subject more or less interesting to every one: I do not attempt to impose my opinion as altogether indisputable; for having served more at sea than on shore, I may perhaps view these matters with a partial eye. We must, therefore, leave the final discussion and decision to those who have no partialities to gratify.

As I am sincerely interested in every thing and every body connected with Russia, I much desire to see the civil list, which is often overlooked, attain a greater degree of honour and respectability. That department of the service is not held in very high consideration, and its members are but indifferently paid. Now, if I wish to make a servant good and honest, I must give him ample wages, food, and raiment; then if he commit a fault, I may, with a safe conscience, punish him severely, to deter others from following his example. But when I pay him a mere trifle, scarcely sufficient to buy himself and his family food and clothing, much less to indulge in any of the luxuries of life, what is he do? We were all born to eat and drink, and to live without food



blended with their institutions, an overruling army is more dangerous than their more powerful neighbours.

It would, consequently, be better for them, in times of peace, to show the example, and reduce a large portion of their troops. This example would be immediately followed by their neighbours; and all the governments of Europe would then be enabled to diminish their expenses, and relieve their subjects from a weight of taxation that oppresses them exceedingly. My observations are particularly directed towards those nations that regard Russia with a jealous eye, and who boast of their advancement in civilisation and prosperity, when she was yet in her infancy. Russia has no need to be warned of these truths. She has always at her disposal a powerful army, fed and clothed without distressing the population; for, I will venture to affirm, she maintains her military force for *one half* what it costs any other kingdom of Europe. Besides, she does not place her safety entirely on her army, as she has proved, when she was invaded by the greatest force ever collected in modern times. Her faithful subjects rose in a mass to save her; and this proves that when governments act with justice and equity towards the people, they may always rely upon their courage, loyalty, and attachment. It is not the *form* of government, as flimsy theorists would fain make us believe, that is necessary to our political happiness and prosperity, but the mild

and equitable administration of the laws and ordonnances, after the principles on which it has been established to suit our moral existence, no matter what may be its denomination or appellation. The plan of keeping up a large military force in time of peace originated in France, a country notorious for its revolutionary spirit, immoral, dissatisfied character, and ambitious egotists and demagogues. This system has more than once brought distress upon the nation, discouraged her industry, destroyed her resources, and ruined her morals. A very large army, that is to say, one disproportioned to the resources and necessities of the kingdom, is a pestilence — a cancer upon the vitals of the revenues of a state, that imperceptibly corrodes and destroys them.

As far as it regards expense, a very large navy is equally bad, but it is not so generally injurious to the morals of a nation. A sailor spends the greatest portion of his life at sea, undergoing all sorts of hardships and privations. After being absent many months, nay, sometimes years, from his native land, his friends and his fire-side, during which he is deprived of all the endearments of female society, it is not to be wondered that he should commit some excesses on his return. On shore, that is to say, at the sea-ports, he is certainly a little profligate; but his profligacy does not penetrate into the heart of the country to debauch the innocent. His revels and excesses are confined to the sea-coast, places of rendezvous

for the fleets, and his visits are periodical. When disbanded, he betakes himself to some sort of steady labour, or enters into the merchant service; for his habits are active and industrious, and he soon gets tired of having nothing to do. A soldier, on the contrary, *in every country except Russia*, is habitually an idle man. When off duty, his principal employment is to lounge about the town, and endeavour to debauch the women. Sailors are, of all men, the most faithful, and soldiers the most false, to the female sex. The former make love to marry, the latter only to deceive; and all this is the effect of their professions. Soldiers in Russia, however, conduct themselves in a moral manner; and they marry, because they are brought up from infancy in the fear of God, with sentiments of religion which never forsake them during their lives. This makes them brave and loyal, as well as faithful to their wives. *

On all occasions, when I speak of the military, I must except the soldiers of Russia, who are almost universally men of exemplary conduct, and who are not to be seduced from their allegiance to their sovereign, whom they revere next after God.

My readers must not infer from this that the life of a soldier has any thing in it to attract the peasants of Russia, whom some persons have

* The wisdom of our Creator has linked us by the ties of natural affection, "First, to our families and children; next, to our brothers, relations, and friends." — BLACKSTONE.

imagined were so little pleased with their vassalage that they were ready to enlist or abscond, whenever an opportunity offered. How easy is it for superficial observers, and especially travellers, who are ignorant of the language of the country where they travel, to be mistaken! Before taking such a thing for granted, it is necessary to understand the relative situations and duties of the lord and his vassal. A little explanation on this point will tend to expose to my readers the advantages enjoyed by the Russian peasantry. Some persons have pretended to compare them to the *helots* of ancient Greece, the abject slaves of the *Spartans*, their conquerors. Thank God! there are no such slaves in Russia, whatever there may be in America and some other countries. One extremely philanthropic, not to say wild, theoretical, cosmopolite legislator, named Bentham, had the *extreme kindness* to propose to the Emperor Alexander to compound for him, out of his *new liberal system of jurisprudence*, a perfect code of laws, which should sit upon the shoulders of his subjects much lighter than their sheep-skin pelisses. The Emperor, however, fearful this *slender* legislative covering might injure their healths and produce a *constitutional* fever, very wisely declined the offer. Alexander knew what Mr. Bentham was ignorant of, namely, that one third of the peasants of Russia are not vassals; and that the lords of the rest were equally his subjects, and bound by severe laws to grant them certain civil rights and

privileges, and which they had no power to infringe. He knew, likewise, that it is the lords who are responsible for the imposts; and, when a bad harvest occurs, and the peasants are reduced to want, it is they, and not the government, who are obliged to support them. Besides which, they are bound to furnish every family with a certain portion of arable, meadow, and woodland. In the most fertile and populous parts of the country, this allowance is equal to about nine English acres; the Russian *dessatine* being equal to one English acre and a half.

It has been proved by many lords that there is more to be gained by the land, when worked with free labourers, than when given out to vassals; and a proof the latter are not displeased with their lot is, that they discover no very great wish to be free, until they become rich, and desire to throw off the character of peasant altogether. Another proof of their being contented is, that they are, without exception, the most cheerful people I ever saw in any country. So far from wishing to become soldiers, they have frequently been known to maim themselves purposely to prevent their being admitted into the military service. This practice was so prevalent at one time that it became necessary to publish a severe edict against it, and to punish any one who was found guilty of mutilating himself by exile to Siberia. This has, in some measure, checked the practice; banishment being more dreaded by them than death. The

Russian soldier is always in love with his comrades, his home, and his fire-side; and the moment he is allowed a furlough, he hastens to spend it in the bosom of his family. I have seen several of them myself, who have travelled *on foot* upwards of *one thousand miles*, to pay a short visit to their relations.

It would be well if a few of those southern nations of Europe who pride themselves on their great civilisation, mental acquirements, political rights, and independence, would copy the virtues of a people whom they affect to despise, and stigmatise with the appellation of barbarians. The preservation of order and security, and the diffusion of social happiness, has been managed with a paternal hand by the Emperor; and, under his government, the advancement of civilisation and the arts and sciences has proceeded with a much more rapid pace than it did with those who went before him.

Speaking of the military of other parts of the world, I must be permitted to continue my comparison between them and sailors. All that can be said against the latter is contained in an old English proverb, namely, "They earn their money like horses, and spend it like asses." When Jack gets his foot on shore, he is "hail fellow! well met," with all classes and descriptions of people. He has no pride — no vanity — no holding up his head with a strut, and looking down with contempt upon his fellow-citizens. He is

kind, good, affable, and condescending; spends his money generously, and is hailed with friendship by his acquaintances. The character of a soldier is distinctly opposite; he cannot, like Jack, amalgamate with the people. His profession being to keep the populace in awe, he considers himself their superior, and does not deign to associate with them. A soldier of Russia, on the contrary, is delighted when a chance offers to drink a glass with his old comrades. An honest sailor, on the contrary, loves a song and a glass of grog, and amuses his astonished hearers with the history of his voyages, wherein he describes, in simple eloquence, storms, shipwrecks, strange countries, savages, wild Hottentots, elephants, kangaroos, whales, and sea serpents, until his audience grow enamoured of his recital and regret its conclusion. They beg him to continue.

"No, no," replies Jack, "avast hauling there awhile, my throat's husky. Come, landlord, give us another glass of grog, and then I'll spin them out such a yarn as shall make their teeth chatter in their heads, and their eyes stare wide open, to see if the devil himself is not coming up the gangway."

After taking a draught, he tells them some outlandish story about enchanted islands in the Great Pacific Ocean, water-spouts, men-eaters, giants, and monsters, on which he makes remarks and explanations, until

"Each trembling heart's with grateful terror quell'd."



such an easy mat
of a sailor's life; h
his experience."

"No matter for
ger's past, we ma
as you see we do n
have another glass.

I could relate m
disinterested and g
well as their religi
but enough has be
ject; and now I n
twenty years I hav
much improved, an
instructed. They a
so profligate as the
mains much to amel
excellent and useful
difficulties, hardships
firm, honest, good,
the circumstances o
say *absolute necessity*,
is seriously and mat

them. I remember the first song I ever learned was a fine old English ballad, beginning thus:—

"Ye gentlemen of England, who sit at home at ease,
How little do you think upon the dangers of the seas."

The air is manly and expressive; while the sentiments it breathes are so descriptive of the hardships and perils incident to a seaman's career, that, in my opinion, it ought to be printed in gold.

My readers must pardon my partiality, if I cannot help speaking of my profession whenever an occasion presents itself, and sometimes perhaps out of place.

The mode of manning its fleets by force adopted by the British government, by taking a man violently wherever they can catch him, and enslaving him to the service of the navy for a term of years, tearing him from his family without a moment's warning, is certainly most cruel and unjust, and exists no where else on the face of the globe. In Russia, recruits for the navy and army are furnished by the peasants from every family by turns; it is a matter they settle amongst themselves, and he who wishes to stay at home may pay a certain sum or furnish a substitute.

Talking of armies and navies, I cannot help expressing a wish that princes would curb their ambition, and seek renown in the lists of humanity, peace, and civilisation. There is no true glory in destroying one half of mankind, and ruining the morals of the rest, with numerous armies which

might be much more usefully employed in cultivating their native fields. Should the monarchs of Europe continue to augment their military forces as they have done during the last century, in a short time there will be no one left to till the ground. National industry will be abolished altogether, and misery and barbarity usurp the place of civilisation and wealth.

The quantity of fine land lying unpeopled and uncultivated throughout the world is incalculable; and yet how little do people think of the destruction of millions of the human race! When we reflect that in every country men chosen for the military service are taken in the dawn and flower of life, that is to say, between the ages of eighteen and forty, it is perfectly evident that the system is more destructive to the increase of population than the most fatal epidemics. This can only be changed by faithful treaties and alliances amongst the sovereigns of Europe, and a confidence in each other's friendship. Until then, it is impossible that any single power can diminish her military force without endangering her independence. One thing that must prevent it for a series of years is the pernicious policy of France and Great Britain, who both strive to render every nation free, as they style it; or, in other words, they teach them to rebel against their governments, merely because a certain set of impious philosophers and madmen have invented a new system for making the poor rich, and reducing the rich to beggary.

However, they have found that, instead of propagating their plans with success abroad, the poison has taken effect in their own dominions; and they are obliged to maintain large armies to keep half the nation in awe, whilst they endeavour to persuade the other half that they are in the full enjoyment of liberty and independence. As Great Britain said to the Irish, "You shall be free, but you shall wear my iron yoke *upon your necks.* You are emancipated, but you shall *pay tithes to my clergy.* You shall be an independent people, *but you shall have no legislation of your own.*"

In times of peace, if nations were in the habit of friendship and confidence, they would only require as many troops as are barely necessary to preserve internal tranquillity; and commerce, agriculture, and every branch of national industry would consequently flourish.

CHAP. IX.

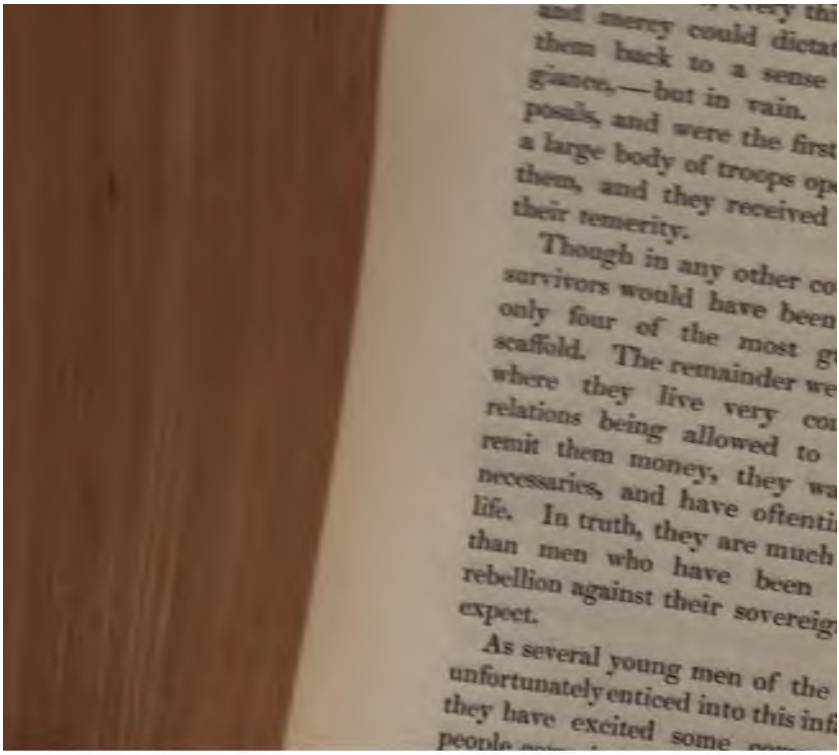
"He is next to the gods," says Claudian, "whom reason, not passion, impels, and who, after weighing the facts, can measure the punishment with discretion."*

I have commenced this chapter with the above passage, because I deem it well adapted to the character of the dignified personage of whom I am about to speak. In every situation in which he has been placed, and through all the difficulties and dangers with which he has contended since his accession to the throne, the Emperor of Russia has invariably shown the same courage, prudence, and moderation. By his virtue, wisdom, and perseverance, he may be said to have conquered adversity, and turned the tide of fortune in his own favour; or perhaps, I ought rather to say, that God, who delights in good works and upright intentions, has aided his virtuous career, and enabled him to overcome obstacles such as would have crushed a man of unrighteous principles, and confounded all his projects.

* "Dijs proximus ille est
, non ira movet, qui facta rependens
ire potest."

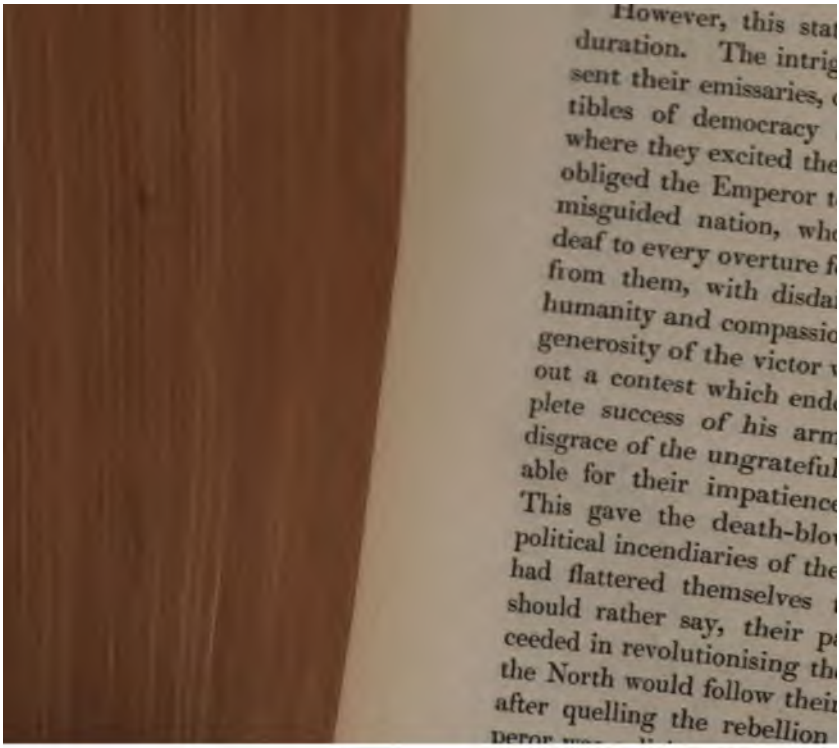
The commencement of his reign was dark and stormy; but the sun of glory soon burst forth, and dispersed the gathering clouds. A band of young officers, who served in the campaign against Bounaparte, and had imbibed, during their residence in France, those pernicious democratic principles which have already shaken to their foundations many of the most ancient, solid, and religious institutions of Europe, now conceived the criminal scheme of extirpating the Imperial family, and establishing a republican form of government!

Never was a wilder or more absurd project concerted. And by whom? By a band of inexperienced, hot-headed young men, whose audacity and presumption were only equalled by their ignorance and impiety. But the Great Arbiter of the fate of empires and all human affairs, in his inscrutable wisdom and mercy, thought fit to frustrate their horrible and sanguinary designs, which would have plunged Russia into a civil war, and destroyed for ever the peace, happiness, and prosperity of her faithful and excellent people. The few who were credulous enough to listen to those misled and presumptuous youths no sooner discovered their real intentions, and the deceptions practised to entice them, than they abandoned them to their fate. The Emperor, on this critical and awful occasion, discovered great courage and firmness; and, indeed, behaved like a hero of the first class: a hero, whose bosom glowed with all the finer feelings of humanity.



Not long after this event, he was forced into a contest with Persia, caused by the intrigues of a certain power at the court of Teheran. His enemies, however, were disappointed; for the war was very soon decided in the Emperor's favour, by his valiant troops carrying their victorious arms to the very walls of the capital, and forcing the Shah, who had been weak enough to listen to foreign counsels, to accept a peace on whatever terms the Emperor chose to dictate. Considering that the sovereign of Persia was the aggressor, he was treated with great generosity, having been obliged to pay only the expenses of the war, and cede certain boundaries, which became absolutely necessary to secure the frontier, on the Emperor's side, from the danger of such sudden attacks in future.

This war was scarcely finished, when the intrigues of the envious again involved him in a dispute with the Sultan of Turkey. At the commencement the armies of Russia were headed by the Emperor in person. Suffice it to say, that after several bloody battles, and passing mountains which had never before been trod by an enemy, as well as taking a number of fortified places hitherto deemed impregnable, the Russian troops penetrated into the heart of Turkey; where the Emperor, if he were as ambitious as his enemies pretend, might have planted his standard on the walls of Constantinople, in spite of the world in arms. But his moderation and greatness of soul prompted him to act differently. He granted the


However, this stat
duration. The intrig
sent their emissaries,
tibles of democracy
where they excited the
obliged the Emperor t
misguided nation, wh
deaf to every overture f
from them, with disda
humanity and compassio
generosity of the victor
out a contest which end
plete success of his arm
disgrace of the ungrateful
able for their impatience
This gave the death-blo
political incendiaries of the
had flattered themselves
should rather say, their p
ceeded in revolutionising th
the North would follow thei
after quelling the rebellion
peror

ant to comply with the Sultan's request, his ıpital must have fallen. But fleets and armies ere despatched with such expedition, that the Viceroy's hitherto victorious career was suddenly hecked; and the Emperor insisted on his returning into Egypt before he would permit the Sultan to listen to any proposals for a negotiation.

When the other powers of Europe saw with what zeal and activity the monarch of Russia had complied with the solicitations of his neighbour, now his friend, they likewise affected to take an active part, pretending to interfere in behalf of the Sultan, whom they endeavoured to render suspicious as to the real motives of the Emperor's conduct; hinting that he was governed by the impulses of ambition, and had secret designs against the independence of Turkey. Indeed, the French ambassador went so far as to request the Sultan to desire the Emperor to withdraw his troops. The former, however, being a man of firm character, and feeling confident of the disinterested conduct of his ally, refused; whilst the latter declared, loudly and formally, that his fleets and troops should not quit Turkey until the armies of the Viceroy had retreated beyond the Sultan's frontiers. This declaration was followed up by a reinforcement of ships and troops; and the intriguing envoy of France, and likewise those of other nations, found themselves obliged to submit; whilst the London and Paris journals fumed and fretted in the most violent manner, saying that

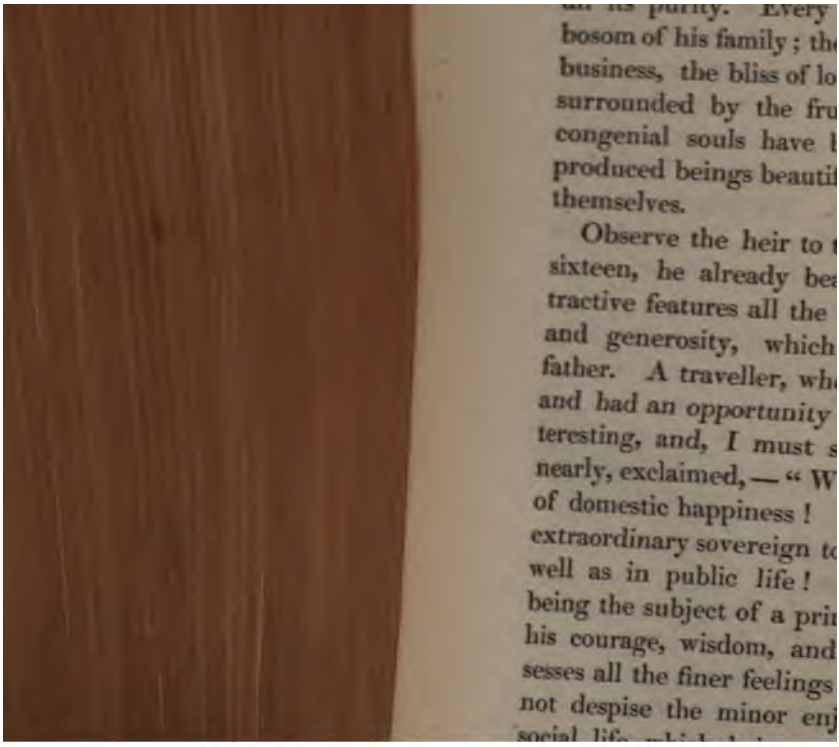


Blessed with a religious, brave, industrious, and loyal people, a powerful and invincible army, and an empire whose resources are inexhaustible, the Emperor of Russia stands upon an impregnable rock, against which the storms of anarchy, irreligion, and democracy spend their fury in vain!

Hitherto I have spoken of this monarch in his political relations only; let us now take a glance at his private life—if an emperor may be said to have any private moments. His illustrious consort, one of the finest women in Europe, is the daughter of the good and excellent King of Prussia, and is as remarkable for virtue as for dignity, elegance of manners, and superior accomplishments. Never were two persons more exactly suited to each other in mind, character, and person. At court she shines the "fairest of the fair," and is immediately recognised by her imperial mien, added to the most mild and amiable manners, making herself admired and beloved by all those who surround her.

But who is it that we see in the midst of a group of military officers collected before a large body of troops, drawn up in order of battle; who towers above the rest; whose aspiring mien, commanding features, masculine form, and eagle eye, attract all beholders? It is the Emperor! Even those who see him for the first time exclaim, involuntarily, "Surely that must be the monarch."

His appearance corresponds in every respect with the transcendent powers of his mind, and the



e attachment they bear him, and judge impar-lly of their relative situations. His activity, and tention to the careful management of all the public stitutions for the education of youth, are beyond l praise. He visits every part of them himself; xamines the food, clothing, chambers, bedding, ospitals, kitchens, &c.; arriving, often, when he s least expected by the directors; and enquires, ıot only into the progress, but the conduct and norals of the scholars. In fact, nothing escapes his notice, nor can any thing be proposed to his decision and judgment that he does not comprehend in all its bearings. The Russian military education and discipline are extremely strict; one of the concurring causes which render the Emperor's officers and troops so highly distinguished. Although he is obliged to be severe, on points touching the rules and regulations of the service, yet his humanity and goodness of heart often make him pass over slight offences. Soldiers are not allowed to buy liquor except on certain holydays; and those who procure it at other times, and convey it into the barracks, expose themselves to the risk of being punished. Once, when the Emperor was on his way to review a regiment, in passing near the barracks he discovered a soldier walking along with a bottle under his arm, before the latter perceived him. The man was, of course, greatly embarrassed, as he drew himself up to salute the Emperor; which his Imperial Majesty perceiving, said to him, "Run, my good fellow,

as quick as possible, and hide your bottle; for my brother, the Grand Duke, is not far behind me, and if he sees you with liquor, he'll punish you."

Not long after the Emperor came to the throne, he paid a visit to the mine corps, or College of Mineralogy, where young men receive an education to fit them for superintending the mines of Perm and Siberia. There were a number of fine specimens of mineralogy arranged scientifically in glass cases, and, as it was thought, in perfect order. The director, in conducting the Emperor through the different apartments, pointed out whatever he considered most worthy his notice. After admiring and examining several of the collections, the Emperor at length stopped before a glass case which particularly drew his attention; and, taking up one of the specimens, said, "Mr. Director, I do not profess to be a connoisseur in these things; but, as far as I am acquainted with mineralogy, I am inclined to think this object is not in its place, as it belongs to such a class," naming a case he had previously inspected. The director was surprised, and immediately sent for the mineralogist who had arranged them. When he came the specimen was shown him; and, without being informed of what the Emperor said, he was asked where it belonged. He replied, to such a case, naming the one marked out by the Emperor.

This anecdote would not be worth mentioning if the Emperor had been known to have particu-

studied mineralogy, but such is not the case; erefore serves to illustrate his retentive me- y and general knowledge.

Place him where you please, he discovers the e genius and penetration. On board a cutter, rigate, or a ship of the line, he is equally at me. If there be the slightest thing out of der, a yard badly squared, a brace too slack, or rope of the running rigging not belayed in its lace, he discovers it immediately. He has been nown to arrive suddenly at Cronstadt, and get imself rowed off to a frigate in the roads, without giving the admiral any notice of his intention, until his standard was hoisted, and a signal made to the fleet to get under weigh; which he has manœuvred himself in the most masterly style. When he returned to the anchorage, he has invited the admiral on board to dine, and publicly thanked him for the able manner in which the fleet performed their evolutions. Should any of the captains make a blunder during the time, or be deficient in making the signals, he was sure to get a reprimand. When the corps of guards are drawn up before him, at a review, if a single soldier is misplaced, badly accoutred, or the slightest derangement takes place, he instantly perceives it as he gallops along the lines. Nothing escapes his penetrating glance, and still more piercing intellect, where sound judgment presides over a well-digested mass of the most useful acquirements.

There is nothing connected with the interests of his empire, presented for his consideration, that he is not capable of comprehending and deciding upon impartially and correctly. Always on the alert, and constantly disposed towards the side of justice, if there be abuses in Russia, they certainly cannot be laid at the door of the Emperor. Of this all his subjects are so perfectly satisfied that they give him full credit for his paternal care, and are ready at every moment to spend the last drop of their blood in his service. His confidence in them is not less conspicuous; for he often perambulates the streets of St. Petersburgh on foot, entirely unattended. Nay, more; he makes a journey of many miles in a common post waggon alone, without even a companion. He is, perhaps, the only monarch of Europe who dares to trust himself to his people, unguarded and unattended.

I could relate a hundred anecdotes of his amiable temper and condescension; his playing at the boyish games with the cadets; his sports with his own children; his conversation with the soldiers, whom he embraces according to the Russian custom at the Easter holidays,—that is to say, a certain number who have distinguished themselves; with many other traits to prove his being a good man, as well as a great potentate.

The Greek religion, which is adopted in this country, is the most ancient and orthodox of the

world. The service is imposing; and instead of organs and instruments, the human voice is alone heard — than which nothing is more truly fervent, or tends to elevate the soul towards its Creator. The first time I heard the choir at the Emperor's chapel, I was enchanted and raised above the feelings of my nature, by music of the most touching character I had ever heard; each reciting his part with such exquisite skill and taste, as to produce a concert of celestial melody. Then, the richness and beauty of the altar, the magnificent costume of the priests, and the solemn and impressive manner in which they performed the service, combine to raise the mind to the regions of the blessed.

The splendour of the Greek Church has been criticised by those who pretend that our Maker, according to the Gospel, ought to be worshipped with the greatest meekness and simplicity. But I am of opinion meekness and simplicity apply to the heart and the inward state of the mind; for nothing can be too splendid or too magnificent to offer to the Deity. I therefore admire the stately and richly endowed churches of Russia; and not less so the purity and simplicity of heart with which the people generally offer up their prayers in them. Their devotion is truly sincere; and as they attend the churches regularly from their infancy, if they were not religious from sentiment, they would become so

from an habitual attendance on divine service. A man must be very callous indeed, who hears the word of God preached to him and remains unmoved by the simplicity and beauty of the language. Besides, as he is brought to the confession of his sins, in Russia, once a year, few men's hearts are so hardened as not to yield before the throne of grace, and ask for mercy and forgiveness. There is an edict which obliges all those persons who serve the crown, and the lower classes, no matter what may be their religion, to take the sacrament once a year, according to their tenets, under pain of doing penance for every such neglect, as prescribed by the laws of the church to which they belong. The Greek religion, that is to say, the religion of Russia, is very strict on this head. This is certainly a very proper regulation. Every one there keeps the great fast, during which he eats neither butter, meat, cheese, milk, eggs, or cream; and on certain days only vegetables, at other times fish. At the close of this fast, he confesses his sins before God, to a clergyman, who does not, like the Catholic priests, grant him a free pardon for all the enormities he may have committed. He is merely the witness of his repentance and confession before God, exhorting him, praying for him, and, in fine, giving him his blessing, without attempting to take upon himself what belongs to God alone. It is not for mortal man to assume the power of pardoning

offences committed against Heaven. He who created us, and who knows the secrets of our hearts and the purport of our sojourn upon earth, can alone pardon our transgressions — for it is He only who can judge them impartially.

Your philosophers, liberals, and propagandi, who seek to persuade us there is nothing like the "march of intellect," and that religion and priests are mere folly and superstitition, have offered us no substitute, — no hope to cling to in times of sickness and suffering, — no sheet anchor to moor by, when our vessel is in danger of being driven and dashed to pieces against the rocks of eternity. I wish I could transport one of those atheists into the cottage of a poor Russian peasant, when on his death-bed he receives the last sacrament at the hands of his pastor and confessor, that he might behold with what calm resignation and fortitude he resigns his life into the hands of his Maker! A smile of confidence and hope in the goodness and mercy of God illumes the last feeble expression of his languid features. Not so that wretch meets his fate who has been brought up in the school of impiety. His philosophy then deserts him; terror takes possession of his imagination; no consolation is left, for his confidence in God has been shaken; and he dies in an agony of doubt and despair. What a contrast! And where is the man who has ever felt the benign influence of religion and virtue, who could be weak and stupid enough to resign them for the flimsy

and unstable doctrines of the new school? Certainly not a subject of Russia.

Some English gentlemen happened to be present one day while a *Te Deum* was celebrated by the Emperor of Russia in person, and about 60,000 men, in the open field. When the whole body of troops, at a particular part of the prayers, fell on their knees, and to a man seemed wrapt in fervent devotion, they were so struck with the solemnity of the thanksgiving, that they shed tears, and declared they had never in their lives before felt so sincerely moved by any religious ceremony. Such a profound silence prevailed, and such a deep attention to the prayers, that the voice of the priests and the singers were heard distinctly on all sides. Then at the close, when the Emperor passed by the front of every regiment, the heartfelt *hurra* that greeted him was truly exhilarating.

"There," said my guardian, "these are the people whom your countrymen, ignorant of their language, religion, characters, and feelings, have so unjustly stigmatised with the epithet of barbarians! Tell them, when you return home, that these barbarians are, in many respects, more civilised than themselves; but, above all, that they are honest, good, and loyal subjects, educated in the fear of God and love of their sovereign, and perform their duty to both strictly. Besides, they are generous, hospitable, and kind; indulgent fathers, and dutiful children; and in whose bosoms

the fire of patriotism and undaunted courage are not to be extinguished by the most desperate circumstances. On the contrary, in times of imminent danger, in the strife of battles, or in the agonies of death, it is then their fortitude and trust in God is most conspicuous; it is then they exhibit the firmness, resolution, bravery, and piety, instilled into their souls by a pious education — by being taught, from their earliest infancy, the religious duties of virtuous subjects. How vain and futile would appear to them the language and impiety of the new school, and how flimsy and uncomfortable the promises of liberty and licentiousness, nicknamed *equality*, compared with those of religion and eternal life! A native of Russia would smile with contempt at any one who should offer him more freedom than what he already enjoys, at the expense of his soul. He would reject the proposal with disdain, saying, "My religion teaches me, that licentiousness and rebellion are crimes which endanger my eternal safety; and I reject them as wicked and unhallowed demons, sent to disturb my peace in this world, and my happiness in the world to come. And in truth, what have those disbelievers and freethinkers, to entice him, whose faith is fixed — who believes firmly in the words of the Gospel, and mercy and clemency of an Omnipotent and Benignant Creator?"

"You have been eloquent," replied one of the gentlemen, "on the subject of the people of

Russia, and not less so in exposing the fallacious doctrines of the propagandi. I admire your opinions so much, that I could wish, on your return to Great Britain, you would publish some tracts, which might be put into every one's hands, to convince the people of the folly and madness of listening to a set of demagogues and egotists, who seek nothing but their own advancement."

"Alas! sir," answered my guardian, "my efforts would be fruitless; but, depend upon it, the time is not far removed when the Great Disposer of Events will bring them to a sense of their iniquity. God is their judge, and *He* also will be their *corrector*."

I have often regretted that the right of primogeniture does not exist in this country, so necessary to prevent great fortunes from being divided and ruined, as they generally are, so that one seldom sees them handed down to the second or third generation. This would not only keep an immense solid capital in the country, but is intrinsically the attribute of every monarchical government, which ought always to be surrounded and supported by a wealthy and respectable aristocracy. That of Russia is certainly a very rich and respectable one, but the fortunes are too much divided; and the titles of prince, count, &c., too widely extended, in proportion to the wealth of those who possess them. Nothing is more ridiculous and mal-à-propos than a poor count, prince, or baron, who is obliged, in consequence of the

mediocrity of his fortune, to employ an economy which would not be noticed in another, but in him appears low and mean. It brings nobility into disrepute, as mankind generally raise their imagination of a man's fortune to the rank he holds in society; and, when they find him wanting, they regard him with contempt, unless he be possessed of extraordinary talents and accomplishments to distinguish him from the crowd.

Whilst we remained at the capital, we became intimate with many noble families, and had, consequently, during three or four years' residence, time to study the manners, customs, and characters of the inhabitants generally. I cannot help repeating the good opinion I entertain of their politeness, generosity, and hospitality; nor, indeed, have I ever met with more real friendship elsewhere. The ladies are very elegant, both in their dress and manners, and exceedingly amiable withal, but are rather too fond of dissipation.

In London and Paris thefts are every where committed in the streets in open day, but in St. Petersburg very seldom indeed. There, I have often seen a boy lying asleep with his basket of bread, apples, cakes, &c., at his side, and a man come and shake him by the shoulder, saying, "Wake up, you drowsy fellow, I want to buy something from you." In either of the above-mentioned capitals, his basket would have been eased of its contents without disturbing his repose. In a very populous part of the city where there are many hucksters,

I have often seen them merely throw a light covering of mats or linen over their stalls, whilst they went home to dinner; and, I have been confidently assured, no one ever attempts to touch any thing during their absence. There are certainly thieves and bad people in Russia as elsewhere, but much fewer in proportion to the population than in any other country where I have resided. There is a good deal of brotherly love and fellow-feeling amongst the poor. Should a drunken man be so far gone as to fall down in the street, at a distance from the watchman's stand, or that of a soldier of the town guard, some good-natured person either conducts him home, or else delivers him to the nearest policeman to take charge of him. Throughout the people are remarkable for their kind, hospitable, and generous feelings, and being religious also; it would certainly be a lamentable misfortune to see those excellent qualities perverted by the introduction of the new-fangled impious doctrines prevalent in other parts of Europe. For this reason, I have always wished to see foreign customs, manners, and languages less used in Russia; and, were I the Emperor, I would have no political *liaisons* in the form of alliances with any of the powers of Europe, farther than related to commerce. Having nothing in common with them, and seeing the mischief and the horrors their political dogmas have produced, I would keep myself to myself as much as possible. I would do every thing different

from them; have uniforms and dresses of my own country, corresponding with the habits, climate, &c.; and, in fact, would copy nothing I could possibly avoid, in order to preserve my people in all their original fidelity to their God, their sovereign, their government, and good old primitive habits and manners.

Although Moscow is, upon the whole, infinitely more national in manners and customs than St. Petersburg, I was sorry to perceive even there the French language fashionable, and that a bias in favour of foreign articles was also very prevalent. Before I finally quitted Russia, this city had become more flourishing than ever, taking the lead as a manufacturing place; nevertheless, it was curious to see one half the shops, in imitation of those of the capital, exhibiting signs in all the languages of Europe, to recommend their commodities, which were entirely of home manufacture. This, it seems, was done to entice a certain class of customers, who even to the last moment will not suffer themselves to be convinced that any thing fit for use can be made at home.*

* Whilst at the capital we became very intimate with Mr. Kozedaolew, the Minister of the Interior, a sensible, well-informed statesman, and a genuine friend of his country; but many people in Russia, from a prejudice of foreign productions, laughed at him, and endeavoured to put him down, because he insisted upon forming manufactories in his own country of certain objects of general consumption which were formerly purchased from foreigners. As we took a decided

I confess, however, that this want of patriotism is confined to those rich and capricious people,

part with him, and assisted his views by publishing a series of papers in the public journals in favour of his system, he conceived a great friendship for us, and, in turn, endeavoured to promote our designs for the amelioration of Kamschatka: but all our schemes proved abortive, and, owing to the invidious, malicious interference of the directors of the Russian American Company, were productive of great losses to us, without altering the miserable condition of the natives, except for the worse.

The great improvement which has taken place in the manufactures of Russia is, in justice, due to the energy, perseverance, and unshaken patriotism of Mr. Kozedaolew, who, braving the scorn and reproaches of his enemies, persisted in the establishment of certain branches of industry which have since flourished and come to perfection. A mass of capital is, consequently, kept at home that formerly went into the pockets of strangers. To such a man and such a patriot, gratitude ought to have erected a statue. However, his friends may console themselves with the assurance that he has left a monument "*ære perennius*," in the hearts of all who knew him, and love their country. His name must be handed down to posterity amongst the few whom honour and integrity have emblazoned with deathless fame. Whilst alluding to those who have exerted themselves to promote the public weal, Captain Rikord must not be forgotten. He was the only disinterested character of all the chiefs appointed to govern in Kamschatka. He delighted in relieving their wants, cherished them, introduced many important improvements in agriculture and gardening; and, in fact, did every thing that could be done during his administration, with the circumscribed means placed at his disposal. It was his representation that procured from the Emperor rations of flour for the clergy of that country, where very little grain is produced.

who also affect to be in a tremor should any one address them in their native language. This is still more astonishing, when it is recollected that the native tongue of Russia is extremely soft and rich; yet, so prone were the fashionable people to the use of French, that in all well-bred societies it was the universal medium of conversation. Latterly, however, I was rejoiced to see more attention paid to the native language; and, at present, it is cultivated by many who formerly only used it in their intercourse with the peasantry and their domestics.

From this lengthened dissertation on the moral and political condition of the people, among whom we were sojourning, let me now return to my own personal narrative. During our residence at St. Petersburg my beloved Daria had blessed me with

They remember Captain Rikord's interference in their behalf with feelings of gratitude. His successors thought of nothing but filling their own pockets, and undoing all the good their predecessor had contrived to effect. They have reduced the natives to a state of the utmost wretchedness and poverty, and have, in fact, almost depopulated the peninsula.

Government ought to have reflected on the folly of sending a number of officers to govern a country possessing only a handful of inhabitants, unless they meant to colonise it; and, under any circumstances, at such an immense distance from the capital, it would be very difficult to prevent venality, cruelty, and injustice. Kamschatka is in a deplorable condition; it is an expense to the state; and the miserable remains of a once flourishing population are on the point of being extirpated.

a daughter. The prospect of a family, and the duties and responsibilities inseparable from it, very considerably diminished the restless passion, which, previous to my marriage, had urged me to seek for happiness in a wandering and unsettled life. In my conversations with Daria, I had frequently expatiated with a feeling of national pride on the beauty and fertility of my native land. I described the freedom of its government, the magnificence of its cities, and, above all, the happiness and security of an Englishman's fireside, where alone the domestic virtues are duly cherished and enjoyed. Such a fascinating picture was well calculated to excite in her mind the desire to visit a country of which she had heard so much. With the concurrence of my guardian, therefore, a journey to England was speedily arranged; and whilst he superintended the requisite preparations, I departed with my wife and little daughter on a short tour through some of the more southern provinces of the empire. Moscow was the first city at which we made any considerable stay; and after viewing every object worthy of attention in that singular mixture of European and Oriental magnificence, we pursued our route through Vladimir, to the famous old town of Nijna Novogorod. We passed through it, and stopped at the estate of the Prince of Georgia, to whom we were introduced by his sister, and who would not hear of our leaving Russia without s[illegible] celebrated fair annually

held at Novogorod. We returned with him to the town; where, in the enjoyment of his splendid hospitality, and the society of a number of genteel persons who came to the fair, our time passed away imperceptibly.

The town was literally filled with visitors whilst it lasted. There was a club established by the nobles, where a ball was given once a week, which, added to the many private dinners and entertainments of the inhabitants, with theatrical amusements, kept us constantly engaged. The society was very brilliant, and animated by the presence of several beautiful women, who danced elegantly, and were very genteel in their manners. I confess I was surprised to find myself so well pleased with a provincial town, after a long residence in the capital, and to see so much gentility and good-breeding in the interior of the country.

This fair, where, I have been told, merchandise to the value of from two to three hundred millions of rubles is annually sold, exhibits a curious and interesting spectacle; namely, specimens of the costume and inhabitants of almost every country of the globe assembled on one spot. So great are the allurements of commerce, that many of the natives of Cashmere and India visit this far-celebrated mart with shawls, and other Oriental commodities.* Merchants of Russia also arrive there

* I met there a merchant from India, and spoke to him in his own language: he told me he came from the province of Surat.

from the remotest parts of Siberia, a distance of four or five thousand miles. During a month, the time allotted by law for holding this fair, the stir, bustle, and activity that prevailed throughout amused me exceedingly; and I frequently stopped to listen to the bargains making on all sides, and to witness the ease with which many appeared to manage their customers, and sell off their goods.

The Russians have a very enticing way of luring people to purchase their merchandise; though I cannot praise the custom of asking double the value of a commodity, and then lowering down by degrees until they come to the price that suits you. If a man, unacquainted with these matters, and also ignorant of the price of the article he wants, goes to buy of them, he may be sorely cheated.

One of the most agreeable public amusements was a small theatre, where the scenes, very beautifully executed, as well as several large puppets, which were the actors, were managed by mechanism: and the latter being moved by fine wires, had a very natural effect. Of course they played only pantomime, but their actions were graceful; and the rapidity with which the scenes were shifted really surprised me. The directors and secret movers of the puppets were two Germans, who exhibited sieges and sea-fights as after-pieces to their pantomimes; where the bursting of bombs, the blowing up of ships, and all the effects of fire and water, in miniature, were most faithfully and

correctly represented. This theatre drew more visiters than the larger ones; and I could not but admire the cleverness and skill with which two men contrived to manage such a complicated representation. I was glad, however, when the fair ended, and we obtained the Prince's permission to proceed on our journey homewards; for he wished us to return with him to his estate, and pass a few days there previous to our departure. We therefore took leave of our hospitable friend, and, travelling rapidly, at the end of a few days we found ourselves again in St. Petersburgh.

CHAPTER XI.

We remained in the capital merely sufficient time to bid adieu to the numerous circle of friends whose hospitalities had made us their debtors, and then set off for Cronstadt, a port situated about forty miles distant. On reaching our hotel, we understood from the landlord that a grand fête was to be given that very day by a member of the Imperial family at Petershof, a palace and gardens opposite the town on the main land. We were, of course, very desirous of being present; but the captain told us we could not quit the port without the express permission of the Military Governor-General, until the report of our arrival was registered, and passports issued by the competent authorities. However, on visiting that distinguished officer, and producing the Emperor's passport, he treated us with marked politeness, telling us we were at liberty to go where we pleased. After taking an early repast, I set off, with my guardian and Daria, for the scene of these festivities, where we found an immense concourse of people assembled. Tents, of various dimensions, erected in the gardens, were arranged as wine-shops and eating-houses; so that refreshments of every description were to be had in abundance. A splendid illu-

mination took place in the evening, the effect of which was heightened by strains of music proceeding from various parts of the gardens, and fountains and cascades of limpid water, which shone in the brilliant lamplight like liquid silver. In the principal promenades, the whole court was seen passing to and fro in open carriages; whilst the interior of the gardens presented a scene composed of innumerable costumes of rich and poor, high and low, all mingled in one promiscuous assembly. Although the crowd was so immense, there was an order and regularity throughout very gratifying to us, who had witnessed the behaviour of the populace of other countries on similar occasions.

Here, for the first time in my life, I heard a band of Russian horn music. Fifty or sixty men had each a long metal tube, resembling a trumpet, but proportioned in length to the note he was destined to sound. Every tube, consequently, blew only a single note: still the combination of sounds produced an exquisite melody.

As the night was perfectly serene, and the band placed in a situation where every tone, floating softly on the air, was echoed back again, the effect was delightful, and poured a flood of harmony over the enamoured senses.

Whilst all these things were going on in the gardens for the amusement of the populace, a suite of magnificent rooms in the interior of the palace presented an assemblage of the Imperial

family and many distinguished characters, of both sexes. A splendid ball ensued; and, as this festival was given by the Dowager Empress to her son, she did the honours of the entertainment, aided by the Emperor, who strove to render the company gay and happy. His extremely polite, condescending, and amiable deportment was above all praise: and it was difficult to say in which character he most excelled, the gentleman or the monarch.

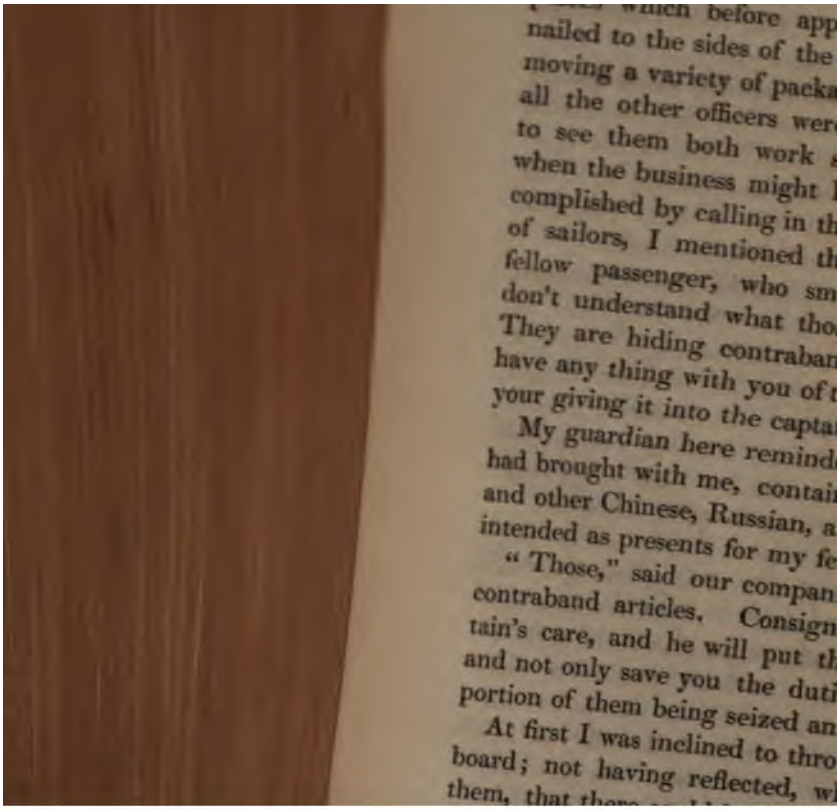
Having satisfied our curiosity at the ball, we returned to the gardens, and, after rambling about until completely fatigued, we went into a tent, and ordered supper. One or two parties of our acquaintance having joined us, we passed some hours in agreeable conversation; and by the time we got back to our lodgings at Cronstadt, it was already near three in the morning.

Having determined to take our passage in a brig bound from thence to Lübeck, we went to see the captain on board, that we might at the same time examine her accommodations. We discovered him seated on the quarter-deck, in a large chair, from which he with difficulty raised his huge mass of flesh to salute us as we approached him. The consul declared his weight to be upwards of five hundred pounds; yet, when once upon his legs, he displayed much more activity, and walked lighter, than I could have imagined it possible, considering the man was as thick as he was tall.

Every thing in the vessel corresponded with the captain in size, but particularly the companion-way leading into the cabin, the doors, passages, chairs, &c. of which were evidently constructed on a larger scale than usual.

He seemed a good-natured, obliging fellow. He conducted us to the cabin, showed us the berths we should have, and promised to do every thing in his power to make our passage as agreeable as possible. We therefore did not hesitate to engage accommodations in his vessel, which was appointed to sail the following day.

We repaired on board at the time appointed, and found the captain all ready to start. In a few minutes after we set sail, with a fine fair wind and a smooth sea; and, from appearances, had reason to count upon a short passage. The vessel was a good strong one; she sailed well, and if our fat captain had not been timid, our sanguine anticipations might have been realised. But, unfortunately, the moment the wind blew fresh he became alarmed, and took in sail, though it was perfectly fair; and, in spite of our solicitations, persisted in taking a reef in his topsails every night. We were consequently ten days in performing what might have been readily accomplished in six. However, the time did not lie heavy on our hands, for one of our fellow-passengers, who afterwards proved very useful, kept us amused with his wit, and a number of very entertaining anecdotes.


which before app
nailed to the sides of the
moving a variety of packa
all the other officers were
to see them both work
when the business might
complished by calling in th
of sailors, I mentioned th
fellow passenger, who sm
don't understand what tho
They are hiding contraban
have any thing with you of
your giving it into the capta
My guardian here remind
had brought with me, contai
and other Chinese, Russian, a
intended as presents for my fe
" Those," said our compan
contraband articles. Consign
tain's care, and he will put th
and not only save you the duti
portion of them being seized an
At first I was inclined to thro
board; not having reflected, wi
them, that there

In the course of the afternoon, the captain enquired what baggage we had, and whether there was any merchandise, as he was obliged to report all articles subject to duty. Our friend answered for us all.

"I have so many trunks," said he, enumerating them, "and these gentlemen, my friends, have, besides their ordinary baggage, some boxes containing presents, which they are taking to their friends, and they rely upon you to land them in safety, on their paying you for your trouble."

"My God! Sir," exclaimed the man-mountain, "do you wish to ruin me? My ship will be seized, and all my property confiscated! I cannot take charge of them; they must be thrown into the sea. How could ye be so imprudent, gentlemen, as to bring such things aboard, without informing me of your intention? I am sorry, very sorry for you, but the goods must be destroyed.

"Come, come, good captain," said our friend; "you have carried on this farce long enough. It is now time for me to speak." Then lowering his voice so as not to be heard by the officers, he said,—

"I am well aware you have yourself a vast quantity of contraband goods. I can point out the hiding-places to the custom-house officers, because I saw you stow them away. So no more of your exclamations and objections. If you refuse to take our few trifling boxes under your protection, the moment we arrive I'll inform against you, and have all your hidden merchandise

seized. Then, indeed, you may truly say we mean to ruin you."

During this speech, the plump rosy face of the captain became pale and long; his under lip fell as if he had lost all its elasticity; and he coughed and hemm'd half a dozen times, unable to give utterance to something he wished to impart. Our friend, however, continued, "I shall accept of no excuse; it is in vain to prevaricate. I know all your secrets. Shall we be friends or foes? Here 's my hand."

The captain finding his trade was discovered, and that there was no longer any hope of deceiving us, smiled and gave him his hand, saying, "Well, my loving friend, I must do as you wish, since you have discovered me. But, gentlemen, I trust to your honour; for, if you were to lisp a word concerning contraband, they would search the vessel strictly, and I should be ruined for ever."

We all promised profound secrecy: the boxes were handed over to him, and in a few minutes we were as good friends as ever.

"There," said our companion, "you see I know how to manage these fellows. Depend upon it, he will now take quite as good care of your things as he does of his own; and you must confess I have arranged better than to allow you to consign your property to Davy Jones, to trig out his wife with."

I thanked him, and said I was much indebted on the ladies' accou[illegible]or my own part, notwith-

standing the whole affair would be conducted under the auspices of the fat captain, I could not help thinking myself blameable, inasmuch as we obliged him to take upon him the task of cheating the revenue for us.

In a few hours after the vessel arrived at Lübeck our commodities were safely handed over to us, and we proceeded on our journey towards Havre de Grace, a French port, opposite the English coast, by the somewhat circuitous route of Berlin, the capital of Prussia. This city pleased me much, not only on account of the cleanliness of its streets, but the style of its architecture. Some of the public buildings are magnificent; for simplicity and elegance supply the place of those tawdry ornaments with which, I must say, it is too much the fashion to surcharge them in other cities in Europe. Nothing is more beautiful in architecture than columns, when introduced judiciously; but, if a building is overloaded with them, there is no architectural ornament so heavy and disagreeable to the eye. Columns, however, are not meant for mere display. They are an ornamental method of sustaining a certain weight, so as to contribute, at the same time, to the solidity of the edifice.

Generally speaking, the architecture of private houses in Berlin is solid, chaste, and elegant; the prototype of the monarch of Prussia, and his just and equitable government. He is a most exemplary character, a good and just man, who has a

paternal affection for his people, and whose wise and firm measures preserved them, whilst several of the neighbouring states were torn to pieces by civil discord, and the adoption of the revolutionary schemes of France. Here, thank God, they have not succeeded; and Russia, in close alliance with her powerful neighbour, is a formidable barrier against the advancement of Jacobinism in the North. For the sake of religion, order, and humanity, we should hope they will never cease to resist, with all their force, the impious projects of the disturbers of the peace of mankind. As to the King of Prussia, his example in private, as well as public life, is a host in itself; and, as the nation really love him, and respect his wisdom and justice, we may look upon this frontier of solid Christian principles as impregnable.

Next to the people of Russia, I have met none more worthy of my esteem than the inhabitants of the before-named kingdom. They have resisted with firmness the pernicious doctrines of the propaganda, who have endeavoured, for several years past, to revolutionise the German states.

After leaving Berlin, we pushed on to Dresden on the Elbe, the beautifully situated capital of Saxony. Here Buonaparte made a stand to resist the allied armies; but was obliged to retreat to Leipsic, where he lost the great battle which emancipated Germany from her yoke. The environs are picturesque and beautiful; and the inhabitants are fond of walking in the public gardens

opposite side of the river, over which there is rb bridge, that the barbarians of the French endeavoured to destroy. Fortunately, they artially injured it, and it was immediately re- l. This city is the residence of the king, by n, on presenting our letters of introduction, ere received with great politeness and atten- .

The society to which we were introduced was y select and interesting, particularly at the se of a certain Baroness, who contrived to col- t around her a number of distinguished literary aracters. She was a woman of very fine talents erself; and we found her so attractive, that we enerally passed the evenings at her hotel during ur stay. There we never saw cards introduced; but an enlightened, instructive, and spirited conversation on literary subjects, in which the hostess always took a very active part, made our time pass away imperceptibly.

On our way to Weimar we passed through Leipsic, purposely to see the spot where Buonaparte fought his last battle on that side of the Rhine. He certainly chose a disadvantageous spot, it being a piece of low marshy ground, where neither artillery nor cavalry could be manœuvred or employed to advantage. This has been noticed by military critics as one of his great blunders; of which, however, he made a number, like all the great military commanders of our days.

We found the Prince at Weimar; and he very

politely accompanied us to the court of the Princess. The reception we met with at this small, genteel, and interesting court, from the Princess, who possesses all that amiable condescension for which the Imperial family of Russia are remarkable, flattered and charmed us beyond measure. Indeed, it resembled the domestic circle of some private nobleman; and nothing could surpass the politeness and affability of all its members.

After passing some very agreeable days in Weimar, we took our leave; and the Prince furnished us with a letter of introduction to his cousin, the Duke of Gotha; where he told us we should see a beautiful palace, and the most extraordinary collection of Chinese curiosities in Europe. As we had passed some years in that country, I felt a strong desire to see the Duke's collection; and accepted the letter with many thanks.

The morning after our arrival at Gotha we went to the palace, and delivered our credentials. A chamberlain ushered us into the reception-room, at the same time apologising, in the name of his Highness, for having detained us a short time in the ante-chamber. In a few seconds after the Duke made his appearance, saying, "Gentlemen, I hope you will excuse my receiving you in dishabille; but I could not think of keeping you waiting until I made my toilet. Besides, travellers from China, recommended by my cousin, have a peculiar claim upon me."

When we had thanked him for his polite atten-

tion, he said he should leave us for a few minutes to dress, and that, in the mean while, his chamberlain would show us the palace.

In less than twenty minutes he joined us again. He was a tall, genteel, well-formed man, with fine expressive features, and intelligent blue eyes; but the most conspicuous trait of all seemed an excessive fondness for adorning his person, although he was evidently a man on the wrong side of forty. At his first appearance his hair was in papers; it now fell in ringlets about his cheeks, which were delicately tinged with rouge. A multitude of rings covered his fingers; he wore a glass suspended at his neck by a gold chain, and the heels of his shoes were covered with red morocco. Altogether, he seemed the quintessence of foppery.

Whilst he turned aside to give some directions to his chamberlain, I said to my guardian, in a whisper, "What a consummate coxcomb! If his person in any manner represents the qualities of his mind, we shall have our patience put to the test. How unfortunate it was that I consented to take the Prince's letter!"

"Hold! my son," said he; "I have often told you not to judge precipitately, or by appearances. In some cases, I have had occasion to praise your penetration and aptness to discover the character of men by their features. How comes it that you have in this instance neglected to examine those of the Duke? If you will give yourself the trouble to remark him attentively, you will agree with me,

that the owner of them
lous man or a fool. T
will acknowledge is a
men have weaknesses
haps more criminal."

Before I had time to
Notwithstanding the su
noticed, his dress was ri
manners courteous and d

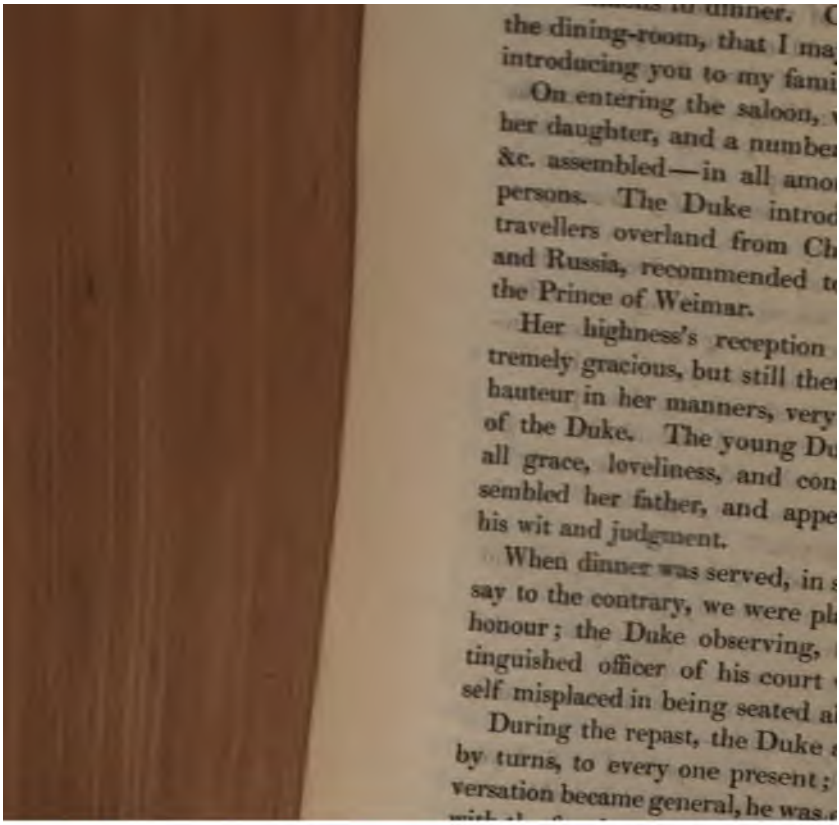
"Gentlemen," said he
your arrival I received a
giving an account of the
and his intention to ende
them to visit me. I want
satisfaction I feel at the h
me: allow me, then, the h
you through my museum,
that is worthy of your attenti
has been dismissed, that I m
tion of having you entirely to

This speech, of course, dr
retaliation of compliments; wh
self to amuse us, and exhibit
thing curious and interesting.
sented a collection extremely ra
being many objects which would
invaluable even in China. We
Highness the properties and uses
scarcely known in Europe, and
lighted at the discovery. His c
played sound judgment, coupled

nowledge and erudition: besides, he was witty nd entertaining. He launched out sometimes in strain of cutting satire against the philosophers of the day, and related many interesting anecdotes of living potentates, and made instructive and profound reflections on their political conduct. He also did not fail to invite a reciprocity on our part; and, by well-adapted questions, drew from us all the information we had collected respecting the governments, manners, and customs of the countries we had visited. In short, I became so completely charmed and absorbed by the conversation and intelligence of our distinguished host, that I entirely forgot, not only the first impression he made upon me, but time and every thing else, until a servant approached his Highness to inform him that the Duchess and his daughter had sent to let him know dinner was ready.

Just then we were admiring some fine Italian paintings; and the Duke, who had been several times in Italy, entertained us with an account of his travels, exhibiting throughout extensive classical knowledge. This led to comparisons between the cities of Europe and those of China, India, &c., when I had still greater reason to admire the solid judgment and great acquirements of my illustrious entertainer.

After telling the servant he should wait on the Duchess immediately, he turned to us, and said,— "Gentlemen, the time has passed off so rapidly in your agreeable company, that I was surprised at



most remarkable part of the entertainment was, that not one word was said on the subject of eating and drinking — none of those dissertations on sauces, ragouts, pies, puddings, &c., with remarks on the best manner of preparing them, which oftentimes become the topic of conversation at great tables, where the science of *gastronomy* is more cultivated than any other.

When dinner was over, the young Duchess drew near me, and, whilst we were taking our coffee, put several questions concerning the climate, manners, and customs of the islands of the Pacific; and seemed quite charmed with my descriptions.

"Oh!" said she, "how I should like to go there! Do you think I should be well received?"

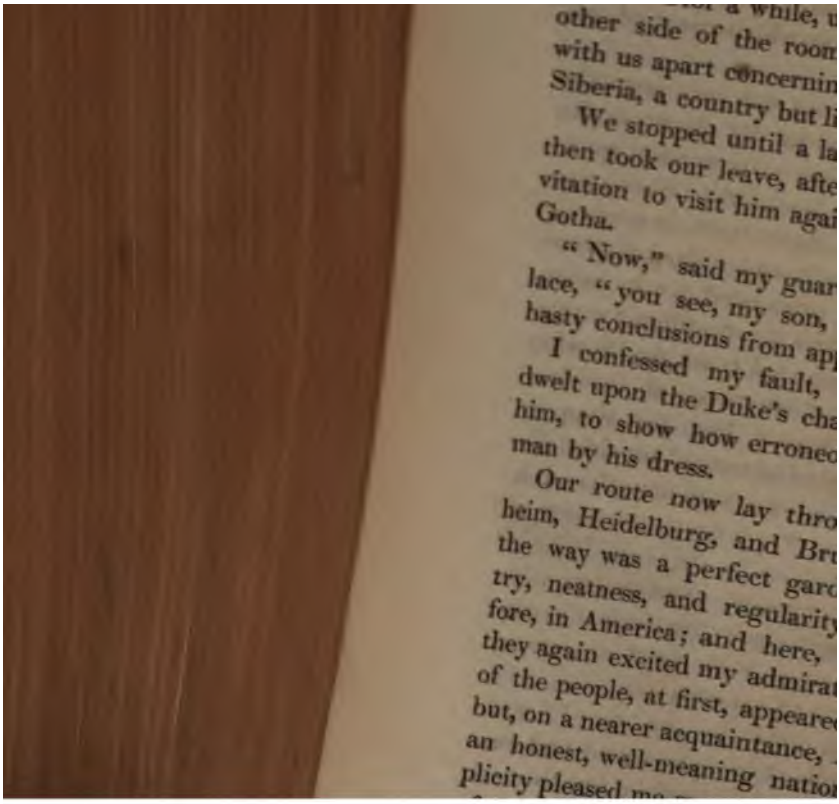
"They would take you for a goddess," said I, "and would worship you."

She sportively replied,—"In that case, I should not wish to visit them, greatly preferring to be treated like a woman, and to participate in the pleasures and enjoyments of mortals."

The Duke approached at that moment, and, overhearing her reply, said,—

"Bravo! my child; I am pleased to find you know how to estimate what is truly desirable, and to dread the dangers and disadvantages of too great a degree of exaltation, by justly separating divinity from mortality."

The Duchess and her friends now sat down to the card-table, and the daughter had collected about her a *coterie* of ladies and gentlemen, which

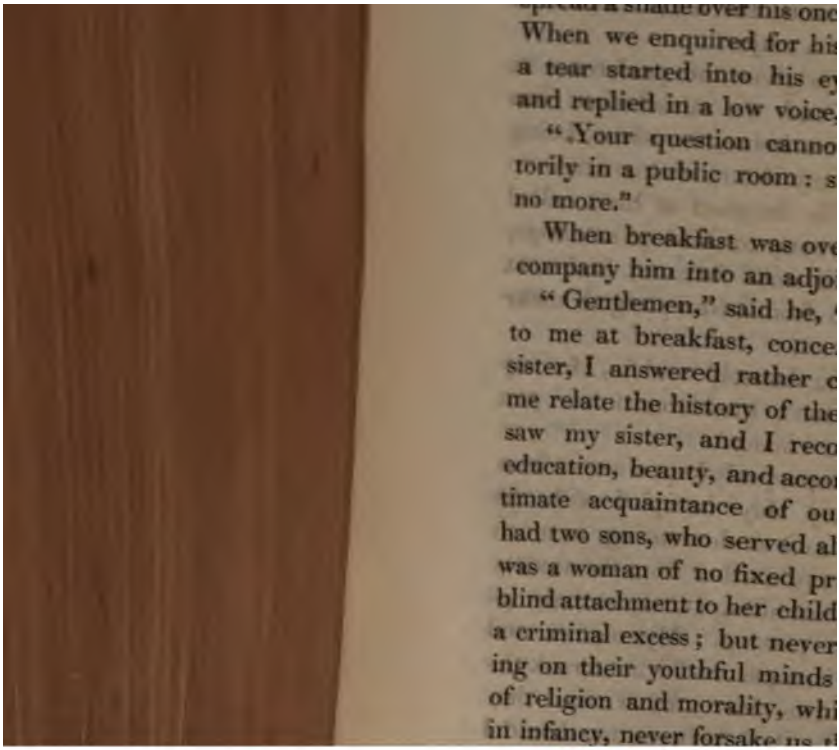


pearance, forming a dismal contrast to the verdant and picturesque scenes with which we had recently been so familiar.

On the fourth day after our entrance upon the French territory, we halted for the night at St. Pierre, a beautiful little *bourg*, or market-town, situated in the centre of a very fertile district on the borders of Burgundy. Early the next morning we were again upon the road; and, feeling disposed to breakfast after we had proceeded six or seven leagues, I was about to hail the postilion for that purpose, just as he commenced cracking his whip to announce our arrival at an hotel, at the door of which the public diligence had also stopped. We consented to partake of the meal provided for the passengers, and quickly seated ourselves at a long table, where there was a numerous party of ladies and gentlemen.

An officer, who sat opposite, in an undress uniform, and who had been eyeing us, from the moment we were first seated, with great anxiety, at length burst forth into an exclamation:—

"By heavens! it must be the same!" and, springing from his chair, he came round and embraced me, saying how delighted he was to meet me again. I returned his embrace; but, although I saw my guardian recollected him, it was some seconds before I recalled the features of the officer we formerly conveyed from the diligence, when stuck fast in a slough, to his mother's farm, on the road to Bordeaux. He had grown haggard;



conscripts, and, being brave and clever, were advanced in the service, until the elder became a colonel and the younger a major.

"My sister had always given the preference to the younger brother, and the attachment was mutual. At their return home, the elder, being also much taken with my sister, endeavoured to oppose his brother. He laughed at him, called him a foolish boy, too young to think of marriage, especially with a girl of small fortune; and went so far as to forbid him from attempting to make proposals.

"'I have chosen that damsel,' said he, 'for my mistress; therefore, don't interfere, unless you mean to make me your enemy.'

"All this was very improperly kept a secret from me, who, being every day occupied with the business of the farm, and endeavouring, as much as possible, to relieve my mother from the anxiety and trouble of superintending it, was entirely ignorant of what was passing. My mother and sister well knew my temper would not brook the infamous conduct of the elder brother; and they dreaded the idea of a duel between us, should I be informed of his behaviour.

"The younger of the two brothers had, from the first moment of his return, solicited my mother to consent to his marriage; but, although she loved him, and wished the connection, the violence of his rival's temper alarmed her so much, that she deferred it month after month, until it was evident

and a melancholy expression of grief or sickness spread a shade over his once animated countenance. When we enquired for his aged parent and sister, a tear started into his eye. He sighed deeply, and replied in a low voice, —

"Your question cannot be answered satisfactorily in a public room: suffice it to say, they are no more."

When breakfast was over, he invited us to accompany him into an adjoining apartment.

"Gentlemen," said he, "the question you put to me at breakfast, concerning my mother and sister, I answered rather concisely; but now let me relate the history of their tragical end. You saw my sister, and I recollect you praised her education, beauty, and accomplishments. An intimate acquaintance of ours, likewise a widow, had two sons, who served also in the army. She was a woman of no fixed principles; and, from a blind attachment to her children, indulged them to a criminal excess; but never thought of impressing on their youthful minds those solid precepts of religion and morality, which, when inculcated in infancy, never forsake us through life. In this particular, her sons were totally abandoned to their own notions of right and wrong. The younger, however, was a young man of fine, noble sentiments, and excellent disposition; whilst the elder exhibited a character passionate, violent, and ungovernable. They both loved my sister. At an early age, like myself, they were taken as

conscripts, and, being brave and clever, were advanced in the service, until the elder became a colonel and the younger a major.

"My sister had always given the preference to the younger brother, and the attachment was mutual. At their return home, the elder, being also much taken with my sister, endeavoured to oppose his brother. He laughed at him, called him a foolish boy, too young to think of marriage, especially with a girl of small fortune; and went so far as to forbid him from attempting to make proposals.

"'I have chosen that damsel,' said he, 'for my mistress; therefore, don't interfere, unless you mean to make me your enemy.'

"All this was very improperly kept a secret from me, who, being every day occupied with the business of the farm, and endeavouring, as much as possible, to relieve my mother from the anxiety and trouble of superintending it, was entirely ignorant of what was passing. My mother and sister well knew my temper would not brook the infamous conduct of the elder brother; and they dreaded the idea of a duel between us, should I be informed of his behaviour.

"The younger of the two brothers had, from the first moment of his return, solicited my mother to consent to his marriage; but, although she loved him, and wished the connection, the violence of his rival's temper alarmed her so much, that she deferred it month after month, until it was evident

attentions of the elder
love had no share. H

" Having obtained h
to inform my sister, wh
in her eyes. Scarcely ha
her lover came to see he
and informed him of th
plication, adding, that
farther delay, and their
summated whenever he

" Whilst we were co
passed through the hall
walking towards a summ
where she was in the h
work or drawing.

" ' There,' said I, to
the garden. Go; when
am writing for the south
besides, in affairs of lov
third person is always an

" The room where I w
and was convenient to re
business, without disturb

rough the entry, and, looking up, I perceived e elder brother hastening towards the garden. ishing to be the first to inform him of the rangement for his brother's marriage, I called to m. He returned, but saluted me somewhat oldly, and seemed impatient.

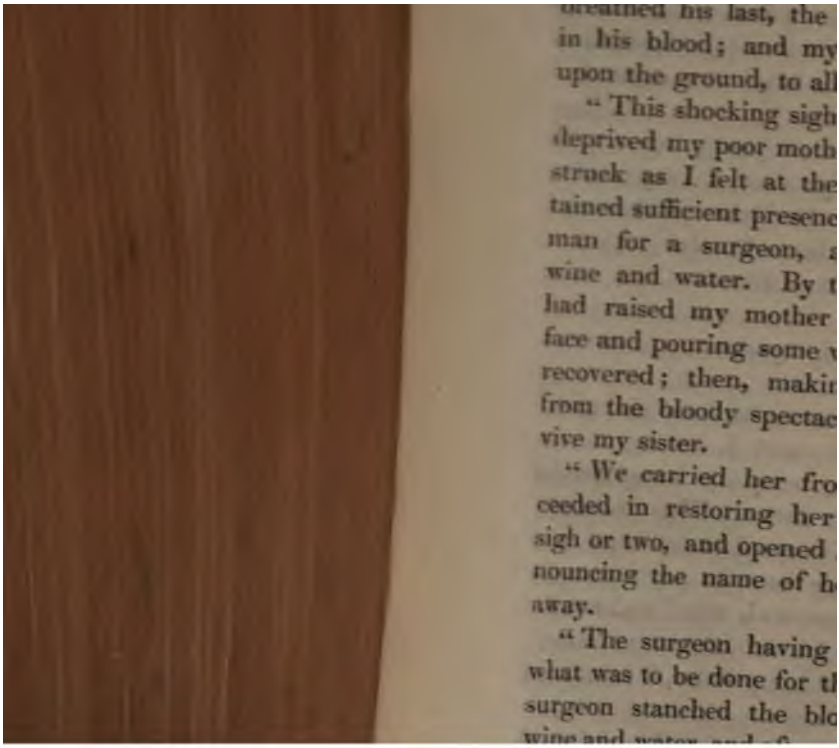
"'Hold!' said I, 'where are you going in such aste? Let me tell you good news: my mother has, at length, consented that your brother and my sister shall be married immediately.'

"Without expressing any emotion, he said, 'Where is he?'

"'There,' said I, 'with my sister, in the summer-house.'

"Off he darted in an instant, without giving me time to say another word; and I, having no suspicion of his intentions, stupidly imagined he hurried to congratulate them. That morning, both the brothers were dressed in uniform, and wore their swords, having been to pay a complimentary visit to an old general, who lived not far off. I certainly thought his conduct very strange; but, being anxious to finish my letter, I continued writing.

"Scarcely ten minutes elapsed before I heard violent shrieks and screams in the garden. I rushed into the entry, where I found my mother and a man servant, who had also been alarmed by the noise; and we all hurried, as fast as possible, towards the spot from whence the sounds proceeded.



breathed his last, the
in his blood; and my
upon the ground, to all

"This shocking sigh
deprived my poor moth
struck as I felt at the
tained sufficient presene
man for a surgeon, a
wine and water. By t
had raised my mother
face and pouring some v
recovered; then, makir
from the bloody spectac
vive my sister.

"We carried her fro
ceeded in restoring her
sigh or two, and opened
nouncing the name of h
away.

"The surgeon having
what was to be done for t
surgeon stanched the blo
wine and water, and of

of the affair, the surgeon stopped him; but, with a melancholy tone of voice, he said,—

"'For God's sake, don't interrupt me! I bleed inwardly, and have not long to live. Let me exculpate myself of the crime of slaying my brother.'

"We were silent, and he endeavoured to proceed,—

"I was sitting in the summer-house with your sister, talking of the arrangements for our nuptials, when suddenly my brother entered, greatly agitated.

"'Come here, sir,' said he, beckoning with his hand; 'I have something to communicate.'

"I rose instantly, and went to him. His eyes darted fire, and he was some seconds before he could articulate a word. At length he said,—

"'I hear you have received the permission of this young lady's mother to marry her; but you must have mine also. Recollect I am your elder brother, and have a superior claim. I told you, on our first return from the army, I was in love with her, and should never cede her to any one.'

"I replied, that I remembered very well what he said; but if the young lady preferred me, surely he would not be so unjust and unkind as to interfere when he was disliked.

"'It's false as hell!' he exclaimed, in a voice almost choked with passion. 'She does not prefer you: you are a liar, and a villain!'

"'These are not epithets to bestow on a brother,' said I.

but he pierced me, as you perceive, at the same instant.

"Oh, fatal passion! Oh, horrible catastrophe! to kill a brother, and die by his hand! Ah! convey my last sighs to your sister, and believe that I have related to you, without exaggeration, what passed between us. Pray for the peace of my soul. — Adieu, my beloved friend! Adieu for——"

"Here the poor fellow's utterance became choked, and he expired."

Our friend now paused; he seemed as if combating within himself the feelings excited by his recital: then, after a few seconds, he continued,—

"My sister's fainting fits returned; in their intervals she incessantly called on her lover's name, and refused every sort of nourishment. A violent fever ensued, and in forty-eight hours after she was numbered with the dead. My mother, too, never recovered the shock she had experienced at beholding this fatal catastrophe, rendered still more poignant by my sister's death. Her grief was inconsolable; and, in two months more, I had the cruel misfortune to consign her also to the tomb.

"Bereft of every thing that could render life agreeable, I determined to sell my farm, and retire for ever from a scene, where each step reminded me of the cruel misfortunes I had experienced. I therefore re-entered the service; but here also I have met with disappointments, and my promotion

was unjustly delayed. This disgusted me, and I left Paris, to spend a few quiet months with an old general, whose estate lies in this neighbourhood, and who has promised to interfere in my behalf, and put me in the way of obtaining the rank due to my long services. In point of fortune, thank God! I am well off, having received a good estate from my uncle, independent of my mother's farm; but the gifts of fortune cannot revive my lost relations, nor restore my peace of mind."

"Your story," said my guardian, "is eventful, and shocking to humanity. But let not this misfortune, although certainly a terrible one, overcome your fortitude; for God sometimes chastens with a heavy hand, to prevent us from setting too high a value on sublunary enjoyments. Be of good cheer. Although you have suffered in the early part of your life, love, peace, and contentment may yet crown the evening of your days."

We took an affectionate farewell of him, and separated. When I recalled the charms of his virtuous and lovely sister, and the exemplary conduct of her mother, it really made me shudder to reflect that she should have met with such a fatal blow to her happiness, and have ended her days so unfortunately, through the ungovernable passions of a single individual.

My impatience to tread once more the shores of Britain seemed to acquire additional force in proportion as we drew near the place of embarkation; and the morning subsequent to our arrival

at Havre, saw us on board the Camilla, a fine steam ship plying between that port and Southampton. The passage proved delightful; the sea was calm; and a southwesterly breeze springing up in aid of the machinery, drove us rapidly along. By two o'clock the same evening, the vessel was safely moored within the harbour, and her passengers in possession of all those appliances and means of comfort so grateful after a sea voyage, and which the humblest English inn frequently affords in a degree superior to the most splendid Parisian hotel.

Daria and my guardian fully participated in my anxiety to reach our final destination; and after a single night's rest, they declared themselves sufficiently recruited to continue the journey. We therefore ordered post-horses for Bristol, where an extensive establishment of steam vessels maintains a constant communication with the south of Ireland.

A passage of about twenty hours' duration brought me again within sight of the old head of Kinsale, with the rest of the iron-bound coast of my native island; and the vessel had scarcely entered the Cove of Cork, before she was surrounded by several skiffs containing many "old familiar faces," who had been apprised by letter of our return.

A fortnight devoted to the hospitalities of Cork was scarcely sufficient to satisfy the ardour of their congratulations. At length, however, we contrived

to escape from the festivities
southern Ireland, and proc
final resting-place.

Here terminate the record
After many hairbreadth esc
imminent deadly breach," at
scarcely less perilous, behold
of old, seated under "my o
fig-tree," in the land where
Surrounded by all that can re
a competent fortune; an affec
who, if they inherit their mo
certainly bid fair to possess
ments, will leave me in the d
to desire: the society of my
mentor and companion of my
I not truly exclaim with the

"Felices ter et amplius,
Quos irrupta tenet copu
Divulsis querimoniis,
Supremâ citius solvet a

THE END.







